Historic England

oxfordarchaeology
southsouthsouth

A National Planning Overview for 19th Century Forts and Associated Fortifications

Volume 2
Fortification Datasheets

Jane Phimester

Discovery, Innovation and Science in the Historic Environment



© HE image of Hurst Castle, Hampshire

Research Report Series no. 87-2018 Volume 2 (of 2)

Research Report Series 87-2018

A National Planning Overview for 19th Century Forts and Associated Fortifications

Volume 2
Fotification Datasheets

Jane Phimester

© Oxford Archaeology and Historic England

ISSN 2059-4453 (Online)

The Research Report Series incorporates reports by the expert teams within the Investigation & Analysis Department of the Research Group of Historic England, alongside contributions from other parts of the organisation. It replaces the former Centre for Archaeology Reports Series, the Archaeological Investigation Report Series, the Architectural Investigation Report Series, and the Research Department Report Series.

Many of the Research Reports are of an interim nature and serve to make available the results of specialist investigations in advance of full publication. They are not usually subject to external refereeing, and their conclusions may sometimes have to be modified in the light of information not available at the time of the investigation. Where no final project report is available, readers must consult the author before citing these reports in any publication. Opinions expressed in Research Reports are those of the author(s) and are not necessarily those of Historic England.

For more information contact Res.reports@HistoricEngland.org.uk
or in writing to:
Historic England, Fort Cumberland, Fort Cumberland Road, Eastney, Portsmouth PO4 9LD

CONTENTS

REGION 1: SOUTH-WEST REGION 1

Area 1: Isle of Scilly 2

Bant's Carn Battery (OA1) 2
Woolpack Battery (OA2) 5
Steval Battery (OA3) 9

Area 2: West Country 13

Dartmouth Castle, Dartmouth Point Battery (OA4) 13
Padstow Battery (OA5) 16
Fowey Battery, St Catherine's Castle (OA6) 18
St Ives Battery (Lamprock Battery) (OA7) 21

Area 3: Falmouth 23

Pendennis Castle and surrounding batteries, incl. the BL and QF batteries, Half Moon and Crab Quay Batteries (OA8) 23
St Anthony's Battery (OA9) 28
St Mawes Castle (OA10), incl. 12-pdr QF battery 31

Area 4: Plymouth 34

Penlee Point Battery (OA11) 36
Maker Battery (OA12) 39
Grenville Battery (OA13) 42
Cawsand Battery (or Fort) (OA14) 45
Fort Scraesdon (OA15) 48
Tregantle Fort (OA16) 53
Hawkins Battery (OA17) 56
Mount Edgcumbe Garden Battery (OA18) 59
Picklecombe Fort (OA19) 61
Polhawn Battery (OA20) 64
Raleigh Battery (OA21) 66
Whitsand Bay Battery (OA22) 69
Whitesand Bay Practice Battery (OA23) 72
Renney Point Battery (OA24) 74
Mount Wise Redoubt (OA25) 76
Devil's Point Battery (OA26) 78
Agaton Fort (OA27) 80
Bowden Battery (OA28) 83
Brownhill Battery (OA29) 86
Crownhill Fort (OA30) 89
Drakes Island (OA31) 92
Egg Buckland Keep (OA32) 95

© HISTORIC ENGLAND

Ernesettle Battery (OA33) 98
Forder Battery (OA34) 101
Fort Efford (OA35) 103
Knowles Battery (OA36) 106
Laira Battery and Laira Emplacement (OA37) 109
Lord Howard's Battery (OA38) 112
Plymouth Breakwater Fort (OA39) 115
Staddon Fort (OA40) 118
Fort Bovisand and Staddon Point Battery (OA41) 121
Stamford Fort (OA42) 124
Watch House Battery (OA43) 127
Woodland Fort (OA44) 130
Eastern King Redoubts (OA45) 133
Western Kings Redoubt (or Battery) (OA46) 136
Fort Austin (OA47) 139
Area 5: Portland 142
East Weare Batteries (OA48) 142
Portland Breakwater Fort (OA49) 146
Inner Pier Fort, Portland Breakwater (OA50) 149
The Nothe Fort (OA51) 151
The Verne Citadel (OA52) 154
Upton Fort (OA53) 157
Blacknor Battery (OA54) 160
Verne High Angle Battery (OA55) 163
Area 6: Bristol Channel 167
Brean Down Fort (OA56) 167
Steep Holm (OA57) 170
REGION 2: SOUTH-EAST REGION 175
Area 7: Portsmouth and the Isle of Wight 176
Browndown Battery (OA58) 178
Fort Elson (OA59) 181
Fort Monckton (OA60) 184
Stokes Bay Lines (1-5) (OA61) 187
Eastney Batteries (East and West) (OA62) 191
Fort Blockhouse (OA63) 194
Fort Brockhurst (OA64) 198
Fort Cumberland (OA65) 201
Fort Fareham (OA66) 206
Fort Grange (OA67) 209
Fort Nelson (OA68) 212

Fort Purbrook (OA69) 214
Fort Rowner (OA70) 217
Fort Southwick (OA71) 220
Fort Wallington (OA72) 223
Fort Widley (OA73) 226
Hilsea Lines (OA74) 229
Horse Sand Fort (OA75) 232
Hurst Castle, Wing Batteries (OA76) 235
Spitbank Fort (OA77) 238
Point Battery (OA78) 241
Southsea Castle, including East and West Batteries (OA79) 244
Fort Gilkicker (OA80) 247
Bembridge Fort (OA81) 250
Cliff End Battery (OA82) 253
Fort Albert (Cliff End Fort) (OA83) 256
Culver Down Battery (OA84) 259
Fort Victoria (OA85) 262
Freshwater Redoubt (OA86) 265
Golden Hill Fort (OA87) 268
Hatherwood Battery (OA88) 271
New Needles Battery (OA89) 274
No Man's Land Fort (OA90) 277
Lower (Old) Needles Battery (OA91) 280
Puckpool Mortar Battery (OA92) 283
Sandown Barrack Battery (OA93) 286
Sandown Fort (OA94) 289
St Helen's Fort (OA95) 291
Steyne Wood Battery (OA96) 294
Warden Point Battery (OA97) 297
Yaverland Fort and Battery (OA98) 300
Nodes Point Battery (OA99) 303

Area 8: Sussex 306

Newhaven Fort (OA100) 306
Littlehampton Fort (OA101) 310
Shoreham Fort (OA102) 313

Area 9: Mobilisation Centres 316

Woldingham Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA103) 316
Alderstead Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA104) 319
Reigate Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA105) 322
Betchworth Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA106) 325
Box Hill Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA107) 328

Henley Grove (Mobilisation Centre) (OA108) 331
North Weald Redoubt (Mobilisation Centre) (OA109) 334
Fort Halstead (Mobilisation Centre) (OA110) 338
Farningham Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA111) 342
Fosterdown Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA112) 345
Pewley Hill Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA113) 348
Westerham Fort, Betsom's Hill (Mobilisation Centre) (OA114) 351
Area 10: Thames 353
Coalhouse Fort (OA115), incl. Wing Battery 353
East Tilbury Battery (OA116) 357
Cliffe Fort (OA117) 360
Slough Fort (OA118), incl. wing batteries 363
Tilbury Fort (including mobilisation store) (OA119) 366
Shornmead Fort (OA120) 370
New Tavern Fort (OA121) 373
Area 11: Thames/ Sheerness 377
Queenborough Lines (OA122) 377
Sheerness Defences (OA123) 381
Bartons Point Battery (OA124) 389
Area 12: Chatham and Medway 391
Fort Borstal (OA125) 391
Fort Horsted (OA126) 394
Fort Luton (OA127) 397
Grange and Woodlands Redoubt (OA128) 400
Hoo Fort (OA129) 402
Darnet Fort (OA130) 405
Grain Tower (OA131) 408
Grain Fort and Grain Wing Battery (OA132) 411
Area 13: Coastal Redoubts 414
Dymchurch Redoubt (OA133) 414
Eastbourne Redoubt (OA134) 417
Harwich Redoubt (OA135) 420
Area 14: Dover 423
Langdon Battery (OA136) 424
Pier Extension Battery (OA137) 427
Shotyard Battery, Dover Castle (OA138) 429
East Demi Battery, Dover Castle (OA139) 432
Shoulder of Mutton Battery, Dover Castle (OA140) 434
Archcliffe Fort (OA141) 437
South Breakwater Battery (OA142) 440

Knuckle Battery (OA143) 443
Western Heights including Citadel, Drop Redoubt, North Centre Bastion, North Centre Detached Bastion, North Entrance, Western Outwork, Grand Shaft, St Martin's Battery (OA144) 446
Citadel Battery (OA145) 452
Fort Burgoyne (originally Castle Hill Fort) (OA146) 455
Admiralty Pier Turret, Battery and Fort (OA147) 459
Eastern Arm Battery (OA148) 462
REGION 3: EAST OF ENGLAND 465
Area 15: Harwich 466
Beacon Hill Fort (OA149) 466
Landguard Fort (OA150), including Languard Wing (Left) and Languard Wing (Right) Batteries, and Darrell's Battery 470
Shotley Point Battery (OA151) 477
Miscellaneous Fortifications 480
North Weald Redoubt (Mobilisation Centre) (OA109) 480
Coalhouse Fort (OA115), incl. Wing Battery 484
East Tilbury Battery (OA116) 488
Tilbury Fort (including mobilisation store) (OA119) 491
Harwich Redoubt (OA135) 495
REGION 4: NORTH EAST REGION 499
Area 16: Humber 500
Paull Point Battery (O152) 500
Sunk Island Battery (O153) 503
Bull Sand Fort (O154) 505
Spurn Point (O155), including Green Battery, Light Permanent Battery and Light Temporary Battery 508
Haile Sand Fort (OA156) 511
Area 15: Tees and Hartlepool 513
Spanish Battery (OA157) 513
Tynemouth Battery, Tynemouth Castle (OA158) 516
Clifford's Fort (OA159) 519
Wave Basin Battery (OA160) 522
South Gare Battery (OA161) 524
Heugh Battery (Hartlepool Battery) (OA162) 526
Area 16: Northumberland 529
Blyth Battery (OA163) 529
Lindisfarne Castle (OA164) 532
REGION 5: NORTH WEST REGION 535
Area 18: Mersey 536

Fort Perch Rock (OA168) 536
Liscard Battery (OA169) 539
Area 19: Cumbria 541
Hilpsford Battery (OA170) 541

TABLE KEY

Significance

A Exceptional	A site which is of key national or international significance, being among the best or only surviving examples of an important type of monument, or being outstanding representatives of important social or cultural phenomena.
B Considerable	A site that constitutes good and representative examples of an important class of monument (or the only example locally), or that have a particular significance through association (although surviving examples may be relatively common on a national scale) or that make major contributions to the overall significance of the monument.
C Some	A site that contributes to the character and understanding of the place, or that provides a historical or cultural context for features of individually greater significance.
D Little	A site of low value in general terms, which has little or no significance in promoting understanding or appreciation of the place, without being actually intrusive.

Designated

SM	Scheduled Monument
LB	Listed Building

Phase

1	Early Fortifications (pre-1950s)
2	1950s
3	1960s/ 1970s
(RC)	Fortifications constructed as a result of the Royal Commission's report.
4	1880/1890s
5	Turn of the Century to First World War
6	First World War

Condition

1	Good
2	Fair
3	Poor
4	Very bad.

HAR Level

C	Slow decay; no solution agreed

Threats

1	Flooding/ coastal erosion
2	Uncontrolled Plant Growth
3	Deterioration/ in need of management
4	Decay of fabric
5	Vandalism
6	Development (direct)
7	Development (indirect), or lesser incremental
8	Visitor wear and tear

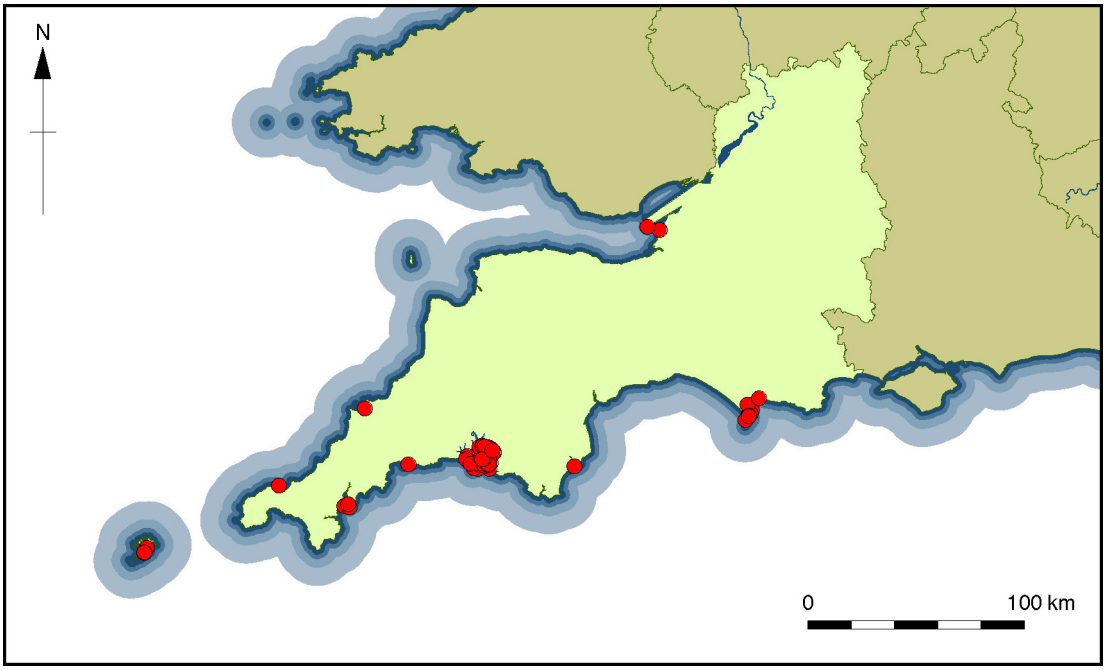
Abbreviations in the Bibliography

VF	Refers to the Victorian Forts website
PF	Refers to the Palmerston Forts website
HE	Refers to the Historic England website ('The List').

© HISTORIC ENGLAND

REGION 1: SOUTH-WEST REGION

Area No.	Area Name	No. of Sites
1	Isle of Scilly	3
2	West Country	4
3	Falmouth	3
4	Plymouth	37
5	Portland	8
6	Bristol	2
Total		57



Distribution of forts within the South-West region

AREA 1: ISLE OF SCILLY

OA no.	Fort name	Significance	Designated	Phase	Condition	HAR Level	Threat
1	Bants Carn Battery	A	SM	5	5	x	1, 2
2	Woolpack Battery	A	SM	5	3	C2	1, 3
3	Steval Battery	A	SM.LB	5	1	x	1, 4

Bant's Carn Battery (OA1)

County Isles of Scilly
District Isles of Scilly
Parish St Mary's
NGR SV 9102 1266
Group Isles of Scilly

PASTSCAPE#	304223
HER#	7488
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1014786: Early 20th century gun battery at Bant's Carn, St Mary's The Isle of Scilly is a Conservation Area
Recommendations	Forecasts of erosion suggest that much of Scilly's coastal heritage is at risk. A programme of recording is recommended so that if the battery is lost, a suitable record will survive for posterity. A site visit would also establish is the condition of the battery which his unknown.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Bant's Carn is of group value with Woolpack Batteries and Steval Battery.

Brief History

The battery was built between 1902 and 1905 as part of the defensive system designed to protect a naval signalling and re-fuelling station then being established on the Isles of Scilly. It was never armed, having been built as a 12-pdr battery. The Scilly Isles were abandoned as a naval station in 1906 in favour of the defences to the English east coast.

Outline Description

The battery is contained within a rampart around the top of a natural knoll which was re-profiled on all sides to add a sub-rectangular steep earthen rampart. Its forward flank faces north with a field of fire commanding the high water approach across Crow Bar to the island's military and administrative centre of the Garrison. It has two concrete emplacements for 12-pdr QF (Quick Firing) guns set into the rear of the forward flank. Behind the emplacements, the rampart encloses a small levelled interior around a deep lightwell giving access to an underground magazine and stores. An access track curves south from the western end of the parade, leading to the battery caretaker's quarters beyond the south side of the monument.

Condition

Unknown.

The emplacements are still identifiable on Google Maps. There was a notable good survival rate of the metalwork at the time of scheduling in 1998.

Trend

Unknown, although thought to be stable.

Setting

Located on the northern coastline of the island of St Mary's. It is a predominantly rural setting with little development.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation – although few images are available, the battery appears to be under threat of shrub growth.

Coastal Erosion –forecasts of erosion suggest that much of Scilly's coastal heritage is at risk. Bant's Carn Battery is situated in close proximity to the coastline.

Ownership

Private.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Not used.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The battery is a Scheduled Monument and the Scilly Isles is a Conservation Area.

Overall, the site is of considerable to exceptional significance because of its evidential and historical value, and its high group value with the survival of Woolpack and Steval Batteries. These batteries date from between 1898 and 1905 which is a period which is less well represented in fort construction, which further enhances their significance.

The battery has considerable evidential value due to its level of survival, the original form of both its earthwork and built structures are well preserved. It also has the most intact survival of original metal fittings of the batteries in the Scilly defensive system of this phase.

The components of the defensive system survive well, so that they can be understood against their armament capabilities and the strategic methods by which those defences were intended to be used.

The considerable historical value is based predominantly within the battery's demonstration of the change in threat of enemy action, and the decision to abandon the site soon after completion to concentrate on the threat from the German forces, rather than the French. The survival of construction records in the National Archives further enhance the historical value of the battery.

The aesthetic and communal values are of a lesser significance as the battery is on private land and so plays a limited part in the community's relationship with the island's defences.

References

Bowden, M and Brodie, A 2011

HE website

PastScapes website

Compiler

Angela Warner

Woolpack Battery (OA2)

County	Isles of Scilly
District	Isles of Scilly
Parish	St Mary's
NGR	SV 89801 10145
Group	Isles of Scilly

PASTSCAPE#	303674
HER#	7908.06
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1014783: Late 19th early 20th Century Woolpack Battery on the Garrison, Isle of Scilly Grade II Listed The Isle of Scilly is a Conservation Area
Recommendations	The battery is on the HAR Register, it is currently unoccupied and suffering from water ingress. Management is required to mitigate against further decay and secure its long-term future. Forecasts of erosion suggest that much of Scilly's coastal heritage is at risk. A programme of recording is recommended so that if the battery is lost, a suitable record will survive for posterity.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Woolpack Battery is of group value with Bant's Carn Battery and Steval Battery.

Steval and Woolpack Battery were built as complementary structures; Steval Battery is situated 125m to the north-west and covered the deep water approach to the islands. These two batteries have strong group value, which is enhanced by the survival of Bant's Carn Battery (OA1) along the north coastline of the island.

Other structures of the defensive system in which this monument operated include coastal searchlight emplacements and their control posts at Woolpack and Steval Points, their electricity supply generator was housed in an 18th century battery between them. They were served by a barracks/caretaker's block between them.

Woolpack Battery is part of the 'The Garrison' (Scheduled Monument 15438: Late 19th-early 20th century Defended Barracks and Caretaker Block at Greystones, The Garrison, St Mary's), and has group value as an integral part of this monument.

Brief History

A large gun battery built between 1898 and 1901 as part of the defensive system designed to protect a naval signalling and re-fuelling station then being established on the Isles of Scilly.

In response to a joint army and navy review of the nation's coastal defences, Woolpack and Steval batteries were built between 1898 and 1901. By 1902, the 6-inch guns of these batteries were felt to give inadequate defence against

motor torpedo boat attack; a proposed third 6-inch gun battery was abandoned in favour of two 12-pdr QF gun batteries, one above Steval Point, 275m north-west of this monument, the other at Bant's Carn on the north-western coast of St Mary's.

Following the Owen Report of 1905, the Isles of Scilly were abandoned as a naval station, and the batteries guns were dismantled in 1906, and by 1910 had been removed for storage in Falmouth.

During the Second World War, the Garrison housed a radar cell and aviation fuel stores. A homing beacon was installed on the Woolpack Battery to guide anti – submarine aircraft returning from patrol to airfields in south-west England. Two raised concrete mast bases were added, one on each apron of the emplacements. One of the magazine's cartridge or shell stores was also used as a barracks for Royal Canadian Air Force personnel.

Outline Description

The Scheduled Monument description describes the batteries –

'It has two concrete emplacements for 6-inch breech-loading (BL) Mk VII calibre guns set into the rear of a rampart, behind which is a parade area called a terreplein. Beneath the emplacements are an underground brick-vaulted magazine and war shelter reached by a concrete-faced light-well. The terreplein contains a raised platform, called a traverse, containing a communications room and supporting the Battery Commander's Position and range-finding post. The emplacements, terreplein and magazine are contained within substantial earthwork defences comprising a forward rampart and a fully encircling outer ditch..... The low profile of its earthworks rendered the battery more difficult to locate and target for enemy gunners and masked both ditch and emplacements from external view while allowing an unobstructed and wide field of fire for the guns'.

Condition

Poor.

Woolpack Battery is on the HAR Register. It is described as: 'Generally good condition and secure but currently (May 2016) unoccupied'.

Trend

Declining. Identified on the HAR register as category C – 'Slow decay; no solution agreed'.

Discussions regarding repair and potential new uses are underway with the site owner, Historic England, and the Local Authority.

Setting

The battery is situated behind the southern crest of the summit plateau of The Garrison, the south western promontory of St Mary's in the Isles of Scilly. There is a holiday park directly inland from the battery, although this appears to be largely tents.

Threats

Flooding – the battery is currently closed due to flooding.

Deterioration/ in need of management – there is water ingress into the former magazines, now dormitories.

Coastal Erosion – evident at St Mary's, partial falls can be seen near Woolpack, where large caverns have been carved into the soft geology of the low cliffs where only the overhanging mass of vegetation is holding the topsoil together. Forecasts of erosion suggest that much of Scilly's coastal heritage is at risk.

Ownership

Crown.

Occupancy

Vacant/not in use.

Current use(s)

The battery was converted in 2000 to accommodation with bunk rooms for the Isle of Scilly Wildlife Trust volunteers. It can host up to 13 people and includes shower, cooking and bunk bed spaces.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

Woolpack Battery is a Scheduled Monument and a Grade II Listed Building, in addition to this, the whole of the Scilly Isles is a Conservation Area.

Overall, the site is of exceptional significance because of its evidential and historical value, and its high group value with the survival of particularly Steval Battery, but also Bant's Carn Battery. These batteries date from between 1898 and 1905 which is a period which is less well represented in fort construction, which further enhances their significance.

Woolpack Battery has survived well, preserving the original plan of both its earthwork and built structures with only very minor modification from reuse during the Second World War. Such intact survival of a battery from this phase is rare and of much importance for our knowledge of the development of modern artillery defences.

The battery has group value with the other defence measures on the Isle of Scilly, and with other components in The Garrison's contemporary defensive system.

The battery is of evidential and historical value, as described in the HE Scheduling description –

> *'Spatially, the rare survival of such a complete defensive system allows the relationships of its components to be studied against their armament capabilities and the strategic methods by which those defences were intended to be used, in the controlled background of a single location.*

The system of defences to which this monument contributed was directly inspired by considerations of national defence; as such it also has a wider historical importance whose immediate context is defined by the national defence reviews which led to the implementation and later the abandonment of the naval base which this battery was designed to protect'.

The survival of construction records in the National Archives further enhance the historical value of the battery.

Woolpack Battery is also of communal value to members of the Wildlife Trust who live and work there, as well as other bodies such as the Natural History Museum who use the battery.

References

Bowden, M and Brodie, A 2011

HE website

Ios-wildlifetrust

PastScapes website

Scillytoday webiste

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Steval Battery (OA3)

County	Isles of Scilly
District	Isles of Scilly
Parish	St Mary's
NGR	SV 8970 1033
Group	Isles of Scilly

PASTSCAPE#	1086693
HER#	7908.04
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1014784: Late 19th-early 20th century Steval Battery on The Garrison, St Mary's Grade II Listed The Isle of Scilly is a Conservation Area
Recommendations	Forecasts of erosion suggest that much of Scilly's coastal heritage is at risk. A programme of recording is recommended so that if the battery is lost, a suitable record will survive for posterity. A site visit/ survey would also more clearly establish the current condition and threat of the battery, which is unknown.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Bant's Carn. Steval and Woolpack Battery were built as complementary structures, Steval Battery is situated 125m to the north-west and covered the deep water approach to the islands. These two batteries have strong group value, which is enhanced by the survival of Bant's Carn Battery (OA1) along the north coastline of the island.

Other structures of the defensive system in which this monument operated include coastal searchlight emplacements and their control posts at Woolpack and Steval Points, their electricity supply generator was housed in an 18th century battery between them. They were served by a barracks/caretaker's block between them.

Steval Battery is part of the 'The Garrison' (Scheduled Monument 15438:Late 19th-Early 20th century Defended Barracks and Caretaker Block at Greystones, The Garrison, St Mary's)

Brief History

The battery is one of two complementary gun batteries with a barracks/ caretakers quarters between them, built on The Garrison between 1898 and 1901, and forming part of a defensive system designed to protect a naval signalling and re-fuelling station then being established on the Isles of Scilly.

Following a joint army and navy review of the nation's coastal defences in the 1890s two batteries were constructed between 1898 and 1901 – Woolpack Battery and Steval Battery.

By 1902, the 6-inch guns of these batteries were felt to give inadequate defence against motor torpedo boat attack; a proposed third 6-inch gun battery was

abandoned in favour of two 12-pdr QF gun batteries, one above Steval Point and the other at Bant's Carn.

Following the Owen Report of 1905, the Isles of Scilly were abandoned as a naval station and, with little commercial importance, they also lost their defended port status. Consequently, though these batteries had been used for coastal defence training, their guns were dismantled in 1906 and by 1910 had been removed for storage in Falmouth.

During the Second World War, The Garrison housed a radar cell and aviation fuel stores. The Steval Battery's underground complex was used to store aviation spirit after bombing raids in 1940 threatened its former location on Hughtown Pier. The battery's underground complex comprising its magazine, war shelter and lockers, are excluded from the scheduling but the ground beneath and above them is included.

Outline Description

The HE Scheduled Monument description describes the battery –

'The battery's forward flank faces north west, its field of fire commanding the deep water approach to the islands at the entrance to The Road. It has two concrete emplacements for 6-inch breech-loading (BL) Mk VII calibre guns set into the rear of a rampart, behind which is a parade area called a terreplein. Beneath the emplacements are an underground brick-vaulted magazine and a war shelter reached by a concrete-faced light-well. The terreplein contains a raised platform, called a traverse, containing a communications room and supporting the Battery Commander's Position and range-finding post. The emplacements, terreplein and magazine are contained within substantial earthwork defences comprising a rampart around the forward and side flanks, and a fully encircling outer ditch.... The battery's emplacements, magazine and terreplein are protected from incoming fire and ground approach by extensive low-profile earthworks'.

Condition

Good.

The Scheduling description states that it survives well. The HER states that there are 'some recent alterations but much original joinery in place'.

Trend

Unknown.

A modern pistol and rifle club house is in the north east corner of the parade. The HER states that the 'underground rooms are under threat (1994) of extensive clearance and alterations by the club'.

Setting

The battery is situated behind the southern crest of the summit plateau of The Garrison, the south western promontory of St Mary's in the Isles of Scilly.

There is a holiday park directly inland from the battery, although this appears to be largely tents.

Threats

Coastal Erosion –partial falls can be seen at St Mary's, large caverns have been carved into the soft geology of the low cliffs where only the overhanging mass of vegetation is holding the topsoil together. Forecasts of erosion suggest that much of Scilly's coastal heritage is at risk.

Decay of fabric – possible threat from secondary use, although this requires further investigation.

Ownership

Unknown.

Occupancy

Unknown.

Current use(s)

Unknown.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The battery is a Scheduled Monument, and lies within the Conservation Area of the Isles of the Scilly.

Overall, the site is of considerable to exceptional significance because of its evidential and historical value, and its high group value with the survival of particularly Woolpack Battery, but also Bant's Carn Battery. These batteries date from between 1898 and 1905 which is a period which is less well represented in fort construction, which further enhances their significance.

The Steval Battery has survived well, preserving much of the original form of both its earthwork and built structures with limited alterations. Such intact survival of a battery from this phase is rare and of much importance for our knowledge of the development of modern artillery defences. For this reason, the battery is of considerable evidential value.

Steval Battery is also of group value with Bant Carn's Battery and particular Woolpack Battery, which is contemporary and in close proximity. The survival of construction records in the National Archives further enhance the historical value of the battery.

Its association with other defensive measures within in The Garrison's contemporary also enhance its significance. As stated in the HE Scheduled description – 'Spatially, the rare survival of such a complete defensive system allows the relationships of its components to be studied against their armament capabilities and the strategic methods by which those defences were intended to be used, in the controlled background of a single location. The

system of defences to which this monument contributed was directly inspired by considerations of national defence; as such it also has a wider historical importance whose immediate context is defined by the national defence reviews which led to the implementation and later the abandonment of the naval base which this battery was designed to protect'.

References

Bowden, M and Brodie, A 2011

Heritage Gateway website

HE website

PastScapes website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

OA no.	Fort name	Significance	Designated	Phase	Condition	HAR level	Threat
4	Dartmouth Castle, Dartmouth Point Battery	B	SM.LB	3	1	x	1, 8
5	Padstow Battery	D	x	3	3	x	1, 2
6	Fowey Battery, St Catherine's Castle	B	SM	2	1	x	1, 8
7	St Ives Battery	D	x	3	3	x	1, 8

Dartmouth Castle, Dartmouth Point Battery (OA4)

County Devon
District South Hams
Parish Dartmouth
NGR SX 88692 50280
Group West Country

PASTSCAPE#	446022 (Dartmouth Castle), 446056 (Maiden Fort
HER#	MDV55300
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1014610: Dartmouth Castle Grade II* Listed, the Old Battery (list entry number 1297087)
Recommendations	The remains of the battery are in close proximity to the coastline and may be impacted by coastal erosion. This should be monitored and appropriate recording undertaken to mitigate against loss.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Plymouth fortifications, however Old Battery was not updated in the 1860s as part of the Royal Commission programme of works. Dartmouth Point Battery is associated with Dartmouth Castle.

Brief History

The purpose of the battery (and Castle) was to protect the harbour at Dartmouth, and cover the mouth of the River Dart at its narrowest point where it flows into Start Bay. The Victorian battery was officially known as Dartmouth Point Battery, but is also known as Old Battery and Maiden Fort.

After 1815 Dartmouth Castle's defences were felt to be inadequate against the potential capture of the castle, and may use it to attack Plymouth. Consequently, the War Office rebuilt Grand Battery as the two-tier Dartmouth Point Battery by February 1861.

Dartmouth Point Battery however did not benefit from the Royal Commission updating of artillery, and so was almost immediately out of date. In 1903 the battery was disarmed.

In 1940 the battery was rearmed with a 4.7-inch QF gun mounted in a castellated concrete gun house which formed part of the Dartmouth Battery.

At the end of the war Dartmouth battery was disarmed and the castellated gun house is virtually all that remains of the war-time battery.

In 1955 the Victorian battery was transferred to the Ministry of Works and following use as a restaurant, was restored by English Heritage and opened to the public. Artillery pieces have been placed in each of the casemates for presentation purposes, although only the 64-pdr in the western casemate was part of the battery's armament.

Outline Description

The Listed Building description describes the battery –

'...incorporating some C17 or C18 masonry. Some earlier local rubble on the landward side but predominantly snecked limestone with granite ashlar dressings. Battery, square in plan, contains casemates for three 64-pounder guns pointing south-eastwards towards the sea, with magazines behind and some barrack accommodation, and, on top, embrasures for another 2 guns (one has been restored on a replica traversing carriage). The other embrasure now occupied by an octagonal painted brick emplacement for a 120mm gun which was erected in 1940 and given a castellated parapet to disguise it as an antiquity'.

Condition

Good.

Restored by English Heritage.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on a promontory on the west side of the River Dart at the narrowest entrance between the River Dart and the English Channel. The castle and battery retain its primary setting.

Threats

Visitor wear and tear.

Possible threat from coastal erosion.

Ownership

English Heritage.

Managed by English Heritage, under licence from Historic England until 2023.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

English Heritage visitor attraction.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The Old Battery is part of the Scheduled Monument of Dartmouth Castle and is Grade II* Listed.

The battery is of considerable evidential value, as it survives well. Historically, the battery did not play a significant role in the defence of the country, as it was outdated soon after its construction in 1861, and disarmed in 1903. It was however used in the First and Second World Wars, when it was again armed.

The significance of the battery is enhanced by the survival of a series of military documents, which provide evidence of the structure's use and development. The battery is of considerable communal value, as it is open to the public as part of the visitor experience at Dartmouth Caste. The battery retains a commanding presence in the landscape, closely associated with the castle.

References

HE website

PastScapes website

VF website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Padstow Battery (OA5)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	Padstow
NGR	SW 91897 76727
Group	West Country

PASTSCAPE#	1395230
HER#	26376
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	The remains of the battery are in close proximity to the coastline and may be impacted by coastal erosion. The recording of the surviving archaeology is recommended to mitigate against potential loss.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The battery is not known to be specifically linked to any other defence structures within the group.

Brief History

Padstow Battery was constructed in 1855, but the current battery was rebuilt in 1868; it had two guns firing enbarbette. Between 1867 and 1868 a small accommodation building was built behind the left hand gun position for a caretaker which was occupied until 1952, after which it was demolished. At the same time or perhaps a little later two other buildings were constructed in the right hand flank of the battery: a side arm shed and a wash house with a latrine, these are no longer extant.

During the 1890s the site was armed with two 64-pdr guns, and during the First World War a 60-pdr field gun was manned on site.

In 1940 a war emergency battery for two 4-inch naval guns was built on the Victorian battery with associated structures including a Battery Observation Post and Range Finder position with searchlights.

After the war ended the 138mm guns were dismounted and returned to France, and the site was abandoned after all military equipment had been removed.

Outline Description

The remains of the battery consist of the outline of the Victorian battery, and the remains of the gun positions. Along the coastal path towards Padstow are to be found the remains of the Second World War generator house for nearby searchlights, an oil store, now overgrown and derelict. Close by the Victorian battery and to its rear are the foundations of the caretakers bungalow together with a water tank dated 1888. There are also WD boundary posts, dated 1868, and an underground magazine which dates from the Second World War. All the wartime buildings have been demolished.

Condition

Poor.

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

The battery is situated on the River Camel, on the north coast of Cornwall. It is just of the South West Coast path.

Threats

Coastal Erosion – the surviving elements of the battery are in close proximity to the coastline.

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Ownership

Unknown.

It is situated just off the South-West Coast Path.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

No applicable.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Little.

Padstow Battery is of little evidential value, as only the outline of the Victorian battery now survives. The remains of the Second World War elements of the sites survive to some extent, although all of the wartime buildings have been demolished.

The battery is of little aesthetic value, and some historic value as the site was used over a long period of time. There are also documents relating to the battery held within the National Archives, which enhance its value.

Padstow Battery is of communal value as there is open access to the site and it is easily visited off the South-West Coast Path. The battery is recorded in the 'Wartime Memories Project' and forms part of the collective history and memories of the local area.

References

PastScapes website

VF website

Wartimememories website.

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fowey Battery, St Catherine's Castle (OA6)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	Fowey
NGR	SX 11883 50939
Group	West Country

PASTSCAPE#	1427666 & 1427665
HER#	National Trust HBSMR no. 90729
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1013664: St Catherine's Castle 16th century blockhouse, 19th century gun battery and 20th century gun emplacement at St Catherine's Point
Recommendations	The remains of the battery are in close proximity to the coastline and may be impacted by coastal erosion. This should be monitored and appropriate recording undertaken to mitigate against loss.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The battery is not known to be specifically linked to any other defence structures within the group. Fowey Battery is functional and geographically linked to St Catherine's Castle.

Brief History

In 1855 a two gun battery was constructed below St Catherine's Castle, part of which was used as a magazine. The guns were mounted en-barbette and at the end of its active existence the battery was classed as a practice one.

Fowey was considered of sufficient importance, as a port for the china clay trade, to warrant the updating of the defences but nothing was done to implement the proposals so that at the turn of the century the battery was disarmed.

In the Second World War two batteries erected, one gun (No.1) was mounted in a concrete emplacement built over the right hand gun position of the victorian battery. The other gun was mounted behind the castle on the headland. By November 1945 all the guns and associated equipment had been removed and the site vacated. The No.2 gun position of the wartime battery has been removed so that the Victorian battery stands complete.

The battery was disposed of in 1945.

Outline Description

The following is taken from the Scheduled Monument description –

'A battery for two guns was built on the seaward edge of the lower levelled platform, below and east of the blockhouse, and a magazine was built into the rock beside the curtain wall entrance. The battery's two adjacent emplacements are accommodated behind a continuous built parapet of mortared rubble capped by iron-cramped granite coping, bevelled to the outer side....Within the part-circular recesses at the rear of the parapet, each emplacement has two concentric iron gun carriage rails, called racers, set

in granite beds...The magazine was cut into the rock... The original route along the curtain wall to the blockhouse at the upper level was replaced by steps cut into the rock forming the south east side of the magazine.

The 19th century RML gun mounting was removed and the emplacement was filled with concrete to the top of the 1855 rampart to serve as a solid foundation for mounting the gun, a 4.7-inch naval gun. A large concrete protective shelter was built around the gun and a concrete pill box, with a lower roof, was built alongside it. The Crimean War magazine beside the gateway was reused for its original purpose, as an ammunition store, while the 16th century blockhouse was used as the firing point for a controlled minefield laid across the mouth of the Fowey estuary. Other structures in the World War II battery were situated on higher ground from 50m west of this monument, where another 4.7-inch naval gun was mounted'.

Condition

Good.

The battery has been restored.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The battery is situated on the cliffs on the west bank at the entrance to Fowey Harbour, directly to the north-north-west of St Catherine's Castle. It is further along the coastline to the west of Fowey, it retains its setting although there is the development of Fowey to the north.

Threats

Visitor wear and tear.

Possible threat from coastal erosion.

Ownership

English Heritage.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Part of the EH visitor attraction at St Catherine's Castle.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

St Catherine's Castle including Fowey Battery is a Scheduled Monument.

The battery is of considerable evidential value, it survives in good condition and is maintained as part of the visitor experience at St Catherine's Castle. It

is of communal value to those who visit the castle, and provides evidence and understanding of the history and development of the castle over a long period of time.

The battery is an integral part of the castle and the coastline's defensive history. It provides evidence of the adaptation of military installations to meet changing threats, and although the battery did not play an individually significant role in the defence of the county, it is of historical significance for its long defensive use through to the Second World War.

The battery, although not of particular architectural merit, has a dramatic setting on the coastline next to the castle which is of aesthetic value.

References

HE website

PastScapes

PF website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

St Ives Battery (Lamprock Battery) (OA7)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	St Ives
NGR	SW 52106 41167
Group	West Country

PASTSCAPE#	1417531
HER#	167090
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	The remains of the battery are in close proximity to the coastline and may be impacted by coastal erosion. The recording of the surviving archaeology is recommended to mitigate against potential loss.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the west country group situated along the coast of Cornwall.

Brief History

St Ives Bay was the only anchorage between the Scilly Isles and Lundy Island, it was therefore considered worthy of defence.

St Ives Battery was established in 1860 and de-commissioned in 1895. It was originally armed with one 64-pdr muzzle loading cannon and two 32-pdr muzzle loaders. The magazine was adapted to store exploding shells and, although it was decommissioned in 1895, the guns were not removed until 1909. The battery has been used this century as a coastguard lookout, but it is understood to have been equipped with anti-aircraft Lewis guns at some time during the Second World War.

Outline Description

The battery consists of a small loopholed guard house with an earth covered magazine behind; the three gun positions were adjacent to the magazine facing seawards with two of the guns being mounted in small pits. It is thought that on the landward side the battery was protected by a loopholed barrack block, now demolished.

Condition

Poor.

The guard house is vacant, the two gun pits have been filled in for a flag staff and a rain gauge whilst the remaining gun position has a (reportedly unsympathetic) coast guard look-out.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Situated on a headland to the north-east of St Ives, the battery retains its original setting.

Threats

Possible threat from visitor wear and tear.

Coastal erosion – the battery is situated directly on the coastline, and be impacted by coastal erosion.

Ownership

Unknown.

The battery is directly on the rugged coast, just off the South-West Coastal Path.

Occupancy

Not applicalble.

Current use(s)

It is an open site, just of the south-west coast path.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Little.

St Ives Battery is of little evidential value only, there are few surviving remains of the battery and these are no longer easier to interpret due to adaption. Today it is used as a coastguard look out. The battery had a long period of use to the Second World War, but did not play a significant historical role in the defence of the country.

The battery is of little aesthetic value, but is of some communal value as it is easily accessible on open land, although it is now difficult to interpret.

References

HE website

PastScapes

PF website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

AREA 3: FALMOUTH

OA no.	Fort name	Significance	Designated	Phase	Condition	HAR Level	Threat
8	Pendennis Castle	B	SM	1	1	x	1, 7, 8
9	St Anthony's Battery	C	x	4	1	x	1, 2, 3
10	St Mawes Castle	B	SM.LB	1	1	x	1, 8

Pendennis Castle and surrounding batteries, incl. the BL and QF batteries, Half Moon and Crab Quay Batteries (OA8)

County Cornwall
District Cornwall
Parish Falmouth
NGR Pendinnis Castle: SW 824318
Half Moon Battery: SW 825317
Crab Quay Battery SW 836316
Group Falmouth

PASTSCAPE#	428615, 1395294, 428660
HER#	18709, 166143, 166145
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1012134: Pendennis Peninsula Fortifications Falmouth Conservation Area
Recommendations	Consideration needs to be given to the possible indirect impact of proposed development on land to the north of Castle Drive. The batteries would also benefit from periodic assessment to determine impacts from coastal erosion and visitor wear and tear.

Type

Artillery Castle. Coast Artillery Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

St Mawes Caste, another Henrician coastal fort, stands 2km away on the opposite side of the Carrick Roads. St Anthony's Battery is also separated from Pendennis Castle by the Carrick Roads. All three defences are inter-related in their defence of Falmouth area.

St Mawes commanded the east side of the Carrick Roads and Pendennis Castle controlled the west side. The defences of the two sites developed very much in tandem for most of the post-medieval period, supplemented by 1805 by a battery on St Anthony's Head.

Brief History

Overview

Pendennis Castle, erected between 1540 and 1545, was the most westerly of a chain of coastal defences built by Henry VIII in response to the threat of French and Spanish invasion. The original Henrician defences have been significantly enhanced through the years, notably in the Elizabethan period and in the 18th and 19th centuries. During the Napoleonic invasion scare the fort was armed with 48 guns and was used as a depot and supply base for the British Army during the Peninsular War.

After the defeat of Napoleon at Waterloo in 1815, Pendennis was neglected and many of the temporary buildings were removed. By the late 1850s, however, England and France were rivals again in a race for military and naval advantage, and more powerful guns were installed at Pendennis from 1854, notably at Half-Moon Battery and at Crab Quay.

Yet the fortress received little attention in the nationwide Royal Commission programme of fort-building in the 1860s, being considered a lower strategic target for the enemy than many other locations around the coast.

It was Falmouth's designation as a Defended Port in 1887 and its position as a strategic harbour from 1890s, that resulted in many new defences for the estuary, commanded from Pendennis. These comprised breech-loading guns, accurate range-finders, searchlights to aid night fighting, and telephones and electricity to enable efficient communication. Six-inch guns were intended to engage warships from new positions in inside Pendennis and from Half-Moon Battery, while light 6 – and 12-pdr QF guns to counter fast torpedo boats were fitted in East Bastion, Carrick Mount Bastion and Crab Quay.

Such intricate defences required a permanent staff and in 1902 new barracks were built at Pendennis for the 105th Regiment Royal Garrison Artillery. Many other new buildings were constructed including a War Signal Station on the roof of the Henrician castle to control shipping movements. The castle was used as a barracks, storehouse and sergeant's mess in the late 19th and early 20th centuries.

During both the First and the Second World Wars, Pendennis Castle became part of Britain's coastal defence system. In the First World War Pendennis was the command centre of coast artillery defences for West Cornwall. Strongpoints and trenches defended it and thousands of troops came for training before going to war in France and Belgium. The Royal Navy used the anchorage for convoys, minesweepers and anti-submarine vessels.

In 1920 the Tudor Castle was declared an ancient monument, in 1957 the Army departed. Today, the castle is an English Heritage visitor attraction.

BL and QF batteries

The BL (Breech-Loading) and QF batteries are positioned on the Pendennis Headland and surrounded by a dry ditch. They were constructed between 1894 and 1895.

Between 1854 and 1856 all the old smooth bore guns were removed and replaced by seven 56-pdr guns on traversing carriages, one in each bastion and salient, and one in Ravelin. These were in turn replaced by four 64-pdr RML (Rifled Muzzle-Loading) guns in 1877.

At no.4 bastion in 1894 a single emplacement for a 6-inch gun on a hydropneumatic disappearing mounting was added. By 1909 it was obsolete and removed by 1911, by which time Half Moon Battery had taken over its role.

A new minefield across the harbour entrance was to be covered by two QF guns each installed in bastions 2 and 3. There 12-pdr QF Batteries were added in 1901, these were to counter the threat of Motor Torpedo Boats, but its role

became superfluous following the fitting of the 6-inch BL guns in Half Moon Battery.

A Practice Battery was formed in 1894 with four 64-pdr guns on traversing platforms mounted in the battery by 1898. Around 1901 one emplacement was adapted to take a 4-inch or 5-inch BL gun on a Vavasseur mount for volunteer practice use.

The first ***Half Moon Battery*** was constructed in 1795, it is situated between the castle and the headland. It was armed with 18-pdr smooth coast defence guns on garrison carriages and in the 1860s it was rearmed with 64-pdr RML guns on garrison carriages. In 1882 these were replaced with two 10.4-inch 26-ton RBL (Rifled Breech Loader) guns in armoured cupolas. In 1894 6-inch BL guns on an H.P carriage were fitted. In 1905 these were replaced with 2-inch BL Mk VII guns on CPII mountings. These served as the main defence of Falmouth through the First World War (together with 2-inch guns at St Anthony).

Crab Quay Battery on the Pendennis headland below the castle was in 1795 armed with smooth bore guns and these were subsequently changed for two 64-pdr RML guns. In 1887 it was decided to remove them and the battery remained unarmed until 1902. In 1895 armament of two 6-pdr QF guns was approved and these were mounted by 1898. The battery protected the submarine minefield in conjunction with the battery at St Mawes. and it remained until 1906 when the guns were declared superfluous, owing to the construction of the 12-pdr batteries at St Mawes and Pendennis.

By 1905 Falmouth had been reduced in status to a commercial port, and the guns were either disarmed or retained for practice use by the Royal Navy.

Outline Description

The ***BL and QF batteries*** approached via two tunnels from the west side of No.4 Bastion. There 12-pdr QF Batteries were added in 1901, each had a central magazine beneath and between two gun emplacements. The gun emplacement was fitted with an incongruous experimental proof mounting by EH in order to display at 6-inch BL barrel. This magazine is intact but not open to the public.

Half Moon Battery was cleared by EH and in 1993 they fitted two experimental proof carriages for two 4-inch BL guns into 6-inch BL positions. These have been adapted and fitted with 6-inch barrels. One emplacement retains its anti-aircraft canopy. The Battery Observation Post and Officer's Mess also survive. The outline remains of the coast artillery searchlight are present on the headland at Pendennis Point.

Crab Quay Battery on the Pendennis headland below the Castle was a safe landing place on the rocky coastline surrounding the headland. It has no ditch as it is situated directly on the sea-front. The Half Moon Battery was begun in the 18th century as a crescent-shaped coastal defence and adapted in the 19th and early 20th century.

The battery has been restored, to the right and in rear is the maxim machine gun battery with its two drum mountings, on either side of each are the ammunition niches. On the left side of the battery and in the rear is the late Victorian magazine, with a shell store and opposite, a cartridge store. A small structure has been added to the rear of the shell store, probably an ammunition store for the war-time 3-pdr QF guns. Outside the battery, on the foreshore, are the bases of the five searchlight positions that worked with the twin 6-pdr QF guns at Middle Point Battery.

Condition

Good.

The QF and BL batteries, and Half Moon batteries are part of the visitor attraction at Penndennis Castle and are in excellent condition.

At Crab Quay the area has been cleared of vegetation and the battery restored.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The castle is situated on the headland *c* 1 mile to the south-east of Falmouth, separated from St Mawes by the Carrick Roads, which both fortifications were built to defend. Pendennis Castle is set high on the hill overlooking the surrounding area and town, it was build to house heavy artillery and at the same time blend into the landscape, making it a difficult target for enemy vessels.

The batteries surround the castle, with Crab Quay battery sitting on the shoreleine beneath the castle, at the eastern side.

Threats

Possible indirect development impact from development of land to the north of Pendennis Castle drive (see Development Proposals below).

Visitor wear and tear.

Coastal erosion – Pendennis Castle is situated directly on the coastline, and there is potential for it to be impacted by coastal erosion, particularly Crab Quay Battery which is situated on the Pendennis headland below the Castle.

Ownership

English Heritage (or HE).

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Public heritage attraction

Development proposals

Planning application PA15/10757 on 'Land North Of Pendennis Castle Castle Drive' is awaiting decision which may have an indirect impact on Pendennis

Castle. This is described – 'EIA Screening Opinion for full planning application for site remediation, demolition of existing structures and redevelopment to provide 35 residential units, a reception building, associated leisure facilities (including a swimming pool and tennis court), storage areas, underground parking, sea wall, new access arrangements, landscaping and associated infrastructure' (PlanningCornwall website).

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Pendennis Castle and surrounding batteries are a Scheduled Monument.

The fortifications survive well and are of clear evidential value. They are also of high historic value, as they have a long history of use and continued to be updated through the 19th Century and the two World Wars. The small group of Falmouth military installations demonstrate well the developing nature of gun batteries, and how individual installations were constructed as part of a wider strategic group. The Falmouth defences identified in this study are inter-related and have strong group value. Pendennis Castle is also of high communal value, as it is open to the public as an English Heritage visitor attraction. It is also well documented and understood, which further enhances its value.

References

HE website

Jenkins S 2009

PastScapes website

PF website

PlanningCornwall website.

VF website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

St Anthony's Battery (OA9)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	Gerrans
NGR	SW 84769 31225
Group	Falmouth

PASTSCAPE#	1425482, 1395218
HER#	38109
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	The battery would benefit from periodic assessment to determine impacts from coastal erosion and visitor wear and tear.

Type

Coast Artillery Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

St Anthony's Battery and the installations at St Mawes and Pendennis Castle are inter-related in their defence of the Falmouth area.

St Mawes commanded the east side of the Carrick Roads and Pendennis Castle controlled the west side. Indeed the defences of the two sites developed very much in tandem for most of the post-medieval period, supplemented by 1805 by a battery on St Anthony's Head.

Brief History

The battery was constructed between 1895 and 1897 to augment the seaward defences of the Fal estuary. The battery was part of a group of batteries covering the deep water of Carrick Roads and the River Fal.

The battery had two 6-inch BL Mk VII guns on 'slow' barbette mountings. These were replaced by 1905 with 6-inch BL Mk VII guns The battery was in sight of the other batteries at Pendennis and St Mawes with which it could communicate using semaphore. In 1905 the Committee on the Armament of Home Ports decided that the searchlight below the battery should be converted into fighting lights.

The battery was fully manned during the First World War by the Cornwall RGA, and withdrawn in 1924. The battery was disarmed sometime between 1916 and 1919.

During the Second World War the battery was recommissioned and rearmed. Initially the 6-inch guns were remounted, but these were replaced with two 6-pdr BL guns, which performed a close defence role. In 1940 the battery performed a temporary anti-motor torpedo boat role and was armed with two pairs of 3-pdr guns. The battery was reduced to care and maintenance in 1944.

The National Trust acquired the site in 1959 as part of its coastal acquisitions policy to enable public access, and it is now accessible to the public.

Outline Description

The battery consisted on two sea facing gun emplacements with magazines. As the battery was isolated it required a defensible dry ditch revetted and protected by a loopholed wall to the seaward forming a sort of caponier. An unclimbable fence surrounded the battery. A military road was constructed to access the battery on the landward side with and a small stone jetty to the seaward.

Condition

Good.

The PastScapes website states:

'Two 6-inch gun emplacements and central magazine are also in good condition, although the emplacements are infilled. Two main battery buildings at SW 8477 3125 are in excellent condition. Ancillary building bases and small buildings lie in the immediate area of these two buildings. A Second World War connected building is visible at SW 8492 3135. In air photographs from 1995 there are visible earthworks abutting the area where Nissen huts were sited in 1946, but it is unclear if these represent earlier placements for a more extensive hut complex'.

Trend

Improving.

The site has been conserved as part of the 'Unlocking our Coastal Heritage – protecting our cultural corridor' project. One of the infilled gun emplacements was excavated and infilled as part of this.

Setting

The battery on St Anthony's Head at the Roseland Penninsula is situated directly on the coastline, part of National Trust property, with the coastal path running directly past it.

Threats

Uncontrolled plant growth – this may however have been addressed in the recent conservation of the battery.

Deterioration/ in need of management – the PF datasheet in 2013 states that the shell and cartridge hoists require conservation. Again, this may have been addressed by the recent conservation of the battery.

Coastal erosion – the battery is situated directly on the coastline.

Ownership

Charity (Heritage). National Trust

Current use(s)

Not applicable.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Some.

A good example of a surviving coastal battery which survives well, and is considered to be at the upper level of its level of significance. Historically, the battery had a long period of use form its construction in the 1890s through to the Second World War. It is also of group value with the Scheduled Monuments of Mawes Castle and Pendennis Castle, with which it is geographically and strategically linked. The small group of Falmouth military installations demonstrate well the developing nature of gun batteries, and how individual installations were constructed as part of a wider strategic group.

St Anthony's Battery is also of communal value, as it is owned by the National Trust with the coastal path providing easy access. It was also part of a recent project to understand and protect the coastal heritage of the area.

References

VF website

PF website

PastScapes website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

St Mawes Castle (OA10), incl. 12-pdr QF battery

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	St Just in Roseland
NGR	SW 84106 32754
Group	Falmouth

PASTSCAPE#	428635, 1427675, 1308413
HER#	38110, 18708.20, 18708.30, 18708.50, 166151
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1013807: St Mawes Castle. Scheduled Monument 1013808: Early 20th century gun battery 150m north of St Mawes Castle (1900-1904) Grade I Listed 1136705: St Mawes Castle, gatehouse, blockhouse, magazine and outer defences.
Recommendations	The battery would benefit from periodic assessment to determine impacts from coastal erosion and visitor wear and tear.

Type

Artillery Castle. Coast Artillery Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Pendennis Castle, another Henrician coastal fort, stands 2km away on the opposite side of the Carrick Roads. These two castles and associated installations, with St Anthony's Battery, defended the Falmouth area.

St Mawes commanded the east side of the Carrick Roads and Pendennis Castle controlled the west side. The defences of the two sites developed very much in tandem for most of the post-medieval period, supplemented by 1805 by a battery on St Anthony's Head.

Brief History

Like Pendennis Castle, St Mawes Castle was built in the 1540s as a small stone fort, one of a chain of coastal defences, erected by Henry VIII as a partner to the fort at Pendennis. In the eighteenth century a sea battery was built in front of and below the castle. At the end of the 1820s the battery was reformed with three faces for ten 24-pdr SB (Smooth Bore) guns.

Between 1853 and 1855 the battery was again remodelled, still with three faces to take twelve guns, and a magazine was built behind the central face. St Mawes was armed in the 1860s with the usual complement of smooth bore guns with four 64-pdr RML guns in a sea facing battery firing through embrasures. In 1877 all of the smooth bore guns were replaced by four 64-pdr RML guns, which remained in place until 1896 when they were withdrawn.

In 1898 the battery was extended to become a ***6-pdr QF battery***, these guns were to cover the minefield in Carrick Roads in front of the Castle in conjunction with the 6-pdrs at Crab Quay in front of Pendennis Castle. The QF guns had their own magazine beneath the battery accessed via a shaft. A machine gun was mounted at the eastern end of the front face. The 6-pdr QF guns were withdrawn in 1903 as the sea battery had been superseded by a new battery built above the castle.

The guns proved to be on a site that was too low to give effective defence of the minefield and a new battery was proposed above the Castle.

The new ***12-pdr QF battery*** was activated on higher ground to cover the minefield that was to be laid across the entrance of the Carrick Roads. Possibly at much the same time the mine observation station and searchlight directing cell were built on the battery's right flank. This 12-pdr QF Battery to the side of St Mawes Castle was constructed at 150ft above sea level in two stages, the first between 1900 and 1901 consisted of the two left hand 'A' Battery emplacements with their magazine and stores, the second when the caretaker's cottage and the two more 'B' Battery emplacements were added. Unusually the batteries at Falmouth were manned by Royal Miners Militia with the Royal Engineers working the Defence Electric Lights and Mine Control Posts at the north end of the battery.

After the battery had been completed the Royal Navy assumed responsibility for mining and Falmouth's status was reduced to that of a commercial port, so did not require QF guns. In 1905 the Owen Committee report recommended that all 6-pdr and 12-pdr QF guns be withdrawn from the defences of Falmouth. St Mawes 12-pdr QF Battery was disarmed in 1907. In 1910 it is believed that the battery was disarmed and abandoned. The Castle and the sea battery became an ancient monument when transferred to the Office of Works in 1920.

Re-fortification took place in 1941 when this monument became part of a more extensive system of defences on the headland that formed St Mawes Battery in the Second World War.

Outline Description

The ***6-pdr QF batteries*** still be seen in front of the old Victorian magazine, one of the two emplacements remains. The surviving concrete mounting and shell locker of one gun is visible built into the western half of the battery's south/ south-west flank; the other gun position was in the angle between the south west and south/south-west flanks but has been dismantled.

The ***12-pdr battery*** is described in the extract below from the HE Scheduling description, further detail is given in the Scheduling description.

> *'The gun battery....contains four gun emplacements protected by an earthen rampart and served by an underground magazine whose access-well is cut into a levelled stance behind the rampart...The battery's earthen rampart extends over 70m north west-south east, rising steeply from the hill's upper slope and topped by a narrow level platform in front of the gun emplacements. The emplacements themselves each comprise a raised concrete platform into whose forward sector is set the circular steel gun-mounting with projecting securement studs around its periphery, called a hold fast'.*

Condition

Good.

The surviving evidence of the two batteries is under the care of the English Heritage Scheduled Monument and visitor attraction.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

St Mawes Castle is on a broad headland flanking the east side of the Carrick Roads, at the mouth of the River Fal. The castle is immediately surrounded by open land with development further to the east of the castle towards St Mawes.

Threats

Potential threat from visitor wear and tear.

Coastal erosion – possible threat.

Ownership

English Heritage (or HE)

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Public heritage attraction

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

St Mawes Castle and the described associated installations are a Scheduled Monument. The castle is also a Grade I Listed Monument, which includes the gatehouse, blockhouse, magazine and outer defences.

The fortifications survive well and are of clear evidential value. They are also of high historic value, as they have a long history of use and was updated during the Second World War. The small group of Falmouth military installations demonstrate well the developing nature of gun batteries, and how individual installations were constructed as part of a wider strategic group. The Falmouth defences identified in this study are inter-related and have strong group value. St Mawes Castle is also of high communal value, as it is open to the public as an English Heritage visitor attraction. It is also well documented and understood, which further enhances its value.

References

VF website

PF website

PastScapes website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

AREA 4: PLYMOUTH

OA no.	Fort name	Signif.	Designated	Group	Phase	Condition			Threats
						HAR	Condition	Trend	
11	Penlee Point Battery	C	x	2	4	x	3	Stable	3
12	Maker Battery	B	x	2	4	x	2	Declining	4, 7
13	Grenville Battery	B	SM.LB (1160076 & 1160076)	2	4	x	3	Declining	3
14	Cawsand Battery	B	LB (II) (1329146)	2	2	x	1	Stable	7
15	Fort Scraesdon	A	LB.SM (1140707)	5	2	C1	2	Stable	2, 4
16	Fort Tregantle	A	SM.LB (1159255)	5	3 (RC)	C1	2	Stable	1, 3
17	Hawkins Battery	B	x	2	4	x	2	Stable	3, 4
18	Mount Edgcumbe Garden Battery	B	LB (II) (1329141)	1	3 (RC)	x	1	Stable	1, 4
19	Picklecombe Fort	B	LB (II) 1160211)	1	3 (RC)	x	1	Stable	7
20	Polhawn Battery	A	LB(II*) (1310634)	2	3 (RC)	x	1	Stable	4,7
21	Raleigh Battery	B	x	2	4	x	2	Declining	4
22	Whitesand Bay Battery	B	SM (1004664)	2	4	x	2	Improving	7, 4
23	Whitesand Bay Practice Battery	B	x	2	4	x	2	Stable	3, 4, 5
24	Renney Point Battery	B	LB (II) (1270701)	3	5	x	1	Stable	2, 7
25	Mount Wise Redoubt	C	x	1	1	x	2	Stable	3, 5
26	Devil's Point Battery	C	x	1	5	x	2	Stable	3, 5
27	Agaton Fort	B	SM (1002613)	4	3 (RC)	C1	2	Declining	2, 3, 4
28	Bowden Battery (Fort)	B	SM (1021365)	4	3 (RC)	x	2	Stable	3, 7
29	Brownhill Battery	B	SM (1002585)	3	3 (RC)	x	3	Declining	3, 5
30	Crownhill Fort	A	SM (1020571)	4	3 (RC)	Satisfactory	2	Declining.	2, 7
31	Drakes Island	A	SM (1067138, 1067140, 1067139. 1067137)	1	3 (RC)	A2	3	Stable	2, 3, 7
32	Egg Buckland Keep	A	SM. LB (II*) (1020543)	4	3 (RC)	Satisfactory	2	Stable	7
33	Ernesettle Fort	B	SM (1003193)	4	3 (RC)	x	2	Stable	3, 4
34	Forder Battery	C	x	4	3 (RC)	x	3	Stable	x
35	Fort Efford	B	SM (1021135)	4	3 (RC)	A1	4	Declining	2, 3
36	Knowles Battery	B	SM (1002614)	4	3 (RC)	C2	3	Improving	3, 4, 5

OA no.	Fort name	Signif.	Designated	Group	Phase	Condition			Threats
						HAR	Condition	Trend	
37	Laira Battery and Emplacement	B	SM (1021134, 1020686)	4	3 (RC)	B2	3	Stable	2, 3, 6, 7
38	Lord Howard Battery	C	x	3	5	x	2	Stable	1
39	Plymouth Breakwater Fort	A	SM (1002623)	3	3 (RC)	x	2	Stable	4, 5
40	Staddon Fort	B	SM (1002585)	3	3 (RC)	x	2	Stable	2, 3
41	Fort Bovisand and Staddon Point Battery	A	SM. LB (II*) (1002584. 1379617 1379615)	3	3 (RC)	C1	3	Stable	1, 3, 4, 6
42	Stamford Fort	B	SM (1002544)	3	3 (RC)	B2	2	Declining	1, 7
43	Watch House Battery	B	SM (1002585)	3	3 (RC)	A1	4	Declining	3, 4, 5
44	Woodland Fort	B	SM (1002615).	4	3 (RC)	D2	4	Improving	2, 3, 4, 5
45	Eastern Kings Redoubt	A	SM (1002643)	1	3 (RC)	x	1	Stable	x
46	Western Kings Redoubt	B	x	1	3 (RC)	x	1	Stable	5
47	Fort Austin	B	SM (1021380)	4	3 (RC)	Satisfactory	C2	Stable	2, 3, 5

Penlee Point Battery (OA11)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	Maker with Rame
NGR	SX 438 491
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437407
HER#	166274, 38541, 37094
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	Investigate surface remains

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Penlee Point Battery does not have a strong association with any other positions.

Brief History

This was a large battery of heavy, long-range guns constructed towards the end of the 19th century to guard against modern war ships standing off the peninsula and bombarding the dockyard from great distance. Proposals for a battery at this location were first drawn up in 1885 and then construction for a slightly different scheme did start in 1889. This was for a single 13.5-inch gun (the largest gun in Plymouth at that time) and two 6-inch guns. The 6-inch guns had been mounted by 1892 but the large 13.5-inch gun was only mounted in 1894 (and not yet operational). The large gun was sited at the eastern end of the battery and supported by a two-level magazine to the rear. Various other buildings were also constructed at this time including underground store rooms, accommodation casemates and magazines for the smaller guns.

A trench protected the battery and this was augmented in 1896 by an unclimbable fence.

The battery was added to in 1898 with the start of construction of a further two positions for 6-inch guns towards the east and. One of these guns was operational by 1903 but it appears that the other position was not finished. By 1903 a further two 9.2-inch BL guns had been constructed to the west of the large gun and by 1910 another 9.2-inch gun had been added. By now the 13.5-inch and 6-inch guns had been dismounted.

During the early 20th century various buildings were added and the emplacement was in service during the First World War with three 9.2-inch guns. By 1936 the three guns had been remounted to increase their range and the position remained operational during the Second World War.

The site was disposed of by the military in 1956 when conventional coastal defence was seen to be obsolete due to nuclear weapons. It was infilled in the 1970s and it is now a nature reserve.

Outline Description

The buildings and main surface structures have been entirely demolished and the site infilled. The gun aprons are identifiable and the western of the 6-inch positions is intact.

Condition

Poor.

All the above ground buildings have been demolished

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on the south eastern tip of Rame Head peninsula. It is sited at the brow of the coastal slope. The site is situated in a rural setting and retains its 19th century setting.

Threats

Deterioration/in need of management – erosion of the area near the battery from cars parking.

Ownership

Local Authority.

Cornwall Council, managed by Cornwall AONB. Nature reserve.

Occupancy

Unoccupied

Current use(s)

Part of the SW Coast Path and Rame Head Heritage Coast. The site just to the north of the remains of the battery is used as a car park for walkers.

Development proposals

No applications listed on planning portal.

Summary of Significance

Some.

Penlee Point Battery was an important site which remained in service from the late 19th century through both world wars and it illustrates the development of defensive military technology during this period.

Although the above-ground buildings have been demolished much of the site has been preserved by being infilled. These buried elements hold an evidential value and historical illustrative value. The site illustrates the rapid development of guns in the later 19th century and how the country's defence strategy had dramatically evolved between the 1860s programme of works and the 1890s.

References

Cornwall AONB website

PF website

SW Coast Path website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Maker Battery (OA12)

County Cornwall
District Cornwall
Parish Maker with Rame
NGR SX 4371 5104
Group Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437708
HER#	6121
Heritage status	Neither listed nor scheduled although it is within the curtilage of the Grade II listed Grenville Battery
Recommendations	Should be considered for listing, partly for surviving 1890s gun fixings

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Maker Battery forms part of the group of fortifications on Maker Heights at the south-east corner of Cornwall which defended Devonport Dockyard and the entrance to Plymouth Sound. This group include a number of 18th-century redoubts, early 19th century barracks and several batteries from the 1880s and 1890s (Grenville Battery, Hawkins Battery, Maker Battery, Raleigh Battery).

Maker Battery is immediately adjacent to the Grenville Battery and it appears that the two structures were sometimes seen as a single position (detailed further below).

Brief History

Maker Battery forms part of the major programme of rearmament following a review of coastal defences in 1887. This was in the context of a period of rapid, military technological development when new types of guns and weaponry rendering relatively recent fortifications obsolete. The battery was constructed to cover Cawsand Bay to the south and the approach to the Sound. The battery could have bombarded the decks of any ships lying here with plunging, high angle shells.

The battery was first armed in 1887 with a single 38-ton, 12.5-inch RML gun and by 1890 two other similar guns which had been mounted in the adjacent Grenville Battery had been relocated into new positions in the Maker Battery. Indeed the evolution of the site is closely linked to that of Grenville Battery and it appears that the two structures were sometimes seen as a single position. This was clarified to some extent in 1899 when No. 4 Redoubt was renamed as Grenville Battery. One Direction Range Finder was *in situ* by the 1896 map and a further three were added shortly afterwards.

The battery was modified in the very early 20th century and in 1903 it had two 6-inch BL guns. Stores and a shed for moveable armament were probably added in *c* 1901-3. By 1911 it had been disarmed and it does not appear to have remained in any military use. It was released by the War Office in 1956 and today the site is derelict and disused other than minor storage.

Outline Description

The two secondary 6-inch BL positions from *c* 1901-3 survive intact together with the westernmost of the two slightly earlier RML emplacements. The buried magazine, shelters and stores also survive as well as four DRF positions and parts of the unclimbable fence, partly facing the coastal path.

The account in The Historic Defences of Plymouth suggests that many elements of the battery survives but that the condition of the site has suffered through lack of maintenance and extensive dumping. The magazines are reported to have suffered fire damage.

Condition

Fair. Overgrown in parts.

Trend

Declining

Setting

The battery is sited at the top of a steep slope down to Cawsand Bay and it was designed with earthworks intended to obscure it from enemy ships in the sea. Although there is the development in Kingsand to the west of the battery, it largely retains its original setting.

Threats

The site has no formal designation or statutory protection.

Decay of fabric – the metal gun mountings may deteriorate further as they are exposed

Ownership

Private. Mount Edgcumbe Estate.

Occupancy

Unoccupied.

Current use(s)

The battery is largely derelict and its only use appears to be for minor storage.

Development proposals

There are no known current development proposals for Maker Battery or applications on the planning portal. However, if the adjacent site at Maker (in separate land ownership) is successfully developed as tentatively planned then this would increase the likelihood of proposals being developed for this site.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery forms part of the Maker Heights group and it helps illustrate the nature of fortification and weaponry at the end of the 19th century. This gives it an historical illustrative value. Together with other batteries of this period (for example Hawkins, Raleigh, Penlee) it reflects the powerful new guns on warships which could have bombarded the dockyard, over the top of

Maker Heights from Cawsand Bay. Its relatively short lifespan also reflects the continuing pace of technological development which had rendered this position obsolete before the First World War.

The remains also have an important evidential value in their potential for further study and investigation. The most westerly gun battery (12.5-inch RML) still has its drum and racer tracks with toothed traversing arc (dating from *c* 1890).

References

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

VF website

Cornwall AONB website

PF website

SW Coast Path website

OA 2016 'Maker Heights Conservation Statement' (forthcoming), unpublished client report

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Grenville Battery (OA13)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	Maker with Rame
NGR	SX 43851 51126
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437659
HER#	37105, 6123, 6129, 6113.04
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1003114: Battery and Royal Commission fortification called Grenville Battery The battery is Listed Grade II (list entry number: 1160076, UID: 61723)
Recommendations	Undertake building recording and investigation.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The Grenville Battery forms part of the group of fortifications on Maker Heights at the south-east corner of Cornwall which defended Devonport Dockyard and the entrance to Plymouth Sound. This group include a number of 18th-century redoubts, early 19th century barracks and several batteries from the 1880s and 1890s (Grenville Battery, Hawkins Battery, Maker Battery, Raleigh Battery). Grenville Battery is immediately adjacent to the Maker Battery and it appears that the two structures were sometimes seen as a single position.

Brief History

The Grenville Battery was constructed towards the end of the 19th century within (on the southern side of) the earlier Redoubt No.4. The new battery, facing out to sea was first proposed in 1885 for two 38-ton 12.5-inch RML guns and the works were completed in 1887. A moveable armament of four ?40-pdr guns was also proposed and there is known to have been a shed for moveable armament at the adjacent Maker Battery in 1901.

In 1890-92 the two guns from Grenville were relocated to the new Maker Battery and by the end of the century Grenville had been altered to allow for three 4.7-inch QF BL guns. These were mounted in 1901 and they were flanked by two look-out posts which remained in place until at least 1927. It is interesting to note that the position is not shown on the 1907 Six Inch OS Map whereas some of the other positions are shown. This appears to confirm that at this date the battery was still operational and its military sensitivity led to it being omitted from the map.

The Grenville Battery was abandoned by the military in 1948 when conventional coastal artillery was gradually being seen as obsolete. An aerial photo from 1947, when the battery may still technically have been operational, shows the structure clear of vegetation and essentially intact. The battery is shown on the 1950 OS map but it is not labelled as being 'dismantled'.

Outline Description

The late 19th century battery was constructed by extending and revetting in concrete the existing structure on the south side of Redoubt No.4. The main structure of the three QF guns from *c* 1901 survive together with readies store recesses (doors no longer *in situ*). A hoist or davit survives which would formerly have been used to raise the ordnance via a shaft from the magazines which survive below the guns. The magazines now have flat ceilings rather than the original arched vaulting and this alteration presumably dates to the installation of the three quick-firing guns. Remains also survive of a brick cook house.

Condition

Poor.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located on a promontory 600m north east of the village of Kingsand. The site is located at the top of a steep slope down towards Cawsand Bay. Although there is the development in Kingsand to the west of the battery, it largely retains its original setting.

Threats

In need of management – the exposed site is neither consolidated nor managed effectively.

Historic fabric or features are therefore threatened.

A caravan is located within the battery and the site is occupied on an informal basis. It is not believed that the occupier has caused any damage to the site and the arrangement may help with managing it (that is limiting some vegetation growth or keeping out other unwanted intruders). However, this type of informal occupation creates a potential threat.

Ownership

Private (under lease from Mount Edgcumbe Estate to the Rame Conservation Trust)

Occupancy

Unoccupied.

Current use(s)

The battery has no formal use although it is understood to be inhabited or occupied on an informal basis (caravan on site).

Development proposals

There are currently no development proposals for the Grenville Battery although outline plans for a heritage-led development for the wider group of Maker Heights fortifications are being prepared (albeit at an early stage). This would principally focus on the Maker Barracks and surrounding area and

they would probably not initially impact the Grenville Battery. However, if the proposals were successful then this would increase the likelihood of subsequent proposals for the Grenville Battery.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Grenville Battery is a Grade II listed building and it is within the Scheduled Monument boundary of Redoubt No.4. It is of significance in illustrating a phase of re-fortification after the slightly earlier 'Palmerston Forts' building programme of the 1860s and 1870s. This gives the site an historical illustrative value. The later phase provides evidence of the rapid development of military technology in this period and of the contemporary fears of a powerful militarised Germany. The site also has an evidential value in the potential it holds for future study and investigation.

References

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

VF website

OA 2016 Maker Heights Conservation Statement (forthcoming), unpublished client report

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Cawsand Battery (or Fort) (OA14)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	Maker with Rame
NGR	SX 4333 5035
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437660
HER#	6156, 6156.40, 6156.30
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1016102: Cawsand Fort Grade II Listed Cawsand Battery (list entry number: 1329146)
Recommendations	Ensure that any further developments are fully informed of the historic significance of the fort.

Type

Battery. Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Cawsand Fort forms part of the network of defences on the western approaches to Plymouth harbour and docks and is particularly associated with the nearby defences on Maker Heights.

Brief History

Similarly, to the nearby Tregantle and Scraesdon Forts, Cawsand Fort was originally recommended by Major Jervois in 1858, shortly before the 1859-60 Royal Commission on the Defence of the United Kingdom. The work was to defend the bays and to form a keep with accommodation for 100 men and it was located on the site of an earlier battery constructed during the crisis during the American War of Indepedence. The 1860 report stated that a work at Cawsand had commenced and the fort had been completed by 1863. It was armed relatively rapidly with 13 guns listed in a report from 1869; nine facing the sea and four on the land front. Heavier guns were recommended and by 1885 it had nine 64-pdr RML guns and four 8-inch SB guns. The smooth bore guns had been removed by 1893 and all the guns had gone by 1903.

The fort remained with the military during the First World War but it was released in 1926. In the early 1990s it was converted to residential flats.

Outline Description

Five sided land fort with coursed limestone rubble walls and limestone copings to parapets. The structure is almost triangular shaped and the spur of land on which it sits has very steep sides with a moat on the landward side. Barrack blocks are located along the south front adjacent to New Road while there is a curtain wall with ravelin to the landward (western) side and gun emplacements on the north east (seaward) side. The barrack blocks are two storied on the outer (S) face but due to the slope of the ground they are single storied inside.

The barracks have been converted to modern housing including adaptations and extensions so that much of the original face is now obscured.

The curtain walls along the seaward side are perforated by loops at regular intervals, of unusual form for firing horizontally and at an angle of 45 degrees downwards. On the inner side are 2 gun emplacements, with semicircular pivot tracks and magazine between them. Within the fort, between the north and south sides there is a splayed limestone tunnel with segmental-headed door to vaulted chamber to one side. On the landward side, the curtain wall has a fire-step and loops, rising up the spur and culminating in a looped ravelin on the summit. The north east side of the fort was formerly entered through an archway which has now gone. The interior of the fort is honeycombed with an extensive tunnel system.

Inside the fort are seven gun positions on the seaward face, most retaining elements of their racer rails and two retaining central pivots of reused cannon.

Lying within the array of gun positions is a partly sunken earth covered expense magazine with surviving alcoves and shelving; it has a new stairway built over it. A further expense magazine lies just to the south of the seaward gun positions; this may have served gun positions to the south east which have now been removed. It is now used as a workshop. The main underground magazine is located in the centre of the fort under a traverse and cavalier.

Condition

Good.

The site was converted into private housing in an early 1990s development and although this involved many alterations to the site most of the principal elements of the fort survive.

New houses have been on top of the ramparts facing the sea, involving the removal of the some of the ramparts in front of the extant gun positions. Extant gun positions have been converted to garden features and there has been some infilling of the ditch

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The fort is located on a spur of land between the villages and bays of Cawsand and Kingsand and it is overlooked itself by the higher ground rising up towards Maker Heights. The setting of the fort has been affected by development, it is set within the heart of the village of Kingsand with 'New Road' and housing directly surrounding a large proportion of the site.

Threats

Further incremental development and alteration to the fort gradually eroding its historic integrity.

Ownership

Private. Cawsand Fort Management Co Ltd and leased to private tenants.

Occupancy

Occupied.

Current use(s)

Converted into residential housing.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Cawsand Fort is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II Listed, as such it is of considerable significance.

The fort retains a near complete circuit of original walling including a bastion and demi-bastion on its landward side as well as a glacis. Many features of its interior are particularly well preserved including the main magazine and many of its raised gun platforms. Cawsand Fort is therefore of considerable evidential value.

Cawsand Fort is also of communal value, particularly for the current individual occupants of the site and an evidential value, particularly potential buried remains from the 18th century battery. Surviving parts of the site also have an historical illustrative value through helping to illustrate the nature of fortification design in the 1860s.

References

HE website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Fort Scraesdon (OA15)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	Antony
NGR	SX 393 549
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	436663
HER#	6361
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1004347: Scraesdon Fort Grade II Listed (list entry number: 1140707)
Recommendations	Continue to keep vegetation under control and monitor damage from training exercises. The remains of the railway linking Fort Scraesdon and Fort Tregantle are not protected and many deteriorate or become destroyed.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Scraesdon forms a group with the contemporary Tregantle Fort. Together these defended the Anthony Line and from 1893 to 1903 a military railway linked the two with the River Lynher at Wacker Quay, near St Germans (Pastscape Monument number 436664).

Brief History

Scraesdon Fort was constructed in 1858-68 as part of the western fortifications of Plymouth, within the extensive programme to improve the Channel Defences in the face of a perceived French threat. It was constructed along with the contemporary Tregantle Fort to form the Antony Position (that is to prevent an enemy occupying ground from which to bombard Plymouth and the dockyard) although a third smaller work proposed between them was not proceeded with.

The fort was originally proposed by Major Jervois before 1858 (that is shortly before Lord Palmerston's 1859-60 Royal Commission on the Defence of the United Kingdom), and some work was seemingly started that year. A memorandum of February 1858 states that 'the construction of the line of works is already in progress in front of Antony village'.

Detailed plans survive of an early design for the Fort from 1859. Parts of these plans were abandoned (for example the inclusion of a keep), and amended when building began in earnest in 1860, following the recommendations of the Royal Commission. The Fort was completed in 1868, at a total cost of £137,411.

A report of 1869 said that Scraesdon Fort was now largely complete and listed the intended armament as 57 guns, of which 27 were to be on the rampart. Three expense magazines to serve the guns had been completed by 1868. The three Haxos on the lower parade are also mentioned, and are shown on a plan of 1870. The Fort, however, apparently remained unarmed until at least 1875,

when an armament of twenty-five 7-inch RBL guns, six 8-inch howitzers and ten smooth bore flank guns was recommended. By 1885 two 7-inch RBL guns were mounted on the north and north-west salients of the Upper Parade, with three more in the Haxo batteries.

The armament had apparently increased again by 1893, including one 7-inch RBL gun on the north salient, one 64-pdr RML gun on the north-west face, one 7-inch RBL gun on the north-west Salient and three 7-inch RBL guns on the west face. In the Haxo battery on the Lower Parade was one 7-inch RBL gun and on the Middle Parade two 5-inch SBBL (Smooth-Bore Breech-Loading) guns. There were also two 32-pdr SBBL guns in the double caponier (four were recommended).

An important element of the surviving military landscape was introduced in the 1890s, with building of the Wacker Quay to Tregantle railway, affecting the glacis on the east side of Scraesdon Fort. The railway was in use until 1905.

The armament appears to have been withdrawn from Scraesdon possibly late in the 1890s, though occupation of the Fort as barracks continued well into the first half of the 20th century. The Fort was occupied as barracks by American troops prior to the Normandy Landings in 1944.

Scraesdon Fort was finally abandoned as an occupied military facility around 1945, leaving it initially without any functions. Latterly, however, it has seen militarily valuable use for training purposes, with the empty and open buildings providing a good simulation of urban combat conditions for (principally) Royal Marines training.

Outline Description

Scraesdon Fort is a very large, detached polygonal fort, unusually designed on two levels, surrounded by a 30ft deep rock-cut ditch on all sides other than the gorge to the south-east which has a shallower ditch. It is a very complex work with various levels, stairs and galleries. There are six caponiers (including one double) defending the gorge and ditches together with various musketry galleries and a loopholed escarp gallery.

Casemated ranges run around the perimeter of the pentagonal upper parade (to the south), including an east-to-west line which divides the upper parade from the lower levels. These ranges housed the main magazine, soldier's quarters, WCs, guardroom/cell and so forth. Above the casemates (apart from one) lies a thick layer of earth which forms the ramparts of the Fort and protects the casemates. On this rampart are sited a number of gun positions, and their associated magazines.

The later stone and concrete gun mountings are set into the thick earthen ramparts. Six fixed positions can be clearly discerned (although others may lie hidden in the scrub which covers the rampart). In addition there are two Moncrieff pits sited at either end of another of the Casemates. All positions consist of concrete parapets and concrete floors. Almost all retain the racers and pivot points from the gun mountings survive on the platforms and tackle rings survive on the walls. This group of gun positions was served by seven expense magazines.

A moat runs around the south and west sides of the Upper Parade with a granite counterscarp wall, mirrored by a similar scarp wall. Almost all the original buildings from within the upper parade ground have been lost.

Tunnels run steeply down from the upper parade to caponiers on the east and south sides. By far the largest caponier sits in the south-west corner of the ditch. This caponier is a large two-storey structure with a smaller musketry gallery attached to its south west end. There is a complete escarp gallery around the lower level.

The lower level of the fort divides into a middle parade and a lower one, with the two areas connected by a tunnel.

The dominant feature of the Lower Parade is the large Haxo casemate which faces to the north and covered the river approach to the fort (an extensive shaped glacis lies in the fields below). This casemate had provision for three guns housed within elaborate stone, brick and concrete arches (by 1895 the guns were 7-inch RBL).

Various related features survive outside the main fort including an extensive system of sculpted slopes and glacises. An immensely important element of the fort is the huge glacis which runs around the northern, western and southern sides of the fort.

From Wacker Quay a light railway was completed in the early 1890s which led to both Scraesdon and Tregantle forts. The railway went out of use before the First World War but a surprising amount of the fabric of the railway remains undisturbed. The line of the railway is clearly traceable and iron rails are visible in places beneath the undergrowth.

One of the most unusual survivals of the whole Scraesdon complex is the system of trenches which lie on the scarp to the west of the fort and which may date from the First World War. The trenches were well preserved (although covered in woodland) in 2005 when OA undertook a Conservation Management Plan of the site.

Condition

Fair. Poor in areas.

The fort is partly derelict and overgrown but managed. The 2015 HAR Register listed the condition of the site's archaeology as being 'generally satisfactory but with significant localised problems' with the main issue being scrub/tree growth.

The register also listed the condition of the buildings as poor and gave the site a priority rating of 'C: slow decay; no solution agreed'. This entry in the register also records that vegetation is being kept under reasonable control and that various remedial works have been undertaken (works to stop water ingress, repairs to metal work throughout site, repairs to drawbridge and main gate)

Trend

Stable/improving

Setting

The fort is located on a hill overlooking the Lynher River and Wacker Lake. It is set in a rural location and largely retains its original setting.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation – scrub/tree growth across the site

Decay of fabric/ in need of management – threats to fabric from military training exercises

The remains of the military railway linking Fort Scaesdon and Fort Tregantle are not scheduled and may deteriorate or be destroyed (several remains of the railway were noted on Pastscape from observations in 2010).

Ownership

MOD, maintained by Defence Infrastructure Organisation.

Occupancy

Essentially vacant although parts used for MOD training

Current use(s)

Used for training Royal Navy and Royal Marines personnel.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

Scraesdon Fort is a Scheduled Monument and it is Grade II Listed.

Together with Tregantle Fort, Scraesdon Fort represents a major phase in the history of the Channel defences and a time of great national concern for the safety of the realm. As one of the earlier of the Palmerston forts built to defend Plymouth and Portsmouth in the 1850s-60s, it helped to establish the design principles adopted for the network. The considerable significance of Scraesdon's individual design is much enhanced by its association with Tregantle Fort and other features in the military landscape. This particularly provides it with an historical illustrative value.

The early abandonment of the fort, while resulting in loss of significance through neglect and deterioration, has providentially allowed the plan and much of the fabric of the fort to survive in a largely unchanged state, free of extensive modern alterations or additions (as, for example, at Tregantle). This survival enhances its evidential value.

References

PF website

MOD, Defence Infrastructure Organisation website

VF website

OA (2005) Scraesdon Fort: Conservation Management Plan

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Tregantle Fort (OA16)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	Antony
NGR	SX 386 533
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	436661
HER#	6354
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1004346: Tregantle Fort Grade II Listed Tregantle Fort (list entry number: 1159255)
Recommendations	

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Tregantle Fort forms a group with the contemporary Scraesdon Fort. These defended the Anthony Line and from 1893 to 1903, a military railway linked the two with the River Lynher at Wacker Quay, near St Germans (Pastscape no. 436664).

Brief History

Tregantle Fort was constructed between 1859 and 1864 following Lord Palmerston's 1859-60 Royal Commission on the Defence of the United Kingdom, and it was intended to be one of three forts on the Antony line defending the western side of Plymouth Dockyard. Only two of these forts were constructed, the other one being Scraesdon. These formed a line across the spur of land from St Germans River and the coast, to prevent the highlands from being captured and the potential bombardment of the dockyards.

The fort was intended to be armed with 87 guns but perhaps due to the diminished threat posed by France it appears that a relatively small proportion of these were actually fitted. By 1895 it is known that six 64-pdr RML guns had been installed in the Keep, five of which were on the roof and the other is thought to have been fitted in Room 16A to cover the drawbridge. In 1895 the fort mounted three 64-pdr RML guns and three 7-inch RBL guns on the north face, a 64-pdr RML gun and 7-inch RBL gun on the north-west, one 7-inch RBL gun on the salient and six 64-pdr RML guns in the south-west battery. Also six 64-pdr RML guns where mounted in the Keep. No 32-pdr SBBL guns were fitted to the caponiers, even though one was tested in a series of tests from 1885 to 1892 (Hogg 1974, 196, Moore 2003).

By 1903 the fort became an infantry battalion headquarters and a number of firing ranges for small arms were added to the existing one for the fort's garrison, firing out to sea to the west and south-west of the fort. The fort remained in army use and was used as a training school for air defence and gas training from 1938 until 1942 when it was taken over and used by the US army. Major works were carried out by the US army on the south and east

barracks which removed the protective soil covering the roof to allow repairs to be undertaken. It has remained exposed to the present day. After the war the fort returned to the MOD and the lower half of the fort continuing to be used for accommodation and training as part of the Tregantle training area. The upper half of the fort is locked up and unused.

Outline Description

The fort has a hexagonal plan containing an upper and lower parade divided by a central traverse with a number of utility buildings (stables, stores and toilets) around the edges. The southern and western edges of the fort contain the earth-covered and bomb-proof casement barracks and the later south-west battery, which was built in 1869 on the recommendations of a visiting Russian General, Count Todleben (the engineer responsible for the defences of Sebastopol). This battery is in the form of six Haxo casement positions along the south-west face of the fort facing out to sea. The upper parade provided access to the gun positions along the north and north-west edges of the fort. These consist of three stone embrasures, two single Haxo casements, two Moncrieff emplacements and two later 1890s concrete emplacements.

In front of these is a chemin de ronde, accessed by an entrance from the north-west caponier and an entrance on the north-east rampart just north of the Keep moat. The chemin de ronde tops the 20ft deep rock cut ditch, which surrounded all but the south side of the fort and is protected by four single and a double two-storey caponier.

On the east side of the fort is the main entrance into the site across a bridge over the ditch with the fort's keep on its north side. Of all the forts constructed in the 19th century Tregantle is one of only three known to have had a purpose-built Keep. The others were at Fort Brockhurst in Gosport and Fort Grain in the Thames/Medway (which has now been demolished). The keep has a semi-circular plan with roof-top embrasures covering the east side of the fort. The first floor has embrasures covering the internal parades and providing access to the fort's main magazines beneath the keep.

The fort's ditch passed the east side of the Keep and an internal moat surrounds the keep's west side from north to south. The ditch and moat were covered by counterscarp galleries and musket galleries across the ditch which face the north-east and south-east caponiers.

The interior of the keep is known to be in poor condition, particularly the wooden floors. A section of the counterscarp wall has collapsed.

Condition

Fair.

The fort was listed on the most recent Heritage at Risk Register (2015) with a priority category of 'C – slow decay with no solution agreed'. There are localised problems.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The fort is situated on a hill of natural Slate Dunstone overlooking Whitsand Bay at a height of 360ft allowing it commanding views to the west, the north and of Scraesdon Fort. It is situated south of the main road (B3247) from the west to Maker Heights.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Deterioration/ in need of management – derelict in places, but the site is understood to be managed.

The remains of the military railway linking Fort Scaesdon and Fort Tregantle are not scheduled and may deteriorate or be destroyed (several remains of the railway were noted on Pastscape from observations in 2010).

Ownership

MOD, maintained by Defence Infrastructure Organisation.

Occupancy

Partly occupied.

Current use(s)

Parts of the site are still used for training Royal Navy and Royal Marines personnel.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II Listed.

The site is well preserved and the fact that it has remained in military use from its original construction enhances its interest. It is also one of only three forts nationally from this period to have incorporated a keep, which provides it with a rarity value.

The surviving structure has a clear evidential value and its dramatic form also gives it an aesthetic value. The fort has an historical illustrative value through showing the nature of fortification design in the 1860s and the military railway linking Fort Scaesdon and Fort Tregantle further enhances the value of the fort and provides evidence of how military equipment was delivered to both forts.

References

OA, August 2007, The Keep, Tregantle Fort, Anthony, Cornwall, Unpublished client report

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

PF website

Pastscape website

Hawkins Battery (OA17)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	Maker with Rame
NGR	SX 4411 5156
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437704
HER#	6125
Heritage status	No heritage designation
Recommendations	Consider designation Conservation Statement to ensure significance is understood

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Hawkins Battery forms part of the group of fortifications on Maker Heights at the south-east corner of Cornwall which defended Devonport Dockyard and the entrance to Plymouth Sound. This group include a number of 18th-century redoubts, early 19th century barracks and several batteries from the 1880s and 1890s (Grenville Battery, Hawkins Battery, Maker Battery, Raleigh Battery).

Hawkins Battery is one of several surviving High-Angle Batteries, also including the following: Fort Cumberland High Angle Battery, Steynewood High Angle Battery, The Verne High Angle Battery.

Brief History

Hawkins Battery forms part of the major programme of rearmament following a review of coastal defences in 1887. This was in the context of a period of rapid, military technological development when new weaponry was rendering relatively recent fortifications obsolete. New battleships were by this date able to lie off Whitsand Bay to the west of Maker and bombard the dockyard so to counter this three batteries of high angle 9-inch 12-ton RML guns were built on the Cornish peninsula at Rame Church, Tregantle Down and Hawkins. These would fire high angle projectiles, directed by new position findings stations nearby, to plunge down on the decks of ships.

The battery was completed in 1892 and in 1893 it was armed with four 9-inch guns. The guns were not operational between 1906 and 1908 (Pye and Woodward) and in 1913-4 the battery was rebuilt to accommodate two modern 9.2-inch BL, high angle guns. In 1916 is was also armed with four maxim guns and 42 rifles. The battery was to be staffed by three officers and 96 other men.

The guns remained in place in 1927 but by the Second World War they had been dismounted and the battery was released by the MOD in 1946.

The battery was designed with concrete walls and caponiers (or machine gun post) at the outer corners which were similar to the pillboxes constructed in the Second World War. These provided fire along the outer ditch.

Outline Description

The battery is located to the east of Maker Farm and just below the crest of a ridge to prevent it from being seen by enemy ships. It has a large rectangular plan surrounded by a ditch and caponiers at the south-east and south-west corners as well as a blockhouse to the centre of the north side. The two gun positions are towards the centre, above a buried magazine complex and along the north side there is a range of buildings (shelters, washrooms and latrines). Along the east side there is a master gunners quarters, a power house and a workshop. The battery comprises two main constructional phases (both in concrete): the original 1890s building and modifications of *c* 1914. Among the surviving features of interest are parts of the ramps for transporting the shells up to the parapet by the gun muzzles.

The main structure of the battery was largely complete in 1996 although the condition of some elements was deteriorating. The moat was reported as being heavily overgrown but many internal fixtures and fittings survived.

Condition

Fair.

Trend

Stable

Setting

Located on a low rise above Cawsand Bay, 2.5km south west of Plymouth. Located below the crest of a ridge to minimise visibility from enemy ships lying off the coast. The battery is within the Rame part of the Cornwall Area of Outstanding Natural Beauty. The immediate setting of the fort is effected by caravans, but the wider landscape setting is largely retained.

Threats

Decay of fabric – several of the areas of hardstanding for the caravans and chalets may have caused damage to the site (site is not listed or scheduled) (Google Maps 2016).

In need of management – there are incremental development threats, particularly due to the fact that the battery is not statutorily protected.

Ownership

Private.

Occupancy

Occupied.

Current use(s)

Used as a caravan and chalet park.

Development proposals

No outstanding applications listed on planning portal.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The site is of particular interest as a relatively well preserved high angle battery. Few of these batteries were constructed and the other two in the vicinity of Hawkins (Tregantle Down and Rame Church) have both been demolished. The site therefore has an evidential value and an historical illustrative value. It is of high group value with the other surviving high-angle batteries including Fort Cumberland High Angle Battery, Steynewood High Angle Battery and The Verne High Angle Battery.

More generally the battery helps illustrate the nature of fortification and weaponry at the end of the 19th century. Its relatively short lifespan reflects the continuing pace of technological development which had rendered this position obsolete before the First World War.

References

PF website

Google Maps 2016

VF website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

OA 2016 Maker Heights Conservation Statement (forthcoming), unpublished client report

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Mount Edgcumbe Garden Battery (OA18)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	Maker with Rame
NGR	SX 4563 5317
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437546
HER#	37091
Heritage status	Grade II Listed Garden Battery (list entry number: 1329141)
Recommendations	Enable occasional public access (for example on heritage open days)

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

This forms part of the inner defences on the Cornish (west) side of the sound. It is at the northern end of the Maker Peninsula and it is adjacent to a number of earlier fortifications from when the defence of the dockyard was concentrated around this inner core.

Brief History

The Garden Battery in Mount Edgcumbe was constructed as a result of the 1860 Royal Commission in order to augment the inner sea defences towards the north-west corner of the Sound (at the mouth of the Hamoaze). It lies on the site of a mid 18th century saluting battery (Mount Edgcumbe Battery) and it was constructed from 1862-3. Iron shields were added after 1869.

A saluting battery (Earl's Battery) was added on top of the Garden Battery at a relatively early stage and it was present by 1871. This replaced the 18th-century saluting battery which had been demolished by the construction of the Garden Battery.

The Garden Battery comprised seven casemated guns (with iron shields added after 1869) and with magazines to the rear. By 1882 it had been armed with seven 68-pdr SB cannon but these guns would have been almost obsolete by this date and in 1885 they were replaced by seven 9-inch RML guns. The position saw further alteration to the armament in the following years and by 1910 two of the casemates had searchlights installed. The guns and lights were removed in 1927 and the battery was released by the military in 1946.

Outline Description

The Garden battery has a segmental arch plan form with seven granite-faced casemates overlooking the river and magazines to the rear.

Photographs of the interior of the structure are available on an urban explorer' website (Derelict Places) and it appears that the battery is in very good condition

Condition

Good.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on the rocky foreshore at the north eastern tip of the Maker peninsula at the narrowest entrance to Plymouth harbour and the River Tamar (the Hamoaze). It lies within Mount Edgcumbe Country Park immediately north of the bowling green.

Threats

Coastal erosion.

Decay of fabric.

Ownership

Local Authority – jointly owned by Cornwall Council and Plymouth City Council.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

It forms part of the gardens of Mount Edgcumbe, a visitor attraction, although the interior is not publicly accessible.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is Grade II Listed and in good condition.

The structure has an evidential value in the potential it holds for future study and an historical illustrative value in demonstrating the rapid development of guns in the later 19th century.

References

PF website

Derelict Places website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Picklecombe Fort (OA19)

County Cornwall
District Cornwall
Parish Maker with Rame
NGR SX 4555 5155
Group Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	The 1860s fort:437549, the 1840s fort: 545705
HER#	6235
Heritage status	Grade II Listed (list entry number: 1160211)
Recommendations	Any further proposals or developments should fully consider the heritage significance of the site.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The 1860s fort is immediately adjacent to an early 19th century fort which has been converted into a house. It also has an association with Fort Bovisand which has a similar form and purpose to Fort Picklecombe but guards the eastern approaches towards the Sound.

Brief History

A heavy battery at this location was first proposed by Major Jervois in 1858 and therefore the origins of Fort Picklecombe slightly pre-date the 1859-60 Royal Commission.

The intended fort was to be located just below an earlier battery from the 1840s and to provide more powerful defence to the west side of the breakwater. The proposed design which followed the 1860 Royal Commission for this site were slightly smaller than Jervois's scheme and it was to mount 42 guns in two tiers and a further 16 guns on an open platform above. Alterations to the design in 1864 relocated the magazine, from a detached structure at the rear to the basement, and also removed the proposed roof tier of guns.

The structure was completed by 1867 and by 1872 iron shields had been added to the openings. At this time the fort was armed with thirty two RML guns. By 1880 the fort was fully armed with 10-inch guns on the upper tier and ligher 9-inch guns on the lower tier. There were 7-inch guns on the flanks. In 1885 the armament was reduced slightly and by 1898 the number of RML guns had been reduced again although two 6-pdr QF guns had been emplaced to cover the minefield. In 1899 there are known to have been further QF gun positions on the roof and these guns were *in situ* in 1903. They had probably been dismounted shortly after 1908.

Two 6-inch BL guns were installed around this time and they served during the First and Second World Wars as the Examination Battery. Two 4-inch QF guns were installed before the First World War but these were removed between 1927 and 1931.

The guns were dismounted in 1956 when it was recognised that conventional coastal defence had been rendered obsolete by nuclear weapons.

The fort was converted to residential apartments in the 1970s.

Outline Description

Fort Picklecombe has a curved plan which wraps around the rocky foreshore just above high tide level. It comprises two tiers of granite faced casemates (42 in total), all of which essentially survive other than the easternmost pair. At basement level the plan is similar to Fort Bovisand with alternating cartridge and shell stores and access passages to the rear and front. There is also a lamp passage in the upper part of the rear passage and shell lifts.

None of the iron shields to the casemates survive and most of the internal fittings have also been lost through the 1990s conversion of the site to multiple occupancy residential use.

On top of the battery there is now a viewing platform and the north face of the battery was rebuilt in the 20th century.

Also to the rear of the casemates is the cook house.

The 1970s conversion included the construction of new flats on the roof of the fort and this will have removed (or obscured) all trace of the later gun positions known to have been in this area.

There is a Tudor Gothic style barrack block to the north with towers and ornamental battlements. To the east and west is a curtain wall with gateways.

Condition

Good.

The conversion of the site to residential accommodation has involved substantial alterations and extensions but the overall form of the fort survives. Most internal fittings are believed to have been removed.

Trend

Stable

Setting

Located on the rocky foreshore just above sea level at the south eastern tip of the Maker headland.

Threats

Decay of fabric/ in need of management – further development alterations to the site leading to a loss of original features

Gradual erosion of historic fabric from minor incremental alterations

Ownership

Private. The fort is owned by a private company, Fort Picklecombe Management Company Ltd.

Occupancy

Occupied.

Current use(s)

The fort was converted to luxury flats during the 1970s. Some are residential and others holiday lets.

Development proposals

No outstanding applications listed on planning portal. There are several applications listed from the last 2-3 years for fire stairs, repointing, new cabinets and so forth which demonstrate the potential threats from incremental change.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is Grade II Listed, as such it is of considerable significance.

Picklecombe Fort has an aesthetic value, being a dramatic landmark visible from considerable distances along the coastal path. It is also of evidential value, partly in the potential buried remains, but also in standing structures with the potential for investigation It has historical illustrative value in demonstrating the development of coastal defence in the later 19th and early 20th century.

It is also one of only two multi-tier casemated batteries in the country (the other being at Garrison Point, Sheerness), it is therefore of some rarity value.

References

PF website

National Heritage List

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Polhawn Battery (OA20)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	Maker with Rame
NGR	SX 4205 4922
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437404
HER#	6006
Heritage status	Grade II* Listed (list entry number:1310634)
Recommendations	Ensure that any further development is fully informed by the heritage significance of the site.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The battery was intended as a self-contained position so it is not strongly associated with any other position but it was connected to Tregantle Fort by a military road.

Brief History

Polhawn Battery was constructed on the recommendation of the 1860 Royal Commission to command the approach to the eastward side of Whitsand Bay and prevent the enemy landing here. It was built to the designs of Capt du Cane between 1861 and 1863.

It was armed with seven 68-pdr guns but by 1885 these had been replaced by seven 64-pdr RML guns. In 1898 it was recommended that these guns be replaced by two 6-pdr QF guns from Picklecombe Fort but it is unclear if these were ever installed.

In 1927 the battery was sold by the military into private hands and either then or soon after it was converted to a hotel. The list decription (from 1986) states that at that date it was a house but since then it has been converted to a wedding venue. After the site was sold by the military it became known as Polhawn Fort.

Outline Description

Polhawn is a two storey structure constructed from coursed rubble with granite dressings and with a kinked or splayed rectangular plan. The front has seven segmental arched embrasures for the guns: four to the eastern side and three to the western. The interior has seven main brick-vaulted chambers for the guns and smaller rooms for stores and magazine in the basement below.

There is a narrow ditch and loop-holed gorge on land side and there are two single-storey caponiers: one at the centre of the rear and the other towards the west end.

Access to the fort is over a refurbished drawbridge at roof level and spiral granite staircases at each end of the roof provide a route to the gun casemates. Separate stairs provide access to the basement.

At basement level, to rear there is a shell-chute, and the door to the magazine has printed lettering: MAGAZINE. The magazine is to the left, front right has store rooms/barrack accommodation.

Condition

Good. It is activity conserved.

Trend

Stable

Setting

Located on the western side of Rame Head Peninsula, half way up a steep scrub-covered cliff overlooking Whitsand Bay. It is situated just off the south-west coastal path and largely retains its original setting.

Threats

Decay of fabric – erosion of historic fabric from developments, including minor incremental alterations

Ownership

Polhawn Fort private company.

Occupancy

Occupied

Current use(s)

The fort has been conserved and converted to a wedding venue.

Development proposals

One outstanding application from 28 July 2016 relating to the installation of a low level safety barrier and external lights for a disabled access ramp.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

Powlawn Fort is Grade II* Listed.

Despite being converted to new use in the first half of the 20th century it survives relatively well and retains many historic features which give it an evidential value and historical illustrative value. Its use as a wedding venue will provide it with some communal value.

References

PF website

Polhawn Fort – Unique Cornwall Wedding Venue website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Raleigh Battery (OA21)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	Maker with Rame
NGR	SX 4431 5148
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437705
HER#	
Heritage status	Undesignated
Recommendations	Consider for statutory designation. A Conservation Statement is required to ensure the historic significance of the site is understood

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Raleigh Battery forms part of the group of fortifications on Maker Heights at the south-east corner of Cornwall which defended Devonport Dockyard and the entrance to Plymouth Sound. This group include a number of 18th-century redoubts, early 19th century barracks and several batteries from the 1880s and 1890s (Grenville Battery, Hawkins Battery, Maker Battery, Raleigh Battery).

Brief History

Raleigh Battery forms part of the major programme of rearmament following a review of coastal defences in 1887. This was in the context of a period of rapid, military technological development when new types of guns and weaponry rendering relatively recent fortifications obsolete. It was principally constructed to bombard any ships attempting to lie at anchor to the south off Cawsand Bay.

The site was initially identified in 1885, and proposed for the installation of a single large gun but as constructed (completed in 1893), it was armed with two 10-inch 29-ton BL guns. These were mounted en barbette (that is with the gun on a slightly raised platform to allow it to fire over a parapet rather than through an embrasure). In 1896 (or soon after) improvement works were undertaken with the addition of two Direction Range Finder positions, a brick accommodation block, a shelter or artillery store, an unclimbable iron fence.

This was a period of rapid technological development and it appears that the guns (or position) became obsolete in the early years of the 20th century. The guns were placed in reserve in 1908 and dismounted in 1910. The battery was abandoned in 1946 and it appears to have remained largely derelict since then.

Outline Description

Raleigh Battery comprises two concrete gun emplacements located on the crest of a ridge and terraced into the slope to prevent them from being easily seen by enemy ships off the coast.

Each of the two emplacements have a curved concrete apron with parapet wall and to the rear there is a sunken access track. Each position incorporates shell

recesses and tackle loops with various other structures to the rear (artillery stores, shelters, telephone panels and so forth). Between the emplacements is the buried magazine store with magazine passage, incorporating recesses for storage of side arms and serving hatches to two adjoining cartridge stores. Each cartridge store is illuminated by two lamp recesses at the lobby and two further lamp recesses in the magazine passage. The shell store is at the north end of the passage with lamp recesses either side of the central door and there is also an oil and paint store in one emplacement.

Condition

Fair.

Overgrown and partly derelict but it is believed that many features survive (pivots, rails, tie-bolts, tackle loops, gates, fireplace and joinery in accommodation block). The Direction Range Finders survive complete and the brickwork forming the tunnel shows no sign of stress.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Raleigh Battery is located on the crest of a ridge on Maker Heights. It lies on sloping land facing south-east towards the sea and the position is terraced into the slope to obscure it from enemy ships.

It is located in the Rame Head part of the Cornwall Area of Outsanding Beauty.

Threats

Deterioration/ in need of management – the battery has no statutory built heritage designation and therefore it would be threatened by potential development.

In 2012 a request was made to the Maker with Rame Parish Council to allow an individual to address the council with regard to a possible application to refurbish the battery. It is not known whether this was taken any further.

Ownership

Private.

Occupancy

Unoccupied.

Current use(s)

The battery is believed to be largely disused and derelict although it has apparently had some limited use for bee keeping with beehives inside at least one of the emplacements.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Raleigh Battery helps illustrate the nature of fortification and weaponry at the end of the 19th century. It therefore has an historical illustrative value. Its relatively short lifespan reflects the continuing pace of technological development which had rendered this position obsolete before the First World War.

References

PF website

VF website

Ramepc website

Derelictplaces website

OA 2016 Maker Heights Conservation Statement (forthcoming), unpublished client report

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Whitsand Bay Battery (OA22)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	St John
NGR	SX 4075 5147
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437676
HER#	6106, 166298
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1004664: Whitesand Bay (or Tregonhawke) battery
Recommendations	Undertake Conservation Statement to ensure the continued development of the site is based on an understanding of what is significant at the site.

Type

Battery

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Whitsand Bay Battery forms part of a group of defences from the second half of the 19th century including Polhawn Battery and Tregantle Fort, each of which were slightly earlier in date than Whitsand. The battery is also associated with Whitesand Bay Battery Bay Practice Battery (OA ?) which is adjacent, just to the south west.

Brief History

The 1860 Royal Commission identified Whitsand Bay as a vulnerable area in the defences of Plymouth and it recommended the construction of two new positions: Polhawn Battery at the south-eastern end to cover the beaches and Fort Tregantle at the north-western to prevent a land assault. The continued development of long-range guns however meant that by the 1880s the possibility had emerged of enemy ships bombarding the dockyard whilst lying off Whitsand Bay. To counter this the construction of a new battery was proposed in 1885 towards the centre of Whitsand (or Whitesand) Bay comprising three 12.5-inch RML guns and two 6-inch BL guns.

The battery was constructed between 1888 and 1890 and designed to house three long range guns to protect Devonport Dockyard with each flank having a flight of steps leading to a Range Finder. The guns were mounted in 1893 together with two further guns on hydro-pneumatic mountings which were removed in 1897. The surrounding moat was constructed in 1894 and revetted with a concrete wall and in turn protected by three octagonal concrete musketry caponiers. In 1906 there was a proposal to mount two large guns on the central two emplacements, and the remaining original guns were removed in 1912. The battery was not re-armed in the First or Second World Wars. However, Nissen huts and a possible radar station were built during the latter war within the north west part of the battery. In 1951 it was released by the Ministry of Defence and the site has since been developed as the Whitsand Bay Fort Holiday Park.

Outline Description

The battery survives as a five-sided defended enclosure with concrete and earth built defences and a partially in-filled outer rock cut moat. Five gun emplacements are arranged symmetrically behind a thick sea facing rampart. Further emplacements on the north west and south east angles have brick lined vaulted tunnels with guard chambers leading out into the moat. Adjacent to the others are stores, steps leading down to a long connecting brick tunnel with magazines and further rooms leading off. Also within is a casemated barrack block and the entrance faces ENE. Many internal features and fittings also survive. The surviving buildings are largely brick built with stone copings.

Condition

Fair. Although altered.

Trend

Improving.

Setting

Whitsand Bay Battery is on the western side of the Rame peninsula, located on a hill overlooking the bay. It is surrounded by a caravan park which has impacted its setting.

Threats

Threats of incremental development within holiday park.

Deterioration/ in need of management – access roads and hardstanding areas have been constructed as part of the holiday park on top of the fort

Ownership

Private company. Whitsand Bay Fort Holiday Park Ltd.

Occupancy

Occupied (Holiday park).

Current use(s)

Whitsand Bay Fort Holiday Park with chalets and camping around the fort. There is a restaurant within the 'vaults' and it also holds functions and Weddings within the casemates.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Whitsand Bay Battery is a Scheduled Monument, it is therefore of considerable significance.

By the late 19th century, barbette positions became the usual practice and, as the century progressed, guns were mounted in increasingly sophisticated emplacements, normally built in concrete with integrated magazines. The Royal Commission fortification known as Whitsand Bay or Tregonhawke

Battery is an example of the intermediate step between building for muzzle and breech loading artillery and is therefore important for understanding the development of military engineering.

It is also of group value with Whitesand Bay Practice Battery, and both have communal value as they are easily visible especially to those walking the south-west coast path.

References

PF website.

Whitsandbayholidays website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Whitesand Bay Practice Battery (OA23)

County	Cornwall
District	Cornwall
Parish	St John
NGR	SX 4068 5148
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	1396083
HER#	6106.10
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	Consider for designation

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Adjacent to Scheduled Monument 1004664: Whitesand Bay (or Tregonhawke) battery (OA ?)

Brief History

Whitesand (or Whitsand) Bay Practice Battery was constructed in the 1890s together with the main Whitesand Bay Battery immediately to the east. The practice battery was intended for the training of volunteer artillerymen.

The eastern part of the battery was for four 64-pdr RML guns and it was originally constructed between 1895 and 1896 but two of these positions appear to have been subsequently adapted.

The western part of the battery, for another four guns was constructed from 1896 to 1897 and these were originally for 3-pdr QF guns. In 1903 these were replaced by 12-pdr QF guns and in the same year the RML guns may have been dismounted. The QF guns appear to have been dismounted in 1912.

Outline Description

Two sets of four gun positions each: those to the east were for RML guns while those to the west were for QF guns. All the positions survive relatively intact with the racers and pivots in place. The QF position has a low concrete parapet and a freestanding recess to the rear. Also to the rear of this battery is a small shelter or practice magazine which is now in poor condition.

The original access track from the military road can be traced

Condition

Fair. The position appears to be largely complete but it may be suffering from soil erosion from nearby path.

Trend

Stable

Setting

Located on the western side of the Rame peninsula on the upper part of the coastal slope. It is immediately to the west of Whitsand Bay Battery. Its setting has been impacted by the close proximity of the caravan park.

Threats

Deterioration/ in need of management – there is erosion located to the east of the battery due to walkers

Vandalism.

Decay of fabric – slow decay.

Ownership

Private Company. Whitsand Bay Fort Holiday Park Ltd.

Occupancy

Unoccupied.

Current use(s)

Located at the western edge of Whitsand Bay Fort Holiday Park.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Whitesand Bay Practice Battery survives well; the gun positions survive intact and it is from a significant period in the development of the country's defence which is under represented in statutory designations. The racer rails and pivots of the RML positions remain intact and some of the the mounting plates of the QF positions.

The battery is therefore of considerable evidential value in the potential it holds for study and historical illustrative value. It is also of group value with Whitesand Bay Battery, and both have communal value as they are easily visible especially to those walking the south-west coast path.

References

PF website

Googlemaps 2016

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Renney Point Battery (OA24)

County	Devon
District	South Hams
Parish	Wembury
NGR	SX 494 489
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437399
HER#	MDV13723
Heritage status	Grade II Listed (list entry number: 1270701)
Recommendations	Ensure that the open setting looking out to sea facing the west and south of the battery survives.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Associated with Penlee Battery on the west side of the Sound to protect the seaward approach to Plymouth. Renney Point Battery is part of the Staddon Heights group of defences.

Brief History

Renney Battery (or Renney Point Battery) was constructed in 1905-6 and by 1907 it was armed with three 9.2-inch BL guns. It is located on the east (Devon) side of the Sound and together with the contemporary Penlee Battery on the west (Cornwall) side they were intended to protect the approach to Plymouth and prevent even the largest modern battleships coming within range of the dockyard.

The battery's armament was progressively modernised including the installation of 35 degree mountings in 1939-1941 giving the guns a range of 35,000 yards. Also during this period the battery was armed with two 60-pdr guns, one mobile 6-pdr, two Bofors anti-aircraft guns and two spigot mortars.

Outline Description

All three 9.2-inch concrete gun emplacements survive complete, together with three underground magazines, storerooms and shelters located between or behind the emplacements. One emplacement shows modifications for a 1947 hydraulic mounting and all three have blast protection wall, built in 1941, with rifle slits to their rear. Rails to gun mountings survive and steps to sunken magazine entrances. Iron door and fittings.

The north blockhouse also survives.

Condition

Good.

The three 9.2-inch gun emplacements survive relatively complete.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The battery remains in a relatively open setting with the land immediately to the south and west as far as the cliffs being undeveloped.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Potential development – aerial photographs from 2011 show that the area adjacent to the site has been developed for private housing, there may be more development in the future (Stephen Johnson 2011)

Ownership

Private ownership.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

On private land.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is Grade II Listed.

Renney Point Battery survives relatively complete. Penlee Battery on the west side of the Sound has been infilled which increases the significance of Renney Battery.

The site is of evidential value, through the potential it holds for future research and an historical illustrative value in demonstrating the rapid development of guns in the early 20th century.

The list description states: 'Together with the Renney Battery it exemplifies the recent advances made in form and design made in order to counter the battleships and cruisers of the immediate pre-Dreadnought era; the lighter and quicker-firing 6-inch guns were designed to deal with the smaller and faster warships which might have evaded the 9.2-inch batteries of the Renney Battery'

References

PF website

Stephen Johnson photographs 2011

Flicker website

National Heritage List

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Mount Wise Redoubt (OA25)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 45501 54081
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437538
HER#	SX45SE/170
Heritage status	Devonport Conservation Area
Recommendations	Ensure that the surviving remains are kept clear of vegetation. Consider enhancements to the interpretation of the site.

Type

Redoubt.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

This site forms part of a group of batteries and gun positions in the Mount Wise area of Devonport covering the immediate approach to the dockyard. Among these are Lower Mount Wise Battery and Mount Wise Battery.

Brief History

Mount Wise Redoubt was originally constructed in the 1770s to cover the approach to the dockyard. It remained part of the defences and was armed in 1850 with three 10-inch guns. In 1885 the redoubt had three 64-pdr RML guns which remained at the site until sometime after 1895. The site also had a telegraph and/or a signal station which was present in 1906 and remained *in situ* until the 1960s when it was demolished to allow the construction of a housing estate (Onslow Court).

The site was excavated by Exeter Archaeology during the 1990s.

Outline Description

The site is now within a public park and the remains of the redoubt are preserved as a low-maintenance heritage feature with simple interpretation. All the buildings were demolished in the 1960s but various features such as racer rails for guns, barrage balloon moorings, ammunition recesses, revetment walls and so forth survive together with ramparts and the glacis.

A tall, modern viewing platform was constructed in the 1990s.

Condition

Fair.

Part of the fort was demolished during the 1960s but substantial remains survive in fair condition.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Mount Wise Redoubt is located on the highest point of Mount Wise, an area overlooking the Hamoaze and immediately to the east of the southern end of Devonport dockyard. The redoubt is now largely surrounded by residential and commercial development.

Threats

Vandalism – the site is within a public park and vandalism is therefore a potential issue.

In need of management – some of the gardens of the residential houses abut the historic walls of the redoubt, unclear who has responsibility for maintenance of the walls

Ownership

Local Council. Plymouth City Council.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Open area that forms part of Mount Wise Park.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Some.

The site has some evidential value, particularly in the buried remains, and some historical illustrative value in illustrating the development of fortifications in the 19th century but the level of survival is not high. The fact that the site is within a public park and will therefore be well known provides it with some communal value.

References

Google Street view 2016

Pastscape

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Devil's Point Battery (OA26)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 45965 53356
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	1429180, 1396134, 1396135
HER#	SX45SE/713/001
Heritage status	Stonehouse Peninsula Conservation Area
Recommendations	Ensure that the position remains clear of vegetation and open to the public. Enhance the interpretation of the position.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Devil's Point Battery operated in partnership with Mount Edgcumbe Garden Battery (OA 18) to the west to protect the Hamoaze (the narrow entrance to the Rover Tamar from Plymouth Sound). The battery is part of the Plymouth Inner Defences group.

Brief History

Devil's Point is an area within Plymouth's inner defences which has had various early defences including a blockhouse and an early 18th century battery. The position in this report (Devil's Point Battery B) is located immediately to the rear of these and it was constructed between 1901 and 1902. This replaced a previous position on the site which had been armed in 1885 with three 3-pdr QF guns but which had been dismantled in the 1890s and the guns moved to the Garden Battery.

The 1901-2 battery was armed with two 12-pdr QF guns and the emplacement was also provided with a telephone room, coal store, latrines at ground floor and shelters, magazines and stores below. It is known that the guns were in place in 1908 but only one remained in 1918 and they had both been dismounted by 1936. In 1941 the battery buildings were used by troops manning the boom defence.

Outline Description

The site is now within a public park and the site has been preserved as a 'low-maintenance heritage feature'. The below ground elements have been infilled and the buildings which were at the surface have been demolished but the two gun positions survive at the surface with the concrete aprons, retaining wall and one steel mounting plate.

Condition

Fair at ground level. Although the underground parts of the battery have been filled in and the rear buildings demolished.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on a small terrace at the western edge of a peninsular to the south west of Plymouth overlooking the narrow gap of the Hamoaze. The setting of the fort has been impacted by residential and commercial development.

Threats

In need of management – the site is not statutorily protected.

Vandalism – the area is open so there is the threat of vandalism.

Ownership

Government Agency. The site is owned by the MOD but managed by Plymouth City Council.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Open land within a public park

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Some.

Devil's Point Battery is relatively late in date (early 20th century) and it has been substantially altered.

The fact that the site is publicly accessible (in a public park) enhances its significance and gives it some illustrative value and communal value. The below-ground elements of the site have been infilled and these buried remains give the site some evidential value.

References

PF website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Plymouth City Council 2009 'Devil's Point County Wildlife Site Management Statement'

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Agaton Fort (OA27)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 45549 59581
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437452
HER#	SX45NE/071
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002613: Agaton fort (*sic)*
Recommendations	Conservation Statement to ensure the owners/occupiers appreciate the heritage significance of the site.

Type

Land fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

This battery forms part of the group of land defences to the north-east of Plymouth established as a result of the 1860 Royal Commission to defend Devonport Dockyard and other military establishments. The line of batteries and forts stretches from Ernesettle by the Tamar in the west to Efford by the River Plym in the east. Other structures in the group include Ernersette Fort, Knowles Battery, Woodland Fort, Crownhill Fort, Bowden Fort, Egg Buckland Keep, Forder Battery, Austin Fort and Laira Battery.

Agaton is located slightly forward of Ernersettle and Knowle Batteries and commanding their glacis slopes. It is also connected to them by a defended military road.

Brief History

Agaton Fort was constructed on the recommendations of the 1860 Royal Commission. Construction commenced in 1863 and was completed in *c* 1870/1. It was intended to have 20 guns in open battery, with one in Haxo casemate.

It had been partly armed by 1885 with three 7-inch RBLs and these had been augmented by 1893 but it was disarmed shortly after this. It is believed to have formed part of the General Line of Defence during the First and Second World Wars and during the Second World War it also acted as the main Royal Army Service Corps Depot for the south-west.

The fort was disposed of by the MOD in 1958 and it became an HGV test centre. It is still used by the Dept of Transport as a vehicle test station.

Outline Description

Agaton is a small five-side polygonal fort with surrounding ditch, cut into the rock, and gorge wall. The gorge is defended by musketry loops in parapet and casemates while the ditch is defended by one single caponier, one double caponier and a counter-scarp gallery.

The interior of the fort has been largely flattened and covered with tarmac for the vehicle testing station but various buildings survive including an officers quarters, cookhouse and store, casemated barracks.

There are seven concrete gun emplacements on the ramparts from the 1885-93 phase and an earlier Haxo casemate on the west flank. Five of the original seven expense magazines also survive.

There were originally tunnels leading from the parade ground to mortar batteries at the foot of the exterior slope of the east and north-west salient but these have now been blocked. Similar tunnels also formerly led to the north-west and east caponiers and the counter-scarp gallery.

The ditch is heavily overgrown and some rubbish has been dumped in it.

Condition

Fair. Poor in places.

The interior of the fort is largely infilled and the ditch is overgrown. The centre of the fort is covered in tarmac for the testing centre. The historic buildings to the south side have been blocked up and are deteriorating. The site is classed as fair condition on the Heritage at Risk Register 2015 due to dry rot and vegetation management.

Trend

Declining.

The most recent Heritage at Risk Register places Agaton in priority category: C 'Slow decay; no solution agreed'.

Setting

Stituated to the north west of the city of Plymouth. Located on a hill overlooking the Tamerton Lake. The fort is surrounded by modern development.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Decay of fabric – dry rot noted on the Heritage at Risk Register 2015

In need of management – the fort contains several buildings on the south side which may be deteriorating (Google Street View 2016)

Ownership

Government Agency. Driver and Vehicle Standards Agency (DVSA)

Occupancy

Occupied.

Current use(s)

DVSA Driving Centre within the parade ground and overground embankments.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Agaton Fort is a Scheduled Monument, as such it is of considerable significance. It has an evidential value in the potential it holds for the further investigation of its buried and surface remains. There has been some impacted to the fort through its use as a driving test centre, but elements of the fort survive well. The setting of the fort has been impacted by modern development.

The fort is of group value with the group of land defences to the north-east of Plymouth established as a result of the Royal Commission. Agaton Fort is of historical value, as it had a long history of use through the First and Second World Wars. It is also of communal value to those that use the fort as a test centre.

References

PF website

Google Street View 2016

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Bowden Battery (OA28)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 4963 5832
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437453
HER#	SX45NE/074
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1021365: Bowden Battery
Recommendations	Any proposals for the garden centre should appreciate the heritage significance of the fort, for example by concentrating development in less significant areas. Any future developments should maintain the open nature of the battery.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

This battery forms part of the group of land defences to the north-east of Plymouth established in the 1860s. The line of batteries and forts stretches from Ernesettle by the Tamar in the west to Efford by the River Plym in the east. Other structures in the group include Agaton Fort, Knowles Battery, Woodland Fort, Crownhill Fort, Ernesettle, Egg Buckland Keep, Forder Battery, Austin Fort and Laira Battery.

Brief History

Bowden Fort (or Battery) was constructed as a result of the 1860 Royal Commission and it was intended to help defend Devonport Dockyard and other military establishments around Plymouth.

It was designed by Capt du Cane and was constructed between 1863 and 1868/9. Similarly to many of the other forts in this group it was armed slowly. Proposals for the armament had been prepared by 1875 but by 1885 no guns had yet been mounted. By 1893 two 7-inch RBL guns had been mounted on the ramparts together with four 64-pdr RML guns. The guardroom and mortar battery remained unarmed.

The site has housed a garden centre since it was disposed of by the MOD in 1963.

Outline Description

The battery is a polygonal land fort and it covers Forder Valley as well as the north face of Forder Battery and the rear side of Crownhill Fort. It has rock-cut ditches to the north-west, north-east and east (with musketry galleries) but the original gorge ditch has been infilled and is a car park.

It has a surviving bomb-proof, defensible, two-storey guardroom on the south side with magazine and barracks accommodation for 16 men. The lower level of the guardroom is below current ground level and has two embrasures, two small musketry caponiers and an ammunition lift to the rear. The upper level has a similar plan.

The battery was constructed with four bomb-proof expense magazines and each of these survive although two have lost their protective earth mound.

Approximately half of the original earth ramparts survive (to the east half) but those in the west half have been levelled.

Condition

Fair. Poor in places.

As indicated above many of the primary features survive but parts of the ramparts have been levelled and other features infilled.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on an east-west ridge of high ground to the north of Plymouth. It is on the south side of Forder Valley and connected to Eggbuckland Keep, Crownhill Fort and Forder Battery by a military road. The fort is within a densely developed area, although there is open ground to the north of the fort.

Threats

In need of management – the site faces the potential threat of incremental alteration through the use of the garden centre.

Development proposal – a major development (Seaton Neighbourhood) is being undertaken in the vicinity of Bowden Battery involving the establishment of a new urban area on the north edge of Plymouth. Outline planning permission was granted some years ago for the development but in October 2014 English Heritage expressed concern that the more detailed landscaping plans being prepared would have a detrimental impact on the setting of, and views from, Bowden Battery. It is not known whether these parts of the development have been carried out but they represent a potential threat to the battery.

Ownership

Plymouth Garden Centre.

Occupancy

Occupied.

Current use(s)

Used by Plymouth Garden Centre.

Development proposals

There are no developments currently being considered for Bowden Fort (none listed on planning portal) although in 2009 a short Conservation Management Plan was prepared by the Garden Centre in preparation for a number of works which were anticipated over the coming years to update the garden centre and place it on a stronger footing commercially.

As referred to above, a major development (Seaton Neighbourhood) is being undertaken in the vicinity and in October 2014 English Heritage expressed concern that the landscaping plans of the development would have a detrimental impact on the setting of, and views from, Bowden Battery.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The site is a Scheduled Monument, as such it is of considerable significance.

Bowden Battery has evidential value and potential for future investigation. This is both in the visible, above ground remains and in the potential buried features which may have been covered over in recent decades (such as the drawbridge).

The north-eastern part of the site is particularly well preserved and the most significant features are concentrated here. The site has communal value as it is publicly accessible (as a garden centre), and group value as one of the land defences built around Plymouth following the recommendations of the Royal Commission.

References

PF website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Bowden Battery: Conservation Management Plan

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Brownhill Battery (OA29)

County	Devon
District	South Hams
Parish	Wembury
NGR	SX 494 510
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437638
HER#	MDV17378
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002585: Staddon Heights Defences including Fort Staddon Fort, Brownhill Battery, Watch House Battery, Staddon Heights Battery, Staddon Battery and associated features and structures
Recommendations	The above ground remains are in urgent need of consolidation and repairs. The sites is currently under investigation, due to dumping and moving of earth. Consideration should be given to whether this site should be on the HAR Register.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Located 500m south west of Staddon Fort and part of a complex including Staddon Fort, Watch House Battery, Staddon Heights Battery, Staddon Battery and Fort Bovisand which is currently scheduled separately.

Brief History

The first proposals for a redoubt in this location were made by Jervois in 1858 and then this was developed into a formal recommendation by the 1859-60 Royal Commission on the Defence of the United Kingdom. Together with Staddon Fort its function was to prevent an enemy landing and gaining access to the heights. In particular, it was to cover the ground in front of the main Staddon Lines.

Brownhill was to have 20 guns and accommodation for 200 men. The main structure was completed by 1867 but the work to install the guns followed slowly. Reports from 1875 and 1885 provided recommendations for guns but it was only in a report of 1893 that we know that it had been armed (with six 8-inch RML howitzers). A further report confirms that these were still mounted in 1903 together with two 40-pdr RML guns. The guns were probably dismounted shortly after and the position was disused by the First World War.

It is known that in 1879 gun-cotton for use in submarine mines was stored in the battery.

Outline Description

A half-moon wing battery with a bank and ditch running around the north, east and south sides, and a masonry wall along the west side, positioned on a top of sloping ground.

The site is enclosed to the north, east and south by a five-sided earthwork rampart, fronted by a small ditch and an open area beyond to the east, serving

as a glacis. Beyond the glacis is the 1860s ditch leading north to Fort Staddon. The west side of the battery is enclosed by an embankment of the military road and a gorge wall with gun loops. The rampart contains a number of gun positions. There is a least one magazine surviving intact on the rampart, to the north-east. There is also understood to be a larger magazine, with a cartridge store and shell-store with a davit above in the south west corner. The south corner appears to retain an intact observation post. Attached to the north end of the gorge wall, by a gap in the road embankment, is a rubble stone and brick structure forming an outshut facing east. This is probably a former guard house, and has a later low wall yard, constructed of breeze block. An area within the northern part of the battery interior has been used as a riding paddock which has involved the creation of low earthwork bank and some scarping to the rampart in this area. The remains of other structures and concrete bases within the battery enclosure date from the Second World War and later. To the north, a gap in the rampart leads to a Second World War radar installation, the survival of which is uncertain due to the overgrown scrub.

Condition

Poor.

The south west wall appears extant but the fort is overgrown and the centre has been used as a farming waste site with heaps of waste material piled up.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located on the Bovisand/ Staddon Heights peninsular overlooking Plymouth Sound. The fort retains its setting, as is largely surrounded by open fields, it is set back inland from the coastline.

Threats

Deterioration/in need of management. – the condition of the battery will deteriorate further in its current use as a waste site.

Vandalism – the site appears to be open, and there has been issues with dumping and earth moving on site.

Ownership

Private.

Occupancy

Unoccupied

Current use(s)

Used as agricultural waste site.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The site is part of a Scheduled Monument, as such it is of considerable significance.

Brownhill Battery has an evidential value, in both standing and buried remains, with the potential to help us understand more of 19th-century fortifications.

The significance of the battery is considerably enhanced by its group value with the other installations and the fact that it forms part of a well preserved integrated military landscape. The historical significance of the site is also enhanced by the fact that the overall area remained in military use until the end of the Second World War (although Brownhill itself did not) with many adaptations.

References

PF website

Google Maps 2016

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

HE website

Bashford, D (Historic England) pers comm November 2017

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Crownhill Fort (OA30)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 487 592
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437449
HER#	SX45NE/056
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1020571: Crownhill Fort
Recommendations	None

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Crownhill Fort frms part of Plymouth's north-eastern defences constructed on the recommendation of the 1860 Royal Commission. Crownhill was the key fort of this group and was set slightly in front of the main defensive line.

Brief History

Crownhill Fort was constructed as a result of Lord Palmerston's 1860 Royal Commission on the Defence of the United Kingdom. It was designed in 1863 by Captain du Cane to form the principal land fort of Plymouth's NE defences and construction was completed in 1872 (Pye andWoodward).

The fort was originally designed for 32 guns on the ramparts and six mortars with casemated barracks for 300 men. The armament of the fort was then updated in 1875 (and later).

During the First World War it was used as a recruitment and transport centre and then during the Second World War anti-aircraft guns were positioned here. In the second half of the century it remained as a military base until 1987 when it was acquired by the Landmark Trust and was subsequently restored. It now houses several small businesses, event spaces, a museum and a holiday let.

Outline Description

Crownhill Fort is a typical large polygonal fort with a deep dry ditch formed in the natural rock and six, three storey caponiers (5 single and one double caponier). Each of its seven sides has massive ramparts and it has fixed armament on six sides.

The third floor of the caponiers connects to a Chemin de Ronde, a parapeted and loopholed walkway which circles the fort. An unusual feature of interest is a counter-mining gallery opposite the double caponier on the north side. Pye and Woodward report that this is the only known extant example in Britain.

Crownhill now has a fine collection of artillery, many kept in working order, brought to the site from elsewhere.

There are various buildings within the fort, many of which are constructed with ashlar masonry (including officers quarters) and some of which are earth-covered bomb proof structures (for example Guard Room).

Condition

Fair.

Generally satisfactory but with significant localised problems. Crownhill Fort was entered onto the register this year but a planned section 17 agreement for work on the copaniers due to take place this year, should see the fort come off the register again next year (Bashford pers comm 2017)

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located on Crownhill on the north side of Plymouth. It is surrounded by development which has impacted the setting of the fortification.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Development.

Ownership

Mixed multiple owners.

Charity.The Landmark Trust.

Occupancy

Occupied.

Current use(s)

Site open to visitors one day a month during the summer, used as holiday lets, a wedding venue, conference centre, corporate event hire and some areas of the site rented out as commercial work places.

Development proposals

There are continued restoration and maintenance by The Landmark Trust.

16/00938/FUL and 16/00939/ADV – two linked planning applications were registered on 18 May 2016 for the Officers Quarters at Crownhill Fort but no details are visible on the planning portal and each is marked 'not yet validated'.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The site is a Scheduled Monument.

Crownhill Fort is of clear evidential value, it has been sympathetically restored and survives well. It has two Moncrieff Pits (with one replica gun in working order) and an unusual counter-mining gallery opposite the double caponier on the north side. Historically, the fort played a key role as it was set slightly

in front of the defensive line, and has group value as part of the north-eastern defences built as a result of the Royal Commission. It continued in use through both World Wars and has a long period of history and use.

The fort is of considerable communal value as it is open to the public and is accessibly commercial for holidays lettings and event hire.

References

Landmark Trust – Crownhill Fort website

PF website

Pye and Woodward 2006

Bashford, D (Historic England) pers comm November 2017

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Drakes Island (OA31)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 469 528
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437587
HER#	Multiple HER numbers
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1010910: The coastal fortifications of Drake's Island Grade II Listed Barracks (1067138), Guardhouse (1067140), Commanding Officers House (1067139) and Ablution Block (1067137)
Recommendations	Continue to attempt to find a viable new use for the site.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Drakes Island formed part of Plymouth's inner defences and therefore has some association with many defences around the Sound.

Brief History

Drake's Island is located at the centre of the Sound, covering the immediate approaches to Plymouth, the dockyard and the anchorages and its location meant that it held a key role in the local defences from the mid-16th century until the end of the Second World War. Minor enhancements were made in the first half of the 19th century, including the construction of new barracks, but major works were made as a result of Palmerston's Royal Commission of 1860.

A new battery with casemated positions for twenty one 9-inch 12-ton guns had been constructed by 1867 (albeit with guns and shields not yet *in situ*) to the designs of Major Porter. In 1868-9 five more en-barbette emplacements were added on top of the island (known as the main or upper battery) to accommodate the heaviest RML guns. Separate magazines were constructed for these emplacements. Also in this period the earlier battery in the western part of the island was remodelled and extended.

Between the mid 1890s and 1903 the heavy RML guns were replaced by six new 12-pdr QF guns and three 6-pdr BL guns. Also in this period three search lights were added on the south side of the island. This would have illuminated the area for a new 6-inch BL gun battery which was constructed in 1901 to replace a set of the older heavy guns.

The batteries remained in use during the First World War but the armament was reduced afterwards. The 6-inch battery remained in use during the Second World War and the more general coordination of the defence of the Sound was also undertaken from the island. Two minefield control posts were added at the east end of the island and in 1942 two twin 6-pdr QF guns were also installed. The 6-inch BL battery was disbanded in 1947 and then from 1956, when coastal defence was abandoned, the island was used for training. In 1963 it was

leased to the National Trust who (with others) operated the site as an adventure centre. This use continued until 1989, although the lease was subsequently taken on by Plymouth City Council.

Outline Description

Drakes Island retains numerous structures and defences dating from the 19th and early 20th century including four gun batteries. The main structure from this period is a casemated 21-gun battery at the eastern end of the island with brick vaults and granite embrasures. This was constructed in the 1860s and despite minor alterations it remains largely complete.

The main (upper) battery is at the east end of the island and the underground structures remain in good condition. This position had five enbarbette emplacements. The lower battery is at the west end of the island although this has been partly removed by secondary alterations, including the construction of the western QF battery. Two emplacements from this QF battery survive intact.

At the east end of the island there remains a QF battery in generally good condition with three gun emplacements constructed in 1900-1. It was constructed directly above the 1860s casemated battery. At the centre of the island is a south facing 6-inch BL battery which was also constructed at the turn of the 20th century and also in good condition.

Condition

Poor.

Classed as poor condition on the Heritage at Risk Register 2015. The register gives the priority rating as 'Slow decay; solution agreed but not yet implemented'. The fortification is given a priority level as A within the battlefields and wreck sites register which states 'No action/ strategy identified or agreed (where trend is declining or unknown').

Trend

Declining (slow).

Setting

A fortified island is located on the western side of Plymouth Sound. It is a small undeveloped island.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Development proposal – in recent years there have been several development proposal and planning applications for a hotel development on the island and although this is supported in principle by Historic England, it still constitutes a threat.

Deterioration/ in need of management – slow decay through disuse. Until a new use is found for the site its condition will continue to slowly deteriorate.

Ownership

Private company. Rotolok Holdings, owner Dan McCauley.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Unused, derelict.

Development proposals

In 2003, 2013 and 2014 plans were put forward by Rotolok Holdings (owner Dan McCauley) for a boutique hotel, bar and restaurant on Drake's Island complete with a Helipad (BBC, 2014).

A formal planning application for the hotel development was submitted in 2012 but this was refused (in 2013). Further amended plans for the development were then submitted in January 2014 (refs 14/00001/FUL, 14/00002/LBC) but these were also refused in March 2016. The entry on the Heritage at Risk register states that Historic England supported in principle the 2014 proposals.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fortifications on Drakes Island are a Scheduled Monument.

The Scheduled Monument describes the significance of the site: 'The considerable diversity in military architecture on the island and its longevity of use provides important information on the technological development of coastal artillery in works from the medieval period to more recent times. As such, the monument demonstrates a very complete record of a major defensive fortification in all its phases'.

References

BBC website, 2014

Lacey Hickie and Caley Ltd, 2012, Drake's Island, Design and Access Statement,

PF website

VF website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Egg Buckland Keep (OA32)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 49966 58109
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	438450
HER#	SX45NE/355
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1020543: Eggbuckland Keep Grade II*
Recommendations	Maintain vegetation and ensure that any future developments are fully informed by the heritage significance of the keep.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

This battery forms part of the group of land defences to the north-east of Plymouth established in the 1860s.The line of batteries and forts stretches from Ernesettle by the Tamar in the west to Efford by the River Plym in the east.

Within this group Egg Buckland Keep is particularly associated with Forder Battery (OA 28) Fort Austin (OA 100) and Bowden Battery (OA 20), because it was to form the barracks and main magazine for each of these sites. Egg Buckland Keep and Forder Battery were connected via a tunnel which is extant but now blocked.

Brief History

Egg Buckland Keep was constructed as part of the major improvement to the country's defences following the 1860 publication of Lord Palmerston's Royal Commission on the defence of the United Kingdom. It was constructed between 1863 and 1872 to the designs of Capt du Cane and it was intended to be one of four keeps (or fortified barracks) constructed within the group of defences to the NE of the city. It was the only one of the four to be completed. It has been described by Ian Hogg as “the last building ever erected in England to be officially termed as a 'keep'”

It was intended to accommodate 230 men and to provide magazine storage for the associated batteries.

No guns had been mounted in 1885 but by 1893 three 0.45-in machine guns had been installed.

In the Second World War the Anti-aircraft gun operations room was stationed here for a period before being transferred to Crownhill in 1948. The keep was released by the military in 1947.

Outline Description

Egg Buckland Keep is a large five-sided, two storey, defensible barracks constructed in a rock-cut depression and surrounded by a dry ditch and glacis.

The ditch is defended by four single storey caponiers at corners and the roof of the keep is covered in a thick earth covering formed into ramparts. Magazines were located beneath earthwork traverses at each end of the gorge.

The interior of the keep has a similar layout on each floor with rooms arranged either side of a central corridor. The barrack accommodation is on the outer side with store rooms on the inner side. The level of survival of primary fittings is unknown. Spiral stairs allow access to the roof.

To the north of the keep is a *c* 350mlong tunnel which leads to Forder Battery and which was ventilated by shafts.

Condition

Fair. The owner undertakes maintenance of the keep.

In the HAR survey the condition of the archaeology of the site was assessed as 'generally satisfactory but with significant localised problems'. The trend was given as unknown. The fortification is given a priority level as A within the battlefields and wreck sites register which states 'No action/ strategy identified or agreed (where trend is declining or unknown').

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

Located on an east – west ridge of high ground top the north of Plymouth. It stands to the east of Bowden Fort and to the west of Austin. It is within an area of dense development.

Threats

The keep is in a highly developed area, there is a potential future threat from development.

Ownership

Private (A Whiteway Wilkinson).

Occupancy

Occupied.

Current use(s)

Used by the owner (A Whiteway Wilkinson) as a builder's merchants with areas used as storage.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

Egg Buckland Keep is a Scheduled Monument and its overall form appears to survive relatively close to that in the original layout. The interest of the site is enhanced by the fact that this was the only one of four proposed keeps to be

constructed in this area, and it has been described as the last 'keep' to be built in Britain.

The keep also has evidential and historical value in the potential its surviving fabric holds for future investigation, as well as historical illustrative value in demonstrating the nature of fortification design in the 1860s. It had a long period of use into the Second World War, enhancing its historic interest and value. Egg Buckland Keep is also of group value with the other land defences to the north-east of Plymouth, and it has strong associations with Forder Battery, Fort Austin and Bowden Battery.

References

PF website

VF website

Polyolbion website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Ernesettle Battery (OA33)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 448 592
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437511
HER#	SX45NW/512
Heritage status	Scheduled Ancient Monument 1003193: Ernesettle Battery
Recommendations	Assess condition of monument, particularly of the more vulnerable elements (for example buildings).

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

This battery forms part of the group of land defences to the north-east of Plymouth established in the 1860s. The line of batteries and forts stretches from Ernesettle by the Tamar in the west to Efford by the River Plym in the east. Other structures in the group include Agaton Fort, Knowles Battery, Woodland Fort, Crownhill Fort, Bowden Fort, Egg Buckland Keep, Forder Battery, Austin Fort and Laira Battery

Brief History

Ernesettle Battery was constructed as a result of the 1860 Royal Commission and it was intended to help defend Devonport Dockyard and other military establishments. It was completed in 1868 as a casemated barrack for 60 men and its intended armament was 15 guns mounted in open batteries and 6 mortars under bomb-proof arches on the west side.

The fort's intended armament was partly installed and it was in place in 1893 but it then appears to have been disarmed shortly after.

The site may have been used as an observation post during the Second World War, as part of the General Line of Defence for Plymouth and it is known to have had a Lewis/ Bren gun on top of the barracks.

By 1974 it was in use as a naval ammunition store and it remains MOD property today (albeit apparently derelict) as part of a naval depot site.

Outline Description

Ernesettle is a five-sided polygonal land fort with deep ditches on four sides, excavated from solid rock, covered by musketry galleries.

The main entrance to the south-east side is of ashlar and immediately inside is a late 19th-century artillery store. Other buildings include the casemated barracks block beneath the SE corner of the terreplein as well as a cook house and armoury to the east of this. There is also a casemated mortar battery in front of the barracks although others have been infilled.

A large glacis survives to the north as well as concrete positions for five guns mounted on the ramparts, separated by three bomb-proof expense magazines.

Condition

Fair. Overgrown but largely intact, some elements are infilled.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located above the Tamar on an east – west ridge of high ground top the north west of Plymouth. It is located on a spur between two small tributary valleys and it dominates the valley to the west. The immediate setting of the battery is within open fields, but the surrounding wider landscape has been developed.

Threats

Deterioration/ in need of management.

Decay of fabric – gradual erosion of fabric from disuse.

Ownership

Government Agency. MOD.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Disused, part of the wider Defence Munitions Centre (RNAD Ernesettle).

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Ernesettle Battery is a Scheduled Ancient Monument, as such it is of considerable significance.

Ernesettle Battery is of considerable evidential because despite some subsequent re-use resulting in slight damage to the gun positions and some deterioration to the ramparts as a result of scrub growth, the Royal Commission fortification survives well. It is of historical value as a limited number of important sites built specifically for the protection of Britain during a time of perceived threat. As a rare example of such a strategy this fort which is the westernmost in Plymouth is of strategic military, naval, historical, social and political significance. The site also has a group value with the surviving land defences to the north-east of Plymouth, and with other Royal Commission forts nationally.

The fort has limited communal value, but remains of aesthetic value as an impressive structure in the landscape, and an important symbol of the strategic defence of the area.

References

PF website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

HE website

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Forder Battery (OA34)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 5017 5817
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	438451
HER#	SX55NW/035
Heritage status	No designation
Recommendations	Establish whether any visible remains survive.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

This battery forms part of the group of land defences to the north-east of Plymouth established in the 1860s. The line of batteries and forts stretches from Ernesettle by the Tamar in the west to Efford by the River Plym in the east. This is particularly associated with

Egg Buckland Keep (OA 26), Bowden Battery (OA 20) and Fort Austin (OA 100). Egg Buckland Keep and Forder Battery were connected via a tunnel which is extant but now blocked.

Brief History

Forder Battery was constructed as a result of the 1860 Royal Commission and it was intended to help defend Devonport Dockyard and other military establishments. It was designed by Capt du Cane and was constructed between 1863 and 1871.

It was a relatively simple position intended for 16 guns in an open battery with five traverses containing expense magazines but without gatehouse, main magazine or gorge wall.

The position remained unarmed in 1885 (although there were unmounted guns at the battery) but by 1893 four 64-pdr RML guns were mounted on the ramparts together with one 7-inch RBL gun. Two 32-pdr SBBL guns had also been installed in the counterscarp gallery.

The site was disposed of by the military in 1900.

Outline Description

Forder Battery was a five-side earthwork just below Egg Buckland Keep but little now survives at the surface. The western part of the parade is now under a housing development. Part of the rest of the site is now under a BT transmitter station (YFOR Forder Battery).

The Palmerston Forts Society Fort Log, written in 1998 and apparently before the construction of the transmitter station, states that 'all the expense magazines survive together with three of the 64-pdr RML gun emplacements.

The scarp of the ditch to the front of the battery survives but the counterscarp has been removed and the ditch filled'.

Condition

Poor. Above ground elements of the battery have been largely destroyed by a transmitter station and a housing estate.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on an east – west ridge of high ground top the north of Plymouth. It is on a spur between Bowden Battery and Fort Austin, *c* 400m below Egg Buckland Keep. The battery is in a wooded area now largely surrounded by development.

Threats

None identified.

Ownership

Part occupied.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

The western end is now part of a housing estate and the eastern side is used as a BT transmitter station (YFOR) Forder Battery.

Development proposals

No outstanding applications listed on planning portal website.

Summary of Significance

Some.

The site retains some evidential value through the potential buried archaeology below the housing estate and transmitter station.The previous loss of much of the site has greatly diminished the heritage significance of the site.

References

PF website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Fort Efford (OA35)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 51359 56600
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	438453
HER#	SX55NW/030
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1021135: Efford Fort and Efford Emplacement
Recommendations	The site is in urgent need of remedial works, vegetation clearance and overall management of the scheduled remains. It is on the HAR register as category 'A'.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

This fort forms part of the group of land defences to the north-east of Plymouth established in the 1860s. The line of batteries and forts stretches from Ernesettle by the Tamar in the west to Efford by the River Plym in the east. It is particularly associated with Laira battery (*c* 250m to the SSE) which is a supporting position.

Brief History

Fort Efford was constructed as a result of the 1860 Royal Commission and it was intended to help defend Devonport Dockyard and other military establishments. It was designed by Capt du Cane and was constructed between 1865 and 1868.

The original design was for 21 guns located on the terreplein, three of which were to be in Haxo casemates connected by lifts to basement magazines.

The armament of this fort appears to have been slightly more advanced than most of the other positions in this group. Proposals for the armament had been prepared by (or in) 1875 and by 1885 a single 7-inch RBL gun had been mounted in the Haxo casemate on the SE face as well as five others in the casemates within the slope below. By 1893 the fort's armament had been considerably enhanced by the mounting of a further three 7-inch RML guns and three 64-pdr RML guns on the rampart facestogether with two 5-inch guns on disappearing mountings at the E and NE corners. The fort was probably disarmed shortly after this date.

In the Second World War the site was used for ammunition storage and in 1961 it was passed to Plymouth City Council. Much of the site has been used by the Showmen's Guild for many years for accommodation and storage.

Outline Description

Fort Efford is an irregular polygonal work with rock-cut ditches to the E and NE sides and to the gorge. There is a steep scarp to the north but this may be close to the steep natural slope in this area.

The entrance has been partly demolished but to the south-west side there is a fortified guardhouse which defends the gorge. On the south flank there is a battery with five gun casemates separated by expense magazines.

At the southern corner there is a caponier covering the ditch while on the ramparts are six open concrete gun positions dating from the 1880s phase of armament. There are also three original Haxo casemates from the 1860s construction (to S, SE and E faces) above magazines. One of these positions was altered in the 1880s phase and another one blocked.

The central traverse of the fort houses five barrack casemates and beneath the NE end of the traverse is the main magazine. There are also further extensive barracks and casemates beneath the ramparts which would have provided accommodation and facilities for the 108 men and 5 officers.

Condition

Very bad.

The 2015 Heritage at Risk Register 2015 assessed its priority rating as A (immediate risk of further rapid deterioration or loss of fabric; no solution agreed).

Many parts of the site are overgrown..

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located on a steep hill to the east of Plymouth. It is at the east end of this section of defences. The fort is within an area of woodland, immediately surrounded by dense development.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Deterioration/ in need of management and decay of fabric – immediate threat of further deterioration of the site through structural problems and damp penetration as noted in the HAR Register 2015.

Ownership

Mixed multiple owners.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Site appears to be used as a mixture of housing, caravans and possible industrial/ commercial estate (Google Maps 2016). Part of the site is being used by the Showmen's Guild of Great Britain as a storage site.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Forder Battery is a Scheduled Monument, as such it is of considerable significance.

The battery has considerable evidential value in the potential it holds for future investigation. This includes both the standing and buried remains. One area of particular interest is the fact that the armament of this fort in the 1880s appears to have been more of a priority than for most of the other positions in this group on the north-east side of Plymouth. This gives it an historical illustrative value. The battery is also of group value with the surviving north-east land defences in Plymouth.

References

PF website

VF website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Knowles Battery (OA36)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 463 596
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437451
HER#	SX45NE/072
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002614: Knowle Battery (sic)
Recommendations	Initial remedial works to remove this site from the HAR register have been undertaken but further work is necessary, particularly to find a new use for the structure.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Knowles (or Knowle) battery forms part of the group of land defences to the north-east of Plymouth established in the 1860s. The line of batteries and forts stretches from Ernesettle by the Tamar in the west to Efford by the River Plym in the east. Other structures in the group include Agaton Fort, Ernesettle, Woodland Fort, Crownhill Fort, Bowden Fort, Egg Buckland Keep, Forder Battery, Austin Fort and Laira Battery.

Brief History

The battery was established as a result of the 1860 Royal Commission to defend Devonport Dockyard and other military establishments. It was designed by Capt du Cane and constructed between 1863 and 1869.

It was intended to have 13 guns in open battery, as well as one in Haxo casemate, with three expense magazines in traverses and a reserve magazine in the guard house. The guard house has loop holes in each side to flank a gorge wall. By 1893 two 7-inch RBL guns had been installed as well as three 64-pdr RML guns but it was disarmed shortly afterwards.

In the Second World War the site was used as a barrage balloon base.

In the 1950s a school was constructed within the battery and this is understood to have caused considerable damage to the historic structure (discussed further below). The school has recently (2015) been demolished and replaced by a new school to the west.

Outline Description

The construction of the school in the 1950s greatly altered the site and involved the demolition of various elements. Only one of the 64-pdr gun emplacements survives (that at the NE salient); the other positions and magazines all having been removed or covered. The surviving position has been enhanced with a new parapet and concrete surround.

The two storey guardhouse and the eastern gorge wall survive, albeit with modifications such as the conversion of the lower windows to doorways,

to allow for the adjacent sports field. The rooms in this structure were also converted to changing rooms and showers, involving various alterations.

As part of the construction of the school the gatehouse was demolished together with the western flank of the gorge wall and the western wall of the battery. The area to the south of the battery was also landscaped, thus altering the setting of the site.

The rear of the rampart only survives at the NE corner and the west side while the front is wooded. The ditch to the north has been infilled and its counterscarp removed or lowered.

Although the new school is outside the footprint of the historic battery the car park and outdoor games area remain within the battery.

Archaeological investigations related to the new school have confirmed that the foundations of the western flank of the gorge wall survive.

Condition

Poor.

Knowle Battery is on the HAR Register and is recorded as having 'Extensive significant problems', but that it is improving. The priority level as recorded on the HAR register of the battlefields and wreck sites register is level C 'No action/ strategy agreed but not yet implemented'.

As outlined above the battery was much altered and partly demolished during the construction of the school in the 1950s. The guardhouse survives to the south east of the fort and one of the 64-pdr emplacements.

There has however been considerable work in the past year as a result of development and regeneration. The former primary school within the parade ground of the battery has been demolished and replaced by games courts. The gatehouse has been re-conditioned both inside and out in an Historic England funded Heritage at Risk initiative aimed at removing it from the Buildings at Risk register and finding a new beneficial use for the building (Dr J Salvatore, pers comm, August 2017)

Trend

Improving

Setting

Located on a ridge of high ground to the north west of Plymouth. It is located between Agaton and Woodland Forts. Today the battery is situated within a densely populated area and in close proximity to a primary school.

Threats

Vandalism.

Decay of fabric – resulting from water ingress due to removal of the rampart.

Deterioration/ in need of management.

Works are current being undertaken at the site and further works may be required to provide services (water and electricity) as well as interior fittings in the future (Evans, A pers comm 2016).

Ownership

Local Authority. Plymouth City Council

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Partly within the grounds of Knowle Primary School.

Development proposals

Some level of development works are anticipated to provide services (water and electricity) and internal fittings although this will depend on the structure's future use. No applications are listed on planning portal website.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Knowles Battery is a Scheduled Monument as such it is of considerable significance, however its heritage significance has been compromised by the demolition or modification of many elements in the 1950s. The site has an evidential value particularly the potential buried elements. Historically, the site is of group value with the Royal Commission land defences to the north-east of Plymouth. Knowles Battery has the potential to be of communal value to those that attend Knowle Primary School, as it lies partly within its grounds.

References

Evans, Annie, 2016, pers comms, Heritage at Risk Architect Historic England

PF website

VF website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Dr J Salvatore, Plymouth County Council, pers comm, August 2017

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Laira Battery and Laira Emplacement (OA37)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 51469 56285
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	438454 (battery), 1024182 (emplacement)
HER#	SX55NW/031, SX55NW/056
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1021134: Laira Battery, Scheduled Monument 1020686: Laira Emplacement, immediately south west of Laira Battery
Recommendations	Any further development at these sites should be informed by a full understanding of the heritage significance of the site.

Type

Battery

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Laira Battery and Emplacement forms the south-east end of the group of land defences to the north-east of Plymouth established in the 1860s. The line of batteries and forts stretches from Ernesettle by the Tamar in the west to Efford by the River Plym in the east. It forms an integrated set of defences with Fort Efford *c* 250m to the north/ north-east, as well as Deer Park Emplacement and Efford Emplacement.

Brief History

Laira Battery was constructed as a result of the 1860 Royal Commission and it was intended to help defend Devonport Dockyard and other military establishments. It was designed by Capt du Cane and was constructed between 1863 and 1871. The position was intended to have 10 guns in embrasures and three in Haxo casemates

By 1885 three 7-inch RBL guns had been mounted in the triple Haxo casemates and by 1893 these had been supplemented by a further two 64-pdr RML guns. The position was probably disarmed shortly afterwards.

In 1869 designs were prepared for an enhancement of local defences with the Laira Emplacement, *c* 250m to the west/ south-west of the main Laira battery. It was designed for six guns and by 1893 it housed four 8-inch howitzers. It was probably disarmed shortly afterwards and was disposed of by the military in 1961 together with the main battery.

Outline Description

Laira Battery is a five sided polygonal work surrounded by a ditch (to north and north-east) which has been infilled and by a steep rock scarp to the east and south-east. The site has been considerably altered but it still retains a number of its 19th-century features including the triple Haxo casemate on the SW face with expense magazines and the main magazine formed from three casemated chambers. A lamp passage also survives to the rear of this.

Further casemates which formed the barracks accommodation also lie beneath the north-east and south-east ramparts. The gorge, is covered by simple loopholed wall and it could be covered by Efford Fort. The gatehouse has been demolished and the north rampart has been levelled.

The site appears to have housed light industrial units (plant hire and so forth) for many years with containers/machines/vehicles parked in the parade ground or on the levelled ramparts. Modern buildings have been located on the parade and some of the older fort casemates have been reused.

The Laira Emplacement is an earthwork battery with two main faces (to the east and south), each above an expense magazine and chamber. There is a terreplein behind. Little is now visible at ground level of the gun positions or embrasures although below-ground elements survive (albeit in poor condition).

Condition

Poor.

Part derelict, part demolished or levelled and parts heavily overgrown.

The condition of the main battery (archaeology) is listed on the Heritage at Risk Survey as being 'generally satisfactory but with significant localised problems' (trend improving) while the condition of the Laira Emplacement was classed as 'generally unsatisfactory with major localised problems (trend declining).

The priority level as recorded on the HAR register of the battlefields and wreck sites register is level B 'Action/ strategy agreed but not yet implemented'.

Laira Battery is the subject of a Section 17 agreement, that should see a significant improvement to the site's condition (Bashford, D pers comm November 2017).

Trend

Stable?

Setting

Located on a ridge of high ground to the east of Plymouth. It overlooks the Plym Valley and the main road to Plymouth from the east.

Threats

Potential future threat from development due to varied use of site.

Deterioration/ in need of management – the site appears likely

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Ownership

Private.

Occupancy

Occupied.

Current use(s)

Used for various light industrial purposes apparently including a car repair yard (BCH Auto Services), a scrap metal merchants (Mr Metals Ltd) and a firework store (Fort Fireworks).

Development proposals

No outstanding applications listed on planning portal website. In 2013 permission was granted to Mr Metals Ltd for the storage and sorting of non-ferrous metals at the site within industrial premises.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Laira battery and emplacement are Scheduled Monuments, as such the site is of considerable significance.

The sites have been considerably altered with the loss of various primary elements, but they retain evidential and historical illustrative value. They also have group value with the surviving Royal Commission sites built to the north-east of Plymouth. The aesthetic and communal value of the site has been diminished but the loss of elements of the battery and emplacement.

References

PF website

VF website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Bashford, D (Historic England) pers comm November 2017

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Lord Howard's Battery (OA38)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 4912 5239
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	1396380
HER#	SX45SE/465
Heritage status	Non designated. In 2014 it was considered for designation along with the much wider Staddon Heights group but it was decided not to designate it.
Recommendations	Ensure that vegetation remains cleared from the aprons and that the blockhouse remains in use.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Lord Howard's Battery forms part of the Staddon Heights group of defences to the south-east of Plymouth. It lies at the foot of the glacis of Stamford Fort.

Brief History

A battery in this location was first recommended in 1905 and it was constructed by 1909 with armaments added by 1910. Its function was to cover the merchant ship anchorage in Jennycliff Bay and the approach to the Sound and the dockyard. These guns superseded the function of the function of the guns on the SW side of Stamford Fort.

The emplacement was armed with two 6-inch BL guns. A concrete blockhouse was constructed to the rear of the position. This was either original or represents and early addition.

Pye and Woodward record that the guns were dismounted in 1916 but that they did appear to have been *in situ* in 1920 and 1927. The PFS Fort log states that in 1918 they were 'mounted in reserve' (manned under local arrangement) so it may be that their status was downgraded in 1916. They were removed by 1936 but in 1941 they were remounted and manned by 71 Coast Training Regiment from Fort Staddon. The guns were removed for the last time in 1946.

Outline Description

The battery has now been largely infilled and forms a maintained area of coastal parkland immediately in front of the Jennycliff Cafe. Other than the blockhouse (which is adjacent to the modern café and is used for storage) the other historic buildings have been demolished but the concrete aprons for the former guns are kept visible as a feature at the surface.

The blockhouse is a single storey, rectangular plan, concrete structure with a six-sided rear (north-east) wall.

The below-ground elements such as gun pits, mountings and magazines probably survive buried beneath the surface.

Condition

Fair.

The concrete aprons and the parapet walls are visible but the rest of the battery has been buried. The blockhouse survives and is understood to be in use as a store.

Trend

Stable

Setting

Located on the western side of the Tunrchapel peninsular overlooking Plymouth Sound. The position is at the base of the glacis of Stamford Fort. Lord Howard's Battery is situated on the coast, just off the south-west coastal path.

Threats

Coastal erosion – the battery remains are located next to the South-west Coast Path so there may be minor erosion from foot traffic. However, the more vulnerable parts of the battery have already been demolished (for example the buildings) or preserved *in situ* through being infilled (below-ground elements), so the site is now relatively stable and without significant threats.

Ownership

Local Council. Plymouth City Council.

Occupancy

Unoccupied.

Current use(s)

Part of Jennycliff wildlife park, managed by Plymouth City Council.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Some.

Lord Howard's Battery retains an evidential value, particularly through the potential that the buried remains have for future investigation. It also has an historical illustrative value in being able to demonstrate elements of defence in the very early 20th century, and it has a communal value, enhanced by the fact that it is in a publicly accessible area of coastal parkland.

In 2014 it was considered for statutory designation as part of the wider assessment of the Staddon Heights group. The designation decision concluded that 'Although Lord Howard Battery is of some historic interest as a military structure and as part of the extensive Staddon Heights defences, and has clear local interest, changes have compromised its character and appearance

to the extent that it lacks the level survival necessary to demonstrate national importance'.

References

PF website

VF website

Historic England Designation Decision Reference Number: 1419453

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Plymouth Breakwater Fort (OA39)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 4716 5048
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437589
HER#	SX45SE/020
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002623: Breakwater fort (sic)
Recommendations	Survey of interior fixtures and fittings before degradation?

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The Breakwater Fort can be seen to have a particular association with Forts Picklecombe and Bovisand with the three sites working together to cover the entrance to the Sound. The Breakwater Fort is mid placed between the other two.

Brief History

The Breakwater Fort was constructed during the 1860s on the recommendation of Lord Palmerston's Royal Commission to protect the entrance to the Sound and the anchorage behind the early 19th century breakwater. Construction commenced in 1861 to the designs by Capt Siborne and the foundation was complete by 1865. The original plans were altered and as constructed the fort was a structure on two levels with 18 casemated guns on the upper level and stores/magazines below. The guns were protected by iron shields.

The fort had been fully armed by 1880 with fourteen 12-inch RML guns to cover the sea and the sides and four 10-inch guns to cover the anchorage behind. By 1893 seven of the larger guns had been replaced by four 6-pdr QF guns. In the early 20th century a searchlight was installed on the roof and another was added in 1911. These lights remained operational during the First World War and the site operated as a Port War Signal Station although the fort itself had been disarmed. In 1936 anti-aircraft guns were installed on the roof and the fort became an AA training school while after the war it operated as a Naval signal station.

The site was released by the MOD in 1976 and it had some reuse (for example as storage for a diving centre) but it was then taken back by the military in the 1990s.

Outline Description

The fort is an oval-plan structure of iron framed concrete set on a massive foundation (*c* 10m below sea level) constructed on a shallow area within

Plymouth Sound called Shovel Rock. This is towards the centre of the Sound and the fort is *c* 90 metres to the north of the long breakwater. The fort is *c* 48m long by 38m wide with a central courtyard.

The structure comprises two tiers: the 18 guns would have been in a long ring around the structure on the upper tier and the stores/magazines on the lower. Each level is protected by teak and iron armour sandwiched together and the iron walls of the casements are up to 1m thick. The exterior of the fort was originally painted in a black and yellow chequered pattern to disguise the position of the gun ports and some of the original paintwork survives.

Spiral staircases at each end (only one of which survives) provided access to the lower level.

The lower level was much altered when it was partly infilled to provide greater protection against shells and diesel engines survive in this area from when they generated electricity for the searchlights. Parts of the central coal storage bunker and water tank are now flooded.

Many internal fittings survive such as cartridge lifts, iron hose brackets and wooden shell shoes, gun pivots, rings and traversing rails.

Condition

Fair.

The main structure is likely to be in good condition but the fort is believed to be largely derelict and surviving fixtures and fittings are likely to be in poor condition.

Trend

Stable/ Declining.

Setting

Breakbank Fort is located just behind (to the north of) the long, early 19th century Breakwater which forms an east to west barrier across Plymouth Sound. It is *c* 3 km distant (to the south) of the the Hoe and therefore does not have a strong visual relationship with the city.

Threats

Decay of fabric – the fort contains extensive iron shielding which is deteriorating from sea air as seen in photos from Plymouth Herald 2015;

Potential vandalism – although the fort is very difficult to access it is understood to be largely unmanned and therefore open to vandalism.

Ownership

Government Agency. MOD.

Occupancy

Largely vacant. The fort appears to have some limited use by the Royal Navy for monitoring wind speeds, checking bouys and so forth (Plymouth Herald) but this only seems to involve intermittent visits.

Current use(s)

Mainly disused, although security is monitored by the MOD.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The battery is a Scheduled Monument.

The overall form of Plymouth Breakwater Fort survives close to its original and it retains many historic features which provide it with evidential value and historical illustrative value.

The illustrative value relates to both the development of fortifications in the later 19th century but also more generally to Victorian engineering. This is a unique monument being located behind the breakwater and not actually forming part of it. It is actually founded on Shovel Rock and is of particular importance because it had specific design, engineering and logistic requirements.

It's association with the 'Palmerston Forts' also gives it an historical associative value.

Although the fort is more distant from Plymouth than the similar Spitbank Fort is from Portsmouth it does still forms a dramatic feature within the Sound and this gives it some aesthetic value.

References

PF website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Plymouthherald website

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Staddon Fort (OA40)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 497 517
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437585
HER#	Sx45SE/042
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002585: Staddon Heights Defences including Fort Staddon Fort, Brownhill Battery, Watch House Battery, Staddon Heights Battery, Staddon Battery and associated features and structures
Recommendations	Confirm the condition of the site and the level of survival of historic features, particularly the caponiers.

NB – old legacy record

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Staddon Fort has an association with all the fortifications in the Staddon Heights group as together they form an integrated defence against land and sea attack. These include Fort Bovisand, Staddon Point Battery, Watch House Battery, Brownhill Battery, Lord Howard's Battery and Stamford Fort.

Brief History

Staddon Fort is the principal land fort in the Staddon Heights group. Proposals for a fort in this location were initially made in 1858 by Jervois and then slightly amended plans by made by Capt du Cane were prepared following the recommendation of the 1860 Royal Commission. Construction began in 1861 and the fort was complete (other than its guns) in 1869.

In 1875 the fort's proposed armament was impressive: twenty five 7-inch RBL guns, two 64-pdr RML guns, four 8-inch RML howitzers and thirty SB flank guns.

However, by 1885 only two guns (7-inch RBLs) had been mounted and the proposed armament was much reduced from a decade earlier. The plans at this time did however include two 7-inch RBL guns on Moncrieff mountings on the ramparts. By 1893 several more guns had been mounted but by 1903 there were only two 40-pdr guns and one 16-pdr RML gun (and two unidentified guns). The fort was probably disarmed soon after this.

Outline Description

Staddon is a polygonal land fort with four faces to the eastern side and a gorge to the west which projects to the centre to enclose an inner parade. This projection was intended to house a keep but the fort's plans were amended during construction to replace this keep with conventional barracks. The military road leads to a gateway at the centre of this western projection.

The four faces to the east side are all flanked by a ditch which is covered by two single and one double caponier. Pye and Woodward's survey states 'of particular importance is the survival of the caponiers complete with floors, gun tackle, stoves, musketry racks, coat-hooks and original glazing and also embrasure shutters in some cases'.

A covered way extends along the two main eastern faces of the fort and there is an extensive glacis to the north, as well as to east and south. There are nine open gun emplacements on the ramparts of the large outer (eastern) parade including two Moncrieff pits at the salients. Also on the ramparts are six Haxo casemates and three expense magazines.

Beneath the main traverse lies the main magazine and casemated barracks while other barracks are located in the South and east flanks of the outer parade.

Condition

Good. Pye and Woodward's survey of all the defences around Plymouth (published in 1996) described the fort's condition as 'excellent' and as it has remained a secure MOD site since then it is likely that it has only seen a gradual decline since then. The PFS Fort Log from 2000 also described the condition as excellent.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on Staddon Heights, an area of high ground between Mount Batten and Bovisand on the eastern side of Plymouth Sound. The fort retains its setting within the MOD comlex.

Threats

Deterioration/ in need of management – gradual decay from disuse is likely.

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Ownership

Government Agency. MOD (Navy).

Occupancy

Although the MOD occupy the site much of the fort appears disused.

Current use(s)

Largely disused but used by the Navy for communications, the fort contains two transmitters/receivers for this purpose.

Development proposals

No outstanding applications listed on planning portal website. The portal lists various applications from *c* 1980 to *c* 2010 for new transmitters and antennae.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Stamford Fort is part of a Scheduled Monument.

Staddon Fort is thought to be of considerable evidential value, although information about the current condition and level of preservation is limited it appears to survive very well, particularly the caponiers with many historic features intact.

The site has an historical illustrative value, demonstrating the evolution of fortification and armament design in the later 19th century. The fort has strong group value with the other elements of the Stamford Heights Defences, all of which are included in the Scheduled Monument description. The fort is part of an MOD complex, and inaccessibly to most, and is therefore of limited communal value.

References

PF website

VF website

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Fort Bovisand and Staddon Point Battery (OA41)

County	Devon
District	South Hams
Parish	Wembury
NGR	SX 4879 5071
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	1396425, 437584
HER#	MDV99998, MDV48776, MDV17323, MDV39601
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002584: Fort Bovisand (this includes Staddon Point Battery) Fort Bovisand Grade II* Listed 1379615 (list entry number), Staddon Point Battery Grade II Listed 1379617 (list entry number)
Recommendations	Ensure that the heritage significance of Fort Bovisand is fully understood and considered during the proposed development of the site.

Type

Battery. Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Adjacent to the Scheduled Monument 1002585: Staddon Heights Defences including Fort Staddon Fort, Brownhill Battery, Watch House Battery, Staddon Heights Battery, Staddon Battery and associated features and structures.

Bovisand also has an association with Picklecombe Fort because the two structures were matching fortifications either side of the entrance to the Sound (one in Cornwall, one in Devon).

Brief History

Fort Bovisand was built between 1861 and 1869 as a result of the 1860 Royal Commission and it was one of two low level batteries built to protect the entrance to the Sound: the other being Picklecombe Fort in Cornwall. This fort was to replace Staddon Point Battery A, slightly above Bovisand, which had been constructed in the 1840s also to guard the mouth of the Sound.

The original proposal for Bovisand was for a two storey structure with two tiers of guns but this was amended in 1864, after the foundations and basement were largely complete, for a single storey battery to house the larger RML guns then being developed.

The new design was for 23 casemated guns with magazines accommodated in the basement below.

Unlike many of the fortifications constructed in this period Bovisand was rapidly armed with twenty-two 9-inch RML guns and one 10-inch RML gun. By 1880 this had been changed to nine 9-inch RML guns and fourteen 10-inch RML guns.

The original armament of RML was removed between 1895 and 1903, and the function of the fort was superceded by a new emplacement at a higher level known as Staddon Point B. This position, constructed in 1898-9 was for four 12-pdr QF guns and their magazines constructed within the ditch of the 1840s battery. Between 1903 and 1908 this battery was enhanced and added to.

During the Second World War the fort was used as an anti-motor torpedo boat battery and was once more armed with an array of artillery, successively replaced. Searchlights and an observation post were installed and remained in use until after the war, parts of which remain. The fort was re-used as a range finder and target store until it was decommissioned in 1956.

Several secondary gun emplacements were added to the roof including Bovisand Battery B in the 1880s and Fort Bovisand Battery C during the Second World War.

Outline Description

Fort Bovisand is a dramatic curved structure wrapping around the southern end of the peninsula and overlooking the sound. It comprises 23 casemates, set above a lower magazine level, with granite ashlar faces and brick interior. Each casemate has a segmental-arched rounded surrounds framing an iron shield to its seaward side

Staddon Point Battery A survives largely complete and comprises three levels. The works at the end of the 19th century to form Staddon Point Battery B involved some alteration to the terreplein.

Condition

Poor.

The HAR Register 2015 records its priority category as 'C: slow decay; no solution agreed'

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on the Staddon Point promontory overlooking Bovisand Bay and Plymouth Sound. The site retains its coastal setting.

Threats

Deterioration/ in need of management – poor condition of interiors and deteriorating further.

Decay of fabric.

Coastal erosion – in 2013 a landslide at Fort Bovisand caused the MOD to vacate the site as the access road was closed to heavy goods vehicles (Plymouth Herald 2013)

Development proposal – due to be developed into housing and a visitor centre, the housing development will involve rebuilding towers of Fort Bovisand and Staddon Point Battery to create 30 flats (Plymouth Herald 2015)

Ownership

Private ownership. Fort Bovisand Trust and leased to Bovisand Development Limited, owned by Greg Dyke.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Part of the Fort Bovisand site is used by a diving centre called Discovery Dives.

Development proposals

A £14 million development (part funded by HLF) is proposed by Fort Bovisand Development Limited to develop the site into housing and as a visitor attraction. The housing development will replace the current accommodation and rebuilding of the towers of Fort Bovisand and Staddon Point Battery will create 30 apartments (Plymouth Herald website 2015).

The Fort Bovisand Trust Website states that plans have been submitted by ADP Architects and construction works are due to commence in 2016. However, there appear to be no formal applications relating to this work listed on the planning portal website.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

Fort Bovisand is Grade II* Listed and Staddon Point Battery is Grade II Listed and both are part of a Scheduled Monument.

Fort Bovisand has a dramatic aesthetic value from its curved form and cliff foot location. It also has an historical illustrative value in showing the development of coastal defence towards the end of the 19th century. It has good evidential value in its potential for future investigation, and its near complete survival. The site also retains many internal features.

Fort Bovisand is one of the most complete surviving examples of this rare and important monument class, which was constantly changing to reflect perceived threats and technological advances. The site retains many internal features.

References

PF website

plymouthherald website

VF website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Fortbovisandtrust website

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Stamford Fort (OA42)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 493 527
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437586
HER#	SX45SE/016
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002544: Fort Stamford
Recommendations	Ensure that the significance of the site is fully considered in any future planning applications. The site is in the HAR register and requires work to ensure its preservation.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Stamford Fort is a key element of the mid-19th century fortifications constructed to defend Staddon Heights. Stamford Fort and Staddon Fort (OA 42) were connected via an embankment and a military road.

Brief History

Stamford Fort, located on the site of a 17th-century Civil War fortification, was constructed in the 1860s as part of the works to defend the high ground on Staddon Heights overlooking the Sound. It was not initially proposed by the 1859-60 Royal Commission on the Defence of the United Kingdom but it was added to the scheme later in 1860 (then known as Fort Turnchapel).

Originally the design of the fort included a keep but this was never built. When building work started is not known but it was completed in around 1869 with casemated accommodation for 200 men and officers.

By 1880 two 10-inch RML guns had been mounted on the SW side facing the sea and by 1885 they had been augmented by a 7-inch RBL gun on a moncrief (disappearing) carriage at the SE salient. By 1893 five 64-pdr RML guns had also been mounted. In 1903 there were four 40-pdr RBL guns and four 8-inch howitzers. The fort was probably disarmed shortly after this but it remained with the military until its disposal in 1963.

Outline Description

The fort survives as a polygonal work with three landward and one seaward faces and a partly in – filled gorge overlooking the Cattewater. It has an external ditch and many of the original interior buildings, fittings and features remain. The gorge contains bomb-proof casemented barracks and the main magazine at its western end. The central traverse contains the stores and in the eastern parade is a much altered gun shed. The gorge scarp is impressive with an imposing gateway flanked by thirteen sets of barrack casements on two floors; each casement has a double window.

The main magazine retains many original features and served a series of four expense magazines above it which in turn underlie further magazines on the

rampart. The ramparts have ten open gun positions which are separated by up to eight expense magazines. There are probable mortar batteries at the south west and south east corners. The gorge was partly protected by a loop-holed wall along the scarp. The ditches were protected by one double (eight guns) and two single (two and four gun) caponiers all protected by musketry galleries.

Condition

Fair.

Despite some adaptive reuse the fort survives relatively well and retains many original features.The archaeology of the site is listed on the 2016 HAR Register and its condition is listed as: 'Generally unsatisfactory with major localised problems'.

The priority level as recorded on the HAR register of the battlefields and wreck sites register is level B 'Action/ strategy agreed but not yet implemented'.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located on the Turnchapel promontory to the east of Plymouth Sound, to the north side of Staddon Heights. It is situated on a hill overlooking Mountbatten Point, Cattewater, Jennycliffe Bay and across to the northern flank of Staddon Fort. The fort is largely surrounded by development, and its primary context is lost.

Threats

Impacted of incremental change and developmet.

Uncontrolled vegetation – lichen on the external faces of the fort (Google Street View 2011)

Ownership

Private

Occupany

Part occupied.

Current use(s)

Used as a country club and caravan park, the main magazine is a gym and the barrack block is being used as residential flats.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Stamford Fort is a Scheduled Monument, as such it is of considerable significance.

The site has an historical illustrative value in helping to demonstrate the rapid development of guns and military technology in the late 19th and early 20th centuries. The use of the site as a health club provides it with some communal value. Stamford Fort is of evidential value because despite adaptive reuse the fort survives relatively well and retains original features. Stamford Fort is of group value with the fortifications used to protect Stamford Heights.

References

PF website

VF website

National Heritage list.

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Watch House Battery (OA43)

County	Devon
District	South Hams
Parish	Wemby
NGR	SX 48889 50924
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437588
HER#	MDV17324
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002585: Staddon Heights Defences including Fort Staddon Fort, Brownhill Battery, Watch House Battery, Staddon Heights Battery, Staddon Battery and associated features and structures
Recommendations	Survey of the site before further deterioration from vandalism. The site is identified as at the highest category of risk on the HAR register, and requires immediate action to ensure its future preservation.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Associated with and defensive position for the Scheduled Monument 1002584 Fort Bovisand. Also part of a group of defences including Scheduled Monument 1002585: Staddon Heights Defences including Fort Staddon Fort, Brownhill Battery, Watch House Battery, Staddon Heights Battery, Staddon Battery and associated features and structures.

Brief History

The 1859-60 Royal Commission did not propose a battery in this location but it must have been recommended soon after because a redoubt with expense magazine and positions for five guns had been erected here by 1869. It was intended to cover parts of the dry ditch of the integrated network of defences to the east and south. Military surveys of 1875 and 1885 made recommendations for the armament of the battery but it was only in a further report from 1893 that we know that two 64-pdr RML guns had been mounted. These had been removed by 1900. It is known that from *c* 1894 three position finder cells were located in the battery and another cell is believed to have been located to the west of the ditch. These are likely to have served the RML guns at Staddon Heights and Frobisher Batteries but they had fallen out of use by 1903.

Watch House Battery (renamed from Watch House Brake Battery in 1890) was substantially reconstructed between 1901 and 1903 for two 6-inch BL guns to cover the seaward approaches to the Sound. At 352ft above sea level it is the highest battery of this type in the country.

A small blockhouse was added during the First World War and around the same time fences around the battery were erected.

The position remained armed through the First World War, the interwar period and the Second World War but they were dismounted at a time when coastal defence was starting to be seen as obsolete due to nuclear weapons.

The site was leased to a private company until 2009 and it appears that the main structures were relatively well maintained but since becoming vacant their condition has deteriorated sharply.

Outline Description

The visible structures at the battery almost entirely date from the *c* 1901 reconstruction rather than the 1860s redoubt.

Remaining extant structures include emplacements for two 6-inch BL guns, magazines, shelters, a guard-house, artillery store and lamp-room. Outside the perimeter of battery are a direction range-finder to the north, a battery observation post/ range-finder position below the guns, and a position finder cell/ night direction post/ Officer Commanding Electric Lights (OCEL) post below that, on the west edge of the ditch below Watch House. Directly behind the rear entrance to the position finder cell is a tunnel giving access to the upper musketry gallery of the 1860s, which looks down Watch House Brake. Steps from the north lead down to the former covered way (now the South West Coastal Path) linking to the former position finder cells for Staddon Heights Battery, which have a Second World War battle observation post inserted between them.

Condition

Very bad.

The priority rating in the 2015 HAR Register is: 'A: Immediate risk of further rapid deterioration or loss of fabric; no solution agreed'.

The deterioration appears to have been rapid. In 2004 the Palmeston Forts Society noted that the battery and associated buildings were in good condition and in use by a school as holiday accommodation. In 2010 Lamb Phall photographed the buildings and the gun emplacements appeared largely intact with iron shutters on the ammunition stores, however the associated buildings were boarded up and vegetation is event growing over the battery (Derelict Places website 2010).

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located on an earthwork redbout on a high point above Bovisand Bay and with a defensive ditch above Bovisand Fort. Watch House Battery retains its primary coastal setting.

Threats

Vandalism – the site is vulnerable to vandalism.

Decay of fabric – since becoming vacant in 2009 the condition of the structures has deteriorated rapidly.

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Deterioration/ in need of management.

Ownership

Government Agency. MOD

Occupancy

Unoccupied.

Current use(s)

Unused, derelict

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Watch House battery is part of a Scheduled Monument, as such it is of considerable significance.

The buried remains from the earlier redoubt have an evidential value, as do the standing remains from the later battery. The site also has an historical illustrative value in demonstrating the development of gun emplacements in the first half of the 20th century. This historical value is enhanced by the long period of use of the battery, through both World Wars. Watch House Battery has strong group value with those monuments constructed to defend Staddon Heights which are included in the Scheduled Monument.

References

Derelict Places, 2010, Thread: Watch House Battery Plymouth July 2010 (Lamb Phall)

PF website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Woodland Fort (OA44)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 47039 59241
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437450
HER#	SX45NE/073
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002615: Woodland fort (sic)
Recommendations	Although some minor remedial works are due to be undertaken to the masonry of the blockhouse considerable further conservation works will be required. The fort is currently on the HAR register, and is in 'very bad' condition, and although this is improving, the fort requires considerable work to mitigate against threats to the fabric of the fort.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

This fort forms part of the group of land defences to the north-east of Plymouth established in the 1860s. The line of batteries and forts stretches from Ernesettle by the Tamar in the west to Efford by the River Plym in the east. Other structures in the group include Agaton Fort, Ernesettle Fort, Knowles Battery, Crownhill Fort, Bowden Fort, Egg Buckland Keep, Forder Battery, Austin Fort and Laira Battery.

Brief History

Woodland(s) Fort was constructed as a result of the 1859/60 Royal Commission on the Defence of the United Kingdom in order to help defend Devonport Dockyard and other local military installations. It was designed by Capt du Cane and constructed between 1863 and 1869. The fort was intended to mount 18 guns (two in Haxo casemates) with three expense magazines in traverses on the terreplein and also a main magazine. By 1885 a single 7-inch RBL gun had been mounted (on North-west face) and by 1893 there were two other similar guns mounted in the casemates and three 64-pdr RML guns also mounted elsewhere. Similarly to other positions in this group the fort was disarmed soon after 1893. The fort also included a defensible guardhouse and casemated barracks for 100 men.

The fort was used during the First World War to accommodate various units but it was disposed of in 1920. It was used again by the military during the Second World War.

In the later 20th and early 21st century Devon County Council used the barracks as a library and community centre and part of the site was also occupied by the Jubilee Bar. At one time in its recent history the caponier was a youth club and the west part of the parade was a builder's yard. Some remedial repairs have been undertaken and some heavy vegetation has been cleared.

Outline Description

Woodlands is a polygonal fort with rock cut ditches on all sides and a two storey defensible guard house to the south, facing the adjacent military road. Much of the fort is in poor condition due to the site having been little used for many years and suffering from vandalism. The main surviving building, which remains in use, is the barracks range which is on the north side of the parade ground while on the west side of the parade ground is the cook house, although this is disused and in very poor condition. There is a single caponier at the north-western corner, flanking the west ditch, while a double counterscarp gallery flanks the north and east ditches. A tunnel links this counterscarp gallery with the interior of the fort.

The fort has three expense magazines under traverses on the terreplein and also a main magazine at the east end of the barracks range. Other than the barracks the structures are largely disused, overgrown and sealed although some vegetation clearance has been undertaken.

Pye and Woodward (1996) report that the guardhouse retained the drawbridge pulley and chain.

Condition

Very bad.

Woodland Fort is included on the HAR register. The site has been very overgrown and it has suffered from vandalism but it is believed that many of the structures are essentially intact. It has had seen some remedial works. Repair work is due to take place during the summer 2016 but the site needs more conservation work (Evans, 2016).

The priority level as recorded on the HAR register of the battlefields and wreck sites register is level D 'Action/ strategy agreed but not yet implemented'.

Trend

Improving.

Setting

Located on an east-west ridge of high ground to the north of Plymouth. Woodland Fort is situated within a densely developed area, although there is an area of woodland to the rear of the fort.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Vandalism, and anti-social behaviour (drugs).

Deterioration/ in need of management – flooding due to partial blockage of ditch drainage, flooding to gatehouse due to partial burial by the adjacent road.

Decay of fabric – collapsed of the cookhouse. Limited repair work to masory of blockhouse due on site August but considerable further work will be required (Evans, E pers comm 2016).

Ownership

Local Authority. Plymouth City Council

Occupancy

Partly occupied.

Current use(s)

Largely derelict although part of the site (part of barrack block) is used by Woodland Fort Community Centre.

Development proposals

The 2015 Heritage at Risk Register notes that a joint funded study between Historic England and Plymouth City Council is considering conservation and regeneration options for the site There are no recent or outstanding applications listed on planning portal website.

Summary of Significance

Considerable

The fort is part of a Scheduled Monument, as such it is of considerable significance.

Woodland Fort has an evidential value as despite their poor condition many of the structures remain intact and they have the potential to enhance understanding of this fort. The site also has an historical illustrative value as they can illustrate the nature of fortification design from the 1860s. The fort had a long period of use through the First World War and in the later 20th Century for a variety of uses including barracks. Woodland Fort has strong group value with the land defences to the north-east of Plymouth.

Today, part of the fort is occupied by the Woodland Fort Community Centre, it therefore has communal value for those that visit and work at the centre.

References

Evans, Annie, 2016, pers comms, Heritage at Risk Architect, Historic England

PF website

VF website

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Eastern King Redoubts (OA45)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 466 535
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437579 (Eastern King Battery),
HER#	SX45SE/021, SX45SE/257
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002643: Eastern King Battery Stonehouse Peninsula Conservation Area
Recommendations	Building recording.

Type

Redoubt.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

This site forms part of Plymouth's inner defences and it has an association with various fortifications here.

Brief History

The redoubt (or battery) at Eastern King Point has had a complicated history with a series of emplacements constructed here since the late 18th century. The first position here was constructed in 1779 as a result of a fear of a Franco-Spanish attack during the American War of Independence.

In 1844 an Inter-services committee on Harbour Defences recommended three new batteries at Plymouth: at Picklecombe Battery, Staddon Point Battery A and Eastern King Redoubt. The new redoubt at Eastern King was completed in 1849 and its construction removed the earlier position. This battery (named the Prince of Wales Battery) had two casemates with embrasures for eight smooth-bore guns mounted en barbette on the roof above.

Jervois proposed an extension to the redoubt in 1858 and then it was also recommended in the 1860 Royal Commission. The new gun emplacements (four on the E flank and three on the S flank) were constructed in 1861-2 with bomb proof expense magazines and a guardroom. These positions (sometimes known as Eastern King Battery B) had been intended for smooth-bore guns but the rapidly developing technology meant that by 1885 seven RML guns were in place.

In *c* 1899-1900 a new battery (known as Eastern King Battery C) for four QF guns for anti-torpedo boat defence was added to the site and this included three electric searchlights on the shore. By 1908 three of the guns had been mounted and in 1911-2 the fourth was added. Two of the guns were removed by 1920 and the other two by 1930. The searchlights remained operational (one possibly during the Second World War). A light anti-aircraft gun appears to have been mounted here in 1940.

The site remains with the MOD functioning as a saluting battery with four Hotchkiss guns remaining operational.

Outline Description

As outlined above Eastern King Redoubt is a complex site which has evolved in several phases and retains substantial elements from three principal stages: the Prince of Wales Redoubt in the later 1840s, Battery B in the 1860s and Battery C at the turn of the 20th century.

The overall site has a broadly arrow-shaped plan with the 1840s redoubt at the centre and the two flanking elements of Battery B which were added to the sides in the 1860s. The *c* 1900 works comprised upgrading the positions on top of the 1840s structure.

The central block comprises a series of casemates wrapping around the 'point' in front of a two storey keep to the rear. These casemates form a single storey barracks block together with two gun emplacements at the front. The keep, which includes officer's quarters and the main magazine is also within the 1840s structure and it is linked to the barrack casemates and terrepleins above by loop-holed curtain walls and walkways. The terreplein over the casemates has a stone parapet but the embrasures for the eight guns have been blocked and the area was infilled in *c* 1900 as part of the upgrading of the site for QF guns.

The site is entered through a monument gateway in the NE flank, which has an 1849 datestone, and on the south side of the redoubt there is a glacis formed from an old quarry. There are protective dry ditches along the front of the two flanks and musketry caponiers at the inner ends of each ditch.

The overall structure is constructed from limestone ashlar to the exterior and internal brick vaulting. It is in good condition, being actively conserved by the MoD, and it retains numerous internal fixtures and fittings such as tackle loops, a pivot, fireplaces, ventilation louvres, original (1861) flooring and an iron shutter to the lamp window in the small magazine.

Condition

Good.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on the eastern and western end of the Stonehouse peninsula to the south west of Plymouth overlooking Firestone Bay and Plymouth Sound. The fort is in a prominent coastal situation, surrounded to the rear by commercial and residential development.

Threats

The site remains in MOD use as a saluting battery and there are currently no particular threats.

Ownership

Government Agency.The site is owned by the MOD but managed by Plymouth City Council

(Plymouth City Council 2009)

Occupancy

Occupied.

Current use(s)

The site is still in use by the MOD as a naval saluting battery.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional

Eastern Kind Redobuts has an evidential value and an historical illustrative value with remains surviving from many periods. The various 19th century phases of construction are of particular interest with substantial surviving remains from the 1840s battery as well as the later 1860 Royal Commission battery and the 1890s battery.

The Eastern King Battery is a Scheduled Monument.

The scheduled monument description states: 'The battery at Eastern King Point contains many original fittings and features which chart its long and complex development and it survives extremely well. It is still in use as a naval saluting battery, indicating its historical significance'.

It was a relatively advanced fortification because the 1840s battery is the earliest site in the Plymouth defences to have caponiers projecting into the ditch and gun casemates. This enhances the historical value of the site and is rarity. It also had a longer period of use through the First and Second World Wars.

The redoubt is still used today as a functioning saluting battery which enhances its communal value.

References

PF website

Plymouth City Council, 2007, Stonehouse Peninsula Conservation Area Appraisal and Management Plan

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Western Kings Redoubt (or Battery) (OA46)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 461 533
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	437580 (Western King Battery)
HER#	SX45SE/021, SX45SE/257
Heritage status	Stonehouse Peninsula Conservation Area
Recommendations	Ensure that the position remains open to the public. Consider enhancements to the interpretation of the battery.

Type

Battery

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

This forms part of Plymouth's inner defences and is immediately to the east of Devil's Point Battery. It has an association with the battery on Drake's Island as they face each other across (and defend) the same stretch of water.

Brief History

The earliest fortifications at this location were constructed during as a response to fears of French attach during the American War of Independence. A redoubt was constructed here in 1779 and the site is shown as being armed, with various complements of guns, on various maps through the 19th century. In 1861-2 it was substantially overhauled with the demolition of buildings, the levelling of ramparts and the addition of nine further emplacements which are known as Western King Battery A. In 1885 three RML guns were positioned here but they had been removed by 1893 and then in *c* 1897-9 much of the battery was replaced and substantially overlain by a new QF position known as Western King Battery B. This was constructed over the rampart and gun positions of the west flank of the 1860s battery and also over the front faces of the 18th century redoubt. The new battery was armed with seven 12-pdr QF guns and these remained in place in 1910 although by 1920 only four were in position and by 1930 this number was down to two. A searchlight was added by 1936 and during the Second World War they were replaced by two twin 6-pdr QF guns (known as Battery C).

Outline Description

Relatively little is visible above ground from the 1860s Battery A other than the well preserved loopholed walls flanking the battery. These incorporate a gateway and evidence such as windows from demolished buildings.

The *c* 1898 QF battery largely survives at ground level with all seven emplacements intact together with concrete aprons, mounting plates, gun platforms and walkway. The battery has a splayed plan form with one central gun position and three to each side. The area to the rear of the gun positions has been largely infilled and the derricks and guard rails have been lost. There is a stone rubble boundary wall.

The site now appears to be preserved as a low-maintenance heritage feature within a public park.

Condition

Good. This relates to the *c* 1898 QF position which survives well and the surface elements are in good condition. Much less survives of the earlier battery.

Trend

Stable

Setting

This redoubt is located on the western end of the Stonehouse peninsula to the south west of Plymouth overlooking Firestone Bay and Plymouth Sound. It is at a key position within the city's inner defences at the mouth of the Hamoaze and close to the dockyard. It is also immediately to the south of the Royal William Victualling Yard. It has a prominent coastal situation, further inland the surrounding landscape has been developed for commercial and residential use.

Threats

Vandalism.

Ownership

Government Agency. MOD (Plymouth City Council 2009)

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Within open land managed by Plymouth City Council (Plymouth City Council 2007)

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Western Kings Battery is not listed or scheduled. The *c* 1898 battery survives substantially intact and the site also retains elements from earlier batteries. The site has a high evidential value, particularly in the buried remains of the earlier positions. Below ground remains of the 1860s battery are likely to survive beneath the rampart of the QF battery and within the infilled area to the north.

The battery had a long period of use through both World War Worlds, and is therefore of considerable historic value, which is enhanced by its association with the other inner land defences surrounding Plymouth.

References

PF website

Plymouth City Council, 2007, Stonehouse Peninsula Conservation Area Appraisal and Management Plan

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

Fort Austin (OA47)

County	Devon
District	Plymouth
Parish	Plymouth
NGR	SX 5061 5764
Group	Plymouth

PASTSCAPE#	438452
HER#	SX55NW/034
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1021380: Austin Fort and section of military road
Recommendations	Some remedial work is planned for 2017 but considerable further work will be required depending on future use.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

This fort forms part of the group of land defences to the north-east of Plymouth established in the 1860s. The line of batteries and forts stretches from Ernesettle by the Tamar in the west to Efford by the River Plym in the east. It forms part of a particular arrow-shaped group together with Bowden and Forder Batteries and Eggbuckland Keep. It is connected to them (and to the Efford –Laira position) by a military road.

Brief History

Fort Austin was constructed as a result of the 1859-60 Royal Commission on the Defence of the United Kingdom in order to help defend Devonport Dockyard and other military installations around Plymouth. It was designed by Capt du Cane and then constructed between 1863 and 1868. The fort was originally intended to have 15 guns and five mortars with five expense magazines within five traverses. The fort does not appear to have been armed in surveys of 1875 and 1885 (although there were proposals at each date to mount guns and some were unmounted within the fort). By 1893 four 64-pdr RML guns had been mounted but the fort appears to have been disarmed shortly afterwards.

The fort was used during the Second World War by the Devon and Cornwall Auxiliary Unit and it was released by the MOD in 1958. In 1984 the guardhouse was converted into the Plymouth City Emergency Centre for Civil Defence. The most recent use of the rest of the fort was as the City Engineer's Dept and workshops.

Outline Description

Overall, despite some of the ramparts being levelled and parts of the site being reused the form of the fort survives relatively intact. It has four sides with ditches to three sides (largely infilled) and a tall gorge to the front. The gorge was protected by the central guardhouse with two tiers of guns, musketry galleries and accommodation for *c* 60 men. The ditches are covered by casemates located in the counterscarp at the NE and E corners. Tunnels allowed access to the casemates but these are now blocked. The original

drawbridge within the guardhouse no longer survives and the original earth cover to the rear has also been removed. The gorge ditch has been infilled to form a car park.

Four concrete gun emplacements survive on the ramparts (dating from the 1880s works) divided by five primary (1860s) expense magazines. The magazines are all believed to survive although much of their earth covering has been lost.

Condition

Fair. Poor in places.

Altered in parts but largely intact. It is listed on the HAR Register as being in generally satisfactory and stable condition but with some localised problems. Work is planned for 2017 but the site needs more conservation work depending on the future use of the site (Evans 2016).

The priority level as recorded on the HAR register of the battlefields and wreck sites register is level C: 'No Action/ strategy identified or agreed'.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on a ridge of high ground to the north east of Plymouth. It is located on a spur overlooking the Forder Valley and a tributary valley to the south. Fort Austin is situated within a densely populated area, but is surrounded to the rear of the entrance by woodland.

Threats

Vandalism including arson.

Deterioration/ in need of management – water ingress caused by removal of the earth cover on the ramparts and from infilling of the ditch. Some work is planned for 2017 but considerable further work will be depending upon future use (Evans, E pers comm 2016)

Uncontrolled vegetation – the site is thought to be currently unused and vegetation is overgrown on the site (also visible on Google Street view 2012).

Ownership

Council Council. Plymouth City Council

Occupancy

Unoccupied

Current use(s)

Currently thought to be vacant. In 2013 the fort was put up for lease by Plymouth City Council (Plymouth Herald 2013) but in 2015 the fort was still to be leased out (Plymouth Herald 2015).

Development proposals

There are no significant developments proposed.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Fort Austin is a Scheduled Monument, as such it is of considerable significance.

The fort has evidential value in the many surviving features which have the potential to be studied and investigated. The site has historical illustrative value through being able to illustrate the nature of fortification design in the 1860s. The site has a long and interesting period of use, as it was operational in the Second World War and for civil defence during the Cold War.

Fort Austin has limited communal value, as it is inaccessible to most.

References

Evans, Annie, 2016, pers comms, Heritage at Risk Architect Historic England

Google Street view 2012

Plymouth Herald 2013

Westernmorningnews website

Plymouth Herald website 2015

Pye, A and Woodward, F 1996

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Jonathan Gill

OA No.	Fort Name	Significance	Designated	Phase	Condition	HAR Level	Threat
48	East Weare Batteries	B	SM.LB (E only)	3 (RC)	2 & 3	A2	1, 4, 7, 5
49	Portland Breakwater Fort	B	LB	3 (RC)	2	x	1, 3, 4
50	Inner Pier Fort, Portland Breakwater	B	LB	2	1	x	4
51	The Nothe Fort	A	SM.LB.	3 (RC)	1	x	x
52	The Verne Citadel	A	SM. LB.	2	2	D2	3, 8
53	Upton Battery	A	SM.LB.	5	3	A2	3, 4
54	Blacknor Battery	C	x	5	2	x	x
55	Verne High Angle Battery	A	SM.LB.	4	2	D2	2, 3 & 5

East Weare Batteries (OA48)

County Dorset
District Weymouth and Portland
Parish Portland
NGR SY 69400 74100
Group Portland

PASTSCAPE#	451839
HER#	4 001 167, 4 001 168, 4 001 151
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002412: Battery 200yds (180m) E of the Naval cemetery. Battery E is Scheduled and Listed, batteries A to D are undesignated. Grade II Listed 1281863: East Weare Batteries at SY 694 741
Recommendations	The batteries are in a declining condition and require management, key threats are uncontrolled plant growth, vandalism and decay of fabric.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications / Local Group Value

The barrack accommodation for the battery was in the 'Verne Citadel' (OA 54), the Royal Commission considered The Verne and the East Weare Batteries as a whole as the batteries completed the defences of the Citadel on the east side.

Brief History

Constructed between 1862 and 1869, the East Weare batteries were built to complete the defences of the Verne citadel to the west.

It was intended to fit Moncrieff emplacements as flank pieces of each of the batteries but this idea was abandoned. By 1886 the batteries were re-modelled to take C pivot 9-inch RML guns. Behind the batteries were the usual artillery stores, a small redoubt, a resident gunner's house and a self-defensible detention barracks was built above B battery. Shortly afterwards more modifications took place; the two centre gun positions of C Battery were altered to take two 10-inch RML guns on C pivots with sunken way. B Battery was

modified to take two 10-inch RML guns in positions 1 and 2 and the third gun removed. A battery was re-armed with four 10-inch RML guns.

From 1899 to 1901 the final upgrading of the armament installed two 9.2-inch BL guns in A Battery, and three 6-inch BL guns in B Battery. New magazines with lamp room and paint store were constructed and the old main magazine became the sergeant's mess and quarters. A range finding station and Battery Observation Post were placed near to the Detention Barracks.

Movable armament of 40-pdr BL guns were used in practice in 1902. In 1915 the disused D Battery was handed over to the Royal Navy for the storage of explosives in the magazine. By 1917 one 6-inch gun was removed, and the other two followed by 1919.

The pits were roofed over during the Second World War. The 9.2-inch BL guns were still listed as in place in 1943 and they remained until 1956.

Outline Description

The Listed Building description describes the batteries:

'Portland stone, some concrete and iron. Remains of 3 platforms plus magazine. A central magazine with earth-covered revetment has a platform on the axis to the NE, flanked by a platform to each side at 30 degrees; behind the magazine on the main axis is a small single-celled unroofed building. All is sunk into the slopes of The Verne on its N side and with a series of sunken passageways surrounding the central mound. The central platform has a semi-circular end in ashlar to a heavy rounded parapet at ground level; there are 4 vertical embrasures with segmental heads alternating with 5 mid-height square recesses with iron bolts and rings. To each side a straight run of rock-faced masonry wall runs approx. 8m at approx. 2.5m height to a bold weathered coping, and returns at an obtuse angle for approx. 8m at same height, each with a central deep square recess at pavement level. The centre of the emplacement has a raised circular base in stone and concrete, with a central iron pivot or spigot, and a ramp towards the magazine mound. Each of the flanking platforms has a semi-octagonal termination. Each emplacement has a small stone plaque inscribed: LEVEL OF TOP OF RACER ABOVE HWM 216 FT. Axially to the SW is the mound over the magazine, with a small square vent in rock-faced stone. Retaining the mound on the SW side is an ashlar wall approx. 20m long and 4.5m high, raked at either end above paired arched openings with bold rock-faced jambs and voussoirs; openings filled with concrete blockwork. Remains of a square-plan building approx. 4m SW. The battery can be seen from the higher slopes of The Verne and commanded Portland Harbour to its SE.' (Listed Building entry 1281863).

Condition

There are five separate Batteries A-E in a range of conditions from Fair to Poor.

Palmerston Forts Society noted that Batteries A and B were used as target practice by the navy and partly destroyed, C battery is partly eroded. Google

Maps in 2016 shows that A Battery emplacements can be identified, B Battery is overgrown by vegetation, C Battery is heavily eroded and damaged, D cannot be identified.

Battery E is located between battery D and the Royal Naval cemetery to the north west. It is on the HAR register, and described as 'Generally unsatisfactory with major localised problems from scrub/tree growth'.

The priority level as recorded on the HAR register of the battlefields and wreck sites register is level A 'No Action/ strategy identified or agreed'.

Trend

Unknown.

Battery 'E' is noted as 'declining' in the HAR Register.

Setting

Located on the north side of the Isle of Portland, just north east of the Verne Citadel and below the cliff. The batteries are situated within an area of woodland, with Verne prison and housing further inland and the port along the coastline.

Threats

Decay of Fabric – batteries A-D are being used as a DISTEX site (Disaster Relief Exercise) which is likely to be causing damaged to the batteries for example with practice fires (Smith, 2016)

Vandalism (Smith, 2016).

Uncontrolled Plant Growth – Battery E is on the HAR Register and the main threat is listed from tree and scrub growth.

Setting – encroachment of Portland Port on the batteries.

Ownership

Batteries A-C: Commercial Owner

Batteries D–E: Government or Agency

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Part of the site used as a DISTEX site (Disaster Relief Exercise). Batteries A-C Portland Port Ltd, batteries D and E open site.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The batteries are Grade II Listed and Battery E is also a Scheduled Monument.

The batteries are of considerable group value; all five survive and they are closely linked both geographically and historically to the Verne Citadel, including Verne High Angle Battery. The batteries played can be viewed from the high slopes on the Verne. The evidential value of the batteries has however been impacted by decay of fabric, which in some cases is severe. Some fixtures and fittings appear to survive, which enhance the monument's evidential value.

The batteries are of communal value which is intrinsically linked with their visibility and the, ableit restricted, public access to the structures.

References

PF website

Smith 2016

theurbanexplorer website

Compiler

Angela Warner

Portland Breakwater Fort (OA49)

County	Dorset
District	Weymouth and Portland
Parish	Portland
NGR	SY 70773 76223
Group	Portland

PASTSCAPE#	1164872
HER#	4 001 166
Heritage status	Grade II Listed (list entry number 1280475)
Recommendations	Consideration needs to be given to the future use of the site; re-use would help to prevent deterioration from environmental factors and vandalism.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications / Local Group Value

Portland Breakwater Fort is associated with Inner Pier Fort, Portland Breakwater (OA52).

It is one of four Victorian iron forts, the other three being Breakwater Fort in Plymouth, and No Man's Land Fort and Horse Sand Fort in Portsmouth.

The fort is part of a series of defensive structures and installations along the breakwater, which have been added to and reused until the Second World War.

Brief History

Portland Breakwater Fort is also known as Fort Chequers, probably due to its chequer camouflage pattern.

The 1860 Commission called for a large casemated fort on the extremity of Portland Breakwater. The foundation ring was handed to the War Department in 1868 and the eventual design for a one-tiered fort mounting fourteen guns was complete by 1875, and received its armament of 12.5-inch RML guns in 1880.

In 1892 the armament was reported to be seven 12.5-inch RML guns on the seaward side. In 1898, the six 12.5-inch RML guns were supplemented with two 12-pdr QF guns on the roof. In 1907 there were two 12-pdr on the jetty and two 6-inch BL guns which were still on the armament returns of the Second World War. The 12-pdrs. were removed in 1920.

Portland Breakwater Fort was re-commissioned in the Second World War and numerous additional defensive structures added along the breakwater between 1940 and 1941. The fort was handed to the Navy in 1956 until Portland Port was privatised in 1996.

Outline Description

Portland Breakwater fort is one of four iron forts in England. It contains fourteen embrasures constructed on top of sprawls faced with granite masonry.

The Listed Building description contains the following additional information –

'Breakwater fort. c1860, but considerably modified and extended in 1884, 1900, 1912 and later. Portland stone, concrete, armour-plate steel. Locally known as "Palmerston's Folly", this was one of 4 coastal defence forts provided, others being at Plymouth and Spithead. Later armaments added in both World Wars. A small jetty running to the SW is formed over 3 segmental arches with quoins and keystones, approached by a slow – rising long staircase/ramp, left, and a steeper flight of stairs to the right; extends also to left, including unroofed 3-bay stone structure. Main fort includes 35m diameter iron core with foundations c 9m below sea level; a ring of masonry capped with concrete on granite sub-structure c 7m above sea level. The iron structure has 2 rings of iron box girders fanning from central well, forming a floor and a roof level; concave fluted underside sloping to gunports, supported by pillars between casemate ports. Walls are three thicknesses of 15cm plate backed by armour bars; roof also of concrete-capped iron. 14 guns installed 1874-75. In 1884 a steam engine was added to supply ammunition and operate the guns. Upper level altered by installation in 1900 of 2 heavy gun emplacements, and later by substitution of an armoured gun tower for the original lantern. Central well is octagonal faced with ashlar and with Roach stone rustication to each arched entry; spiral cast-iron staircase to upper level.'

Condition

Fair.

The exterior of the fort is in relatively good condition, but the interior is damp with stalagmites and stalactites forming as noted in a visit by the BBC in 2005.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located on the northern end of the easterly breakwater of Portland Harbour and surrounded by water.

Threats

Coastal erosion.

Decay of fabric – the interior of the fort, and particularly any ironwork, will deteriorate through salt water ingress.

Deterioration/in need of management – the fort has some level of protection from vandalism as it is only accessible via boat, however, conversely, this also adds difficulty to maintenance, monitoring and future reuse.

Ownership

Commercial Owner. Portland Port Ltd

Occupancy

Vacant and not in use, other than annual use by an angling society.

Current use(s)

Not in use.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Portland Breakwater Fort is a Grade II Listed Building.

The fort is of clear evidential value as it survives well, and its remote location has resulted in the survival of fittings and features.

Portland Breakwater Fort was the crowning glory of Portland's defences and provides an impressive visual reminder of the strategic importance of Portland. As a group the sea forts are among the most impressive of the coastal defences, they are a visually commanding structures and of clear aesthetic value. The sea forts are an exceptional and innovative feat of engineering, and of evident historic value.

The fort, although near inaccessible, has both aesthetic and communal value as it has been a prominent feature of the defensive landscape of Portland Harbour throughout its history.

References

bbc.co.uk/dorset website.

Smith 2016

VF website

portland-port website

ecastles websites

theurbanexplorer website

Compiler

Angela Warner

Inner Pier Fort, Portland Breakwater (OA50)

County Dorset
District Weymouth and Portland
ParishPortland
NGR SY 7018 7446
Group Portland

PASTSCAPE#	868156, 1425459
HER#	4 001 405, 4001 009A,
Heritage status	The fort is Grade II Listed as part of the inner breakwater on which the fort is situated (list entry number 1203106)
Recommendations	A site visit to assess the survival and threats associated with Inner Pier Fort would be of value.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications / Local Group Value

Portland Breakwater Fort (OA51).

Brief History

Also known as Inner Pierhead Fort.

The construction of the breakwater on which the fort is situated began in 1849 and was completed in 1872. In order to protect the harbour, an array of defences were constructed, one of which was The Inner Pierhead Fort designed and begun in 1859, and completed in 1862.

The basement level held the fort's magazine which largely stored machine gun rounds and shells. In 1892 the battery had eight 64-pdr guns. Two 12-pdr QF guns were installed by 1902 but removed by 1919.

The fort was little-used following the First Word War, but was re-armoured during the Second World War.

The site was privatised in 1996.

Outline Description

The Listed Building description details the breakwater, but mentions the fort only in passing as:

'... Small fort at outer (E) end at the South Ship Channel...'

The building is *c* 30m in diameter and is comprised of a gun floor and basement which contains a magazine. It is built of Portland Stone with internal partitions of brick.

Condition

Good.

Externally, the fort appears to be in good condition, however the internal condition is not known.

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

Located on the eastern edge of the most southerly breakwater of Portland Harbour and surrounded by water.

Threats

Decay of Fabric – the metal structure in the centre of the fort (possibly covering a stairwell) appears to be very rusty and deteriorating. The interior of the fort, and particularly any ironwork, will deteriorate further through salt water ingress.

Ownership

Commercial Owner. Portland Port Ltd

Occupancy

Vacant and not in use.

Current use(s)

Not in use.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Inner Pier ort is a Grade II Listed Building.

It survives well and is of clear evidential value. The fort has both aesthetic and communal value as its coastal position on the breakwater has made it a prominent feature of the defensive landscape of Portland Harbour throughout its history.

References

Smith 2016

Portlandhistory website

Derelictplaces website

Compiler

Angela Warner

The Nothe Fort (OA51)

County	Dorset
District	Weymouth and Portland
Parish	Weymouth
NGR	SY 68706 78735
Group	Portland

PASTSCAPE#	451654
HER#	4 002 455
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1020063: Nothe Fort, tramway and searchlight battery at The Nothe Grade II* Listed (list entry number 1313430) Weymouth Conservation Area Sub-Area of 'Old Weymouth (Harbour South and Hope Square, Chapelhay and The Nothe)'
Recommendations	None

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications / Local Group Value

The fort is situated on the opposite side of the breakwater to the other Portland installations, but is associated with this defences in the protection of the area.

Brief History

Nothe Fort was built between 1860 and 1872 and converted during the 1890s to infantry barracks.

In 1887 the fort was armed with four 9-inch, six 10-inch and two 64-pdr RML guns to cover the land face. The first two casemates from the entrance were used as the guardroom and cookhouse.

The magazines were on the basement level. Seven of the RML guns were replaced with 12.5-inch RML gun in the 1890s.

By 1891 recommendations were made to alter the fort for QF guns on the roof. First two 6-pdr QF guns were installed. In 1902 two 6-inch BL guns were in place and another was added shortly afterwards.

In 1912 the RML guns were removed and broken up. Two searchlights were added, one on each side of the fort.

Between the two world wars one 6-inch BL gun was removed leaving guns 1 and 2 as the Second World War armament. A Battery Observation Post was added on top at the south-west corner with a Watkin DRF. Other weapons were added outside the fort during the Second World War.

After intermittent use during the first half of the 20th century, it closed in 1956 and in 1961 was sold to the Borough Council, after which time it became derelict. During the Cold War Period the fort was used as a nuclear shelter for civil administration. Approximately a third of the magazine level was converted into command and accommodation areas protected by heavy blast doors.

Nothe Fort was restored by the Weymouth Civic Society and other bodies, and is opened to the public.

Outline Description

The Nothe Fort was intended as a casemated battery with open earthen batteries. The earthen batteries were dispensed with leaving a casemated granite fort for ten heavy guns and two lighter ones, protected by iron shields, with two light guns, to protect the entrance to Weymouth Harbour.

The completed fort is roughly shaped like a horse shoe with twenty-six casemates, closed at the rear with a high gorge wall defended by a single caponier at the east end. The entrance is at the extreme west end of the gorge wall and is defended by a machicolation in a small chamber above.

The Listed Building description comprehensively describes the Fort; the following is an extract only –

'Portland ashlar walls, brick vaults, stone, asphalted, or grassed roofs.

PLAN: a demi-lune with straight entrance wall to the west, and a lower contemporary caponier on the south-west corner. The main entrance has a further entrance gateway and tunnel approx 32m to its west. A series of 22 casemates at the upper courtyard level, with 12 original gunports, is set above a continuous circuit of magazines and stores. The parapet carries 3 later 6-inch gun emplacements, one with gun in situ, and various later additions, including a Bofors repeater and a Second World War observation post (south-west corner).

Condition

Good.

The fort has been restored by Weymouth Civic Society.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The fort is located on the eastern edge of the promontory to the south of Weymouth Harbour. It is surrounded by sea to the north, east and south, other than a pier to the north east. To the west, inland, are public gardens. The fort retains is primary setting.

Threats

None identified.

Ownership

Local Authority.

Owned by Weymouth and Portland Borough Council and leased to Weymouth Civic Society.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Visitor attraction. The site is open to the public.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is part of a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II* Listed.

Nothe Fort has been restored and survives well in its primary setting. It has clear evidential and aesthetic value, enhanced by the display of original cannon and guns, although, inevitably, some of the artefacts have been obtained from other sources. It is now open as a museum and has communal value as a community and educational resource, to understand the defence history of the locality.

Nothe Fort is one of the best preserved of all examples built between 1860-70. The survival of the tramway and searchlight battery further enhance the context and value of the fortification.

Historically, the fort has a comparatively long period of use from its construction through both World Wars and into the Cold War. The fort's use as a Cold War nuclear shelter is an uncommon secondary use, and further enhances its historic value.

This value is supported by the survival of documentary sources, including many photographs dated 1865 at Chatham showing the fort under construction by the Royal Engineers.

References

PF website

nothefort website

HE website

Compiler

Angela Warner

The Verne Citadel (OA52)

County	Dorset
District	Weymouth and Portland
Parish	Portland
NGR	SY 69326 73534
Group	Portland

PASTSCAPE#	451838
HER#	4 001 167, 4 001 124
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002411: The Verne Citadel Grade II* – The Citadel South Entrance 1203116, The Citadel North Entrance 1206120, The Citadel South West and South East Casemates 1203117, Grade II – Railings At Approach to the Citadel North Entrance 1206113, the Blacksmith's Shop 1280366, the Chapel 1280372, Officer's Block B 1203118, Gymnasium 1280377, the Governor's House 1281832
Recommendations	Verne Citadel is of exceptional significance, and its continued use requires monitoring to ensure the preservation of the buildings and area.

Type

Fortress.

Associated Fortifications / Local Group Value

The East Weare Batteries (OA50) completed the defences to the east of the Citadel, which also provided the barracks for the same batteries. The Verne High Angle Battery is associated historically and geographically with the Citadel.

Brief History

Located on the highest point of Portland, Verne Hill, Verne Citadel sits in a commanding position overlooking Portland Harbour, which it was built to defend. The site included a casemated barracks, redoubt and open batteries. The Verne was to accommodate enough troops to defend Portland's military and naval establishments and was intended to be a siege fortress impregnable to attack and able to prevent an enemy from capturing the harbour of Portland. It also supplied accommodation for the gun detachments required to man the East Weare batteries to the east.

Construction of the Verne Citadel began in 1857 and completed around 1869, although associated work carried on until 1881. The fortress was designed by Captain William Crossman R.E. with modifications by the Royal Commission in 1859.

In 1877 heavy 12.5-inch RML guns were fitted on the west rampart. Other armament fitted included a 7-inch a 10-inch RML guns forming three batteries of guns in all. The main magazine is in the north west of the fort, near the main gate and rendered bombproof with an earth covering.

By 1902 the battery mounted 12.5-inch RML guns.

The fort was disarmed in 1906, but a Fire Command Post was still in use to control all the guns in the area from a central headquarters, just north of the south-east demi-bastion.

During the First World War the citadel was used as a heavy anti-aircraft battery and armed with a 6-pdr Hotchkiss gun and a 1-pdr heavy anti-aircraft (HAA) gun. It resumed this role in the Second World War and mounted four 3.7-inch HAA guns. During the two world wars the Headquarters of Coast Artillery was moved to The Verne.

A Chain Home Low Station was established just outside the citadel, while its main magazine became a hospital. The radar station was later redeveloped into the RAF Portland ROTOR Radar Station. After the war, the last military use of the fort was by men of the Royal Engineers, who left in 1948. The citadel became a prison in 1949.

Outline Description

The citadel has a very exposed position at top of cliff, it is irregular in plan with two storeys.

It has a large dry ditch to the south and west sides with a natural sheer drop to the north and east sides. Fifty arched casemates occupy the space underneath the broad south and west ramparts overlooking the parade ground. Sufficient earth covered them to make them bombproof. The original entrance was a large archway in the north side, with a sally port to the East Weare batteries down the east escarpment.

The single south caponier had three gun ports facing east and three west covering the grand ditch. The sally port was fitted with a Guthrie rolling bridge, much of which still survives. The north caponier covered the main entrance. The ditch turns north in front of it and stops at the cliff face, which protects the rest of the north and the east sides of the fort. The access tunnel to the north caponier, south-west caponier and west sally port have now been filled with rubble as a security measure for the current use of the fort as a prison.

The citadel is a Scheduled Monument, and there are a number of Listed structures within the Scheduled Area including a Blacksmith's Shop, Chapel, Officer's Block, Gymnasium and the Governor's House. These are tabulated detailed above on this datasheet.

Condition

Fair.

The Citadel is on the HAR register; it is described as 'Generally satisfactory but with significant localised problems'.

The priority level as recorded on the HAR register of the battlefields and wreck sites register is level D 'Action/ strategy agreed but not yet implemented'.

Trend

Improving.

Setting

Located on a promontory to the north of the Isle of Portland with steep sides to the north and east. Much of the immediate surrounding area is open

land, although scrub has become widespread to the eastern side of the fort, obscuring the East Weare Batteries which originally defended the Citadel.

Threats

Deterioration/ in need of management – the continued use of the Citadel and associated buildings requires monitoring to ensure the preservation of the Scheduled Monument and Listed buildings.

Visitor wear and tear.

Ownership

Mixed multiple owners.

Occupancy

Occupied/in use.

Current use(s)

A former prison. In 2013, the Ministry of Justice announced the decision to convert the prison into an immigration removal centre.

Development proposals

None identified.

The Prison Service submitred regular planning applications for alterations to the prison buildings. Listed Building and Scheduled Monument Legislation protects the Citadel and surrounding monument while allowing permitted alteration.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is part of a Scheduled Monument and there are Grade II and Grade II* Listed Buildings within the Citadel; the evidential value of these structures, and their group value within the area of a Scheduled Monument is of exceptional significance. This is enhanced by Verne Citadel's close association with surrounding structures including the East Weare batteries and Verne High Angle Battery, both are Scheduled and/ or Listed.

The elevated setting of the citadel, despite the encroachment by modern housing, enhances the aesthetic value of the citadel. The historical significance is well documented and supplemented by the surviving features.

References

PF website

VF website

Portlandhistory website

Compiler

Angela Warner

Upton Fort (OA53)

County	Dorset
District	West Dorset
Parish	Osmington
NGR	SY 74136 81579
Group	Portland

PASTSCAPE#	1429133
HER#	MWX1430, MDO24574
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1021435: Upton Fort, a coastal artillery battery and two searchlight emplacements The caretakers quarters, the former artillery store, smiths quarters and fitters shops are Grade II Listed (list entry number 1393407)
Recommendations	Upton Fort is on the HAR register and requires careful monitoring and management to ensure its preservation.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications / Local Group Value

Upton Fort defended Portland harbour with the other installations within the group, but is situated further along the coastline to the east.

Brief History

Upton was strategically placed above Weymouth Bay to protect the eastern approaches to Portland Harbour; a similar battery at Blacknor on the west side of Portland covered the western approaches

The battery at Upton was constructed between 1901 and 1903; two 6in BL guns were installed in February 1903, followed by two 9.2in guns between July and September that year.

After the First World War the guns were removed and the battery was left in charge of a caretaker.

The site was updated and re-armed in 1940-41 to operate as an emergency battery; two Coastal Artillery Search Lights were also added. During the Second World War the battery was manned by the 522nd (Dorset) Coastal Regiment, and the men were accommodated in Nissen huts at the northern end of the site.

Upton Fort was the first of the Portland defences to enter care and maintenance following the reorganisation of defences in November 1943, and was finally taken out of service in 1956.

The site was rented out at the end of the Second World War and is now privately owned and occupied as residential buildings.

Outline Description

Upton Fort comprises a number of different structures dispersed throughout the *c* 2.35ha site. The whole site is surrounded by a bank of concrete where it flanks the entrance in the north west part of the site, and earth elsewhere.

There was also a ditch which was strengthened with steel fencing, lengths of which survive.

The following is a summary of the Listed Building description –

'The battery consisted of the two 6-inch emplacements to the west with the two 9.2-inch emplacements to the east, all in line. This was surrounded by an earthen bank with a dry ditch and unclimbable fence. A sunken road ran behind the gun positions. Between each pair of guns was a magazine of the usual pattern for these types of gun. Behind the battery steps lead up to the Battery Command Post, with the ablutions, cookhouse and telephone room adjacent. To the west of the 6-inch battery were the latrines, caretaker's quarters, RA store, paint store, smiths' and fitters' shops and armament office, most of which still survive.'

There is a further group of ancillary buildings (including Nos. 1-2 Upton Fort): the former caretaker's quarters, former artillery store, and smith's and fitter's shops in the south western part of the site which are protected by glacis earthworks. These buildings are listed at Grade II and are not included in the scheduling.'

Condition

Poor.

The site is on the HAR register; it is described as 'Generally unsatisfactory with major localised problems'.

The priority level as recorded on the HAR register of the battlefields and wreck sites register is level A 'No Action/ strategy identified or agreed'.

The battery has extant fixtures and fittings including doors, painted signs, musket/rifle holders.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located 500m east of Osmington Mills and 80m from the cliff edge to the south. It has a dry ditch with an unclimbable fence.

Threats

Decay of fabric

Deterioration/ in need of management

Ownership

Private (multiple owners)

Occupancy

Unknown.

Current use(s)

Unused, part of a private garden.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

Upton Fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The significance is clearly explained in the scheduling description –

'Upton Fort played a key strategic role in the defence of Portland Harbour from the early 1900s through to 1943. It has strong group value with other fortifications, dating from both the 19th and 20th centuries, which were built to defend the naval harbour at Portland, such as the Nothe Fort, East Weare Battery, the Inner Pierhead Fort, and the Verne Citadel.

This coastal artillery battery has been identified as one of only ten examples of its type which have survived largely intact (from a recorded total of 202 built in the 20th century) in England. Upton Fort retains all of the elements of a battery, including gun emplacements, magazines, searchlight structures, and ground defences located within defensive earthworks. All survive in a good state of preservation. In addition, the site retains a group of support buildings that are rare survivals and which are listed at Grade II. Furthermore, the monument is well-documented, with original records available at the Public Record Office providing details of the armament and manning of the battery. Upton Fort stands, therefore, as a well-researched and visible reminder of the measures taken to protect England against the threat of invasion in the first half of the 20th century.

References

PF website

Theurbanexplorer website

VF website

HE website

Compiler

Angela Warner

Blacknor Battery (OA54)

County	Dorset
District	Weymouth and Portland
Parish	Portland
NGR	SY 67925 71627
Group	Portland

PASTSCAPE#	868633
HER#	4 001 160
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications / Local Group Value

Verne Citadel.

Brief History

Situated on a high cliff, Blacknor Battery was originally intended as the battery defending the western end of a ditch extending west-east across the island to Durdle Point, Blacknor was intended to cover the West Bay area preventing bombardment of Verne Fort and the Harbour from the sea.

Begun in 1900 and completed in 1902, the battery was designed for two guns and barrack accommodation for 22 men. Two 9.2-inch BL guns were installed by 1909. By 1919, the battery had two 15-pdr BLC guns and a 5-inch Howitzer.

During the Second World War the battery was manned by 103 Battery of 522 Coast Regiment and performed a long-range night role. By 1954 the battery was disarmed and used for storage

The site was sold in 1956 and converted to private accommodation. The officer's mess is converted to a residence, a range of garages, outbuildings and a riding stable. The two halves of the battery are separately owned. In 2008/9 permission was given for the left emplacement to be converted to a modern house

Outline Description

The battery observation post was built above the magazines between the two guns equipped with a Depression Range Finder and Position Finder. A caretaker's quarter was constructed to the rear of the gun emplacements together with a shelter for twenty-one men, ablutions and a cookhouse, mounded with earth for protection. Ramps lead from the magazines to the gun emplacements.

During the Second World War breezeblock blast walls were added and light AA Bren guns were fitted for point defence, one each side of the main gun emplacements

Condition

Fair.

The main battery building remains in good condition, as does two gun emplacements. The base for the coast artillery searchlights also survive. The right emplacement still has the metal overhead walkway in position. The magazines beneath the emplacements are intact and dry with many features extant, including one of the ammunition lifts.

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

Located on a high cliff on the western side of the Isle of Portland. Directly inland the setting of the battery is impacted by housing development.

Threats

The continued use of the batteries, has resulted in the survival of the battery, but consideration should be given to ensuring this does not impact the evidential value of the site.

Ownership

Private (multiple)

Two owners in two separate halves.

Occupancy

Northernmost Emplacement – unknown.

Southernmost Emplacement – occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Northernmost Emplacement – unknown.

Southernmost Emplacement – Domestic. Planning permission was granted in 2009 for the construction of a house which included the demolition of outbuildings [09/00799/FUL].

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Some.

Blacknor Battery and associated buildings are of evidential value, although the conversion of some elements of the site will have inevitably impacted this and the battery's aesthetic value.

The site is of group value with other defences in the locality, and enhances understanding of the defence of Portland in the 19th and 20th centuries. The battery is not distinctive historically or aesthetically, although it is of local and communal value to those who live within it and its locality.

References

PF website

webapps.westdorset-weymouthwebsite

PastScapes website

Compiler

Angela Warner

Verne High Angle Battery (OA55)

County	Dorset
District	Weymouth and Portland
Parish	Portland
NGR	SY 6940 7324
Group	Portland

PASTSCAPE#	1387753
HER#	4 001 117
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002411: The Verne Citadel
	Grade II Listed (list entry number 1281857)
Recommendations	Implement control measures of scrub growth and re-secure magazine tunnels to prevent vandalism.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications / Local Group Value

Verne High Angle Battery is closely associated historically and geographically with The Verne Citadel (OA54) and the East Weare Batteries (OA50), which are situated to the north and east (respectively) of the Battery. This site is part of the Scheduled Monument of The Verne Citadel.

Verne High Angle Battery is of group value with the other surviving examples of its type including Fort Cumberland High Angle Battery, Steynewood High Angle Battery and Hawkins High Angle Battery.

Brief History

Verne High Angle Battery is situated to the south-east of the battery. It was built between 1892 and 1898, to mount six 9-inch RML guns. Pits for two more guns were added in 1898, although they were never used for this purpose, rather they were used initially as observation points, then later converted to latrines and stores.

The battery was constructed to mount six 9-inch RML guns on High Angle mounts (70 degrees) to fire heavy projectiles down onto the decks of ships attacking the harbour of Portland and could engage moving targets to a range of ten thousand yards.

The guns could traverse through 360 degrees and were directed by Position Finding Cells on either side, two at Priory Corner on West Cliff and four on East Cliff. Those on East Cliff still survive as empty roofless shells. The ammunition was stored in two magazines, one at each end of the battery, feeding the guns by a rail, delivering the shells at muzzle height.

Between the magazines were bombproof troop shelters and a laboratory. Two store buildings were built to the rear. Pits for two more guns were added on the flanks sometime after 1898 but these were never fitted, instead they were used for observation points. Plans in the National Archives indicate that the northern one was later converted for use as an Officers' latrine whilst the Southern one became a store.

Following the Owen Committee recommendations, the battery was abandoned in 1907.

In 1918 the battery was used for storing field guns from France. During the Second World War it became an ack-ack battery and was used to store ammunition in preparation for the D-Day landings.

In the 1960s one of the emplacements was used for testing the capsules in which nuclear material was transported.

The battery was restored by a Manpower Services Commission team in 1984-5.

Outline Description

The Listed Building description describes the battery, which is summarised below –

'Portland stone, concrete, brick; tunnels roofed in earth and grass. A large artillery complex outside the main confines of the Verne, with 2 single emplacements and a run of 6 linked by three tunnel runs, and based on series of entrenchments...

...Retaining walls to trenches in good ashlar, rough coursed stone, or brick variously, and rising to c 1.6m on average. At E end of northernmost arm, and at extreme of SW arm are single emplacments in concrete and brick, with set of concrete steps giving to trench; series of 6 emplacements to SE with flat concrete top, linked by bridge to ramp, with narrow gauge rails along top and to ramps, also in trench, passing into tunnel entries N and S.

The semicircular emplacements all have two concentric rows of hexagonal-headed fixing bolts at base.

A cast concrete barrel-vaulted tunnel runs N/S in two sections; that to N has pedimented arched entries set back in raked revetments, all rendered, at each end, with square panel to pediment inscribed VR 1892 over round arch with iron railed openings.

Middle section of tunnel has similar entries but to flat parapet over segmental arch, down 8 steps to bricked-up openings, dated VR 1898. Third tunnel runs in an arc W to E, with 1892 pedimented entries as at north end.....Near the S end of the main N/S trench are two blockhouses....

This was a substantial emplacement, now outside the main body of The Verne fortifications and freely accessible to pedestrians.'

Condition

Fair.

The battery has suffered from graffiti and vandalism, but otherwise is thought to survive well.

The Verne Citadel is on the HAR register. It states the citadel is 'Generally satisfactory but with significant localised problems', although it does not state the locality of these problems.

The priority level as recorded on the HAR register of the battlefields and wreck sites register is level D 'Action/ strategy agreed but not yet implemented'.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located just south of the Verne Citadel on a high point to the north of the Isle of Portland.

Threats

Vandalism – illegal raves may be causing damage to the monument, gates have been locked on the tunnels but these have been forced open and rubbish is gathering in the tunnels. In 2014 the local police force threatened to close the monument to visitors due to the anti-social activities. Also, graffiti.

In need of management.

Uncontrolled plant growth.

Ownership

Local Authority: Weymouth and Portland Borough Council

Occupancy

Vacant and not in use.

Current use(s)

Open site to visitors.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The battery is part of a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II Listed.

It has strong group value with the surrounding fortifications, particularly of the East Weare Batteries and the Verne Citadel. It is of group value with the other surviving examples of its type including Fort Cumberland High Angle Battery, Steynewood High Angle Battery and Hawkins High Angle Battery.

Verne High Angle Battery is one of the best surviving Victorian batteries and of clear evidential value. It is almost intact and well preserved. High angle batteries are a rare type, only six were constructed in England, which were designed as a response to increasingly armoured enemy warships, and it is one of only four survivors. It therefore represents a very rare site type nationally.

Historically, the battery had a short but clearly-defined period of use and is representative of that period in terms of cutting-edge fortification technology. Although the battery had secondary uses, these were storage related, which are thought to have minimal impact on the historic fabric. Plans also survive in the National Archive indicating its use and adaptation during its short lifespan, which further enhance the battery's historical value.

The battery is aesthetically striking and of communal value to the public who visit it. The on site interpretation boards provide an educational resource.

References

dorsetecho.co.uk/news/

HE website

PF website

VF website

Compiler

Angela Warner

AREA 6: BRISTOL CHANNEL

OA no.	Fort name	Significance	Designated	Phase	Condition	HAR? Level	Threat
56	Brean Down Fort	B	SM	3 (RC)	2	x	5, 8
57	Steep Holm	B	SM.LB.	3 (RC)	1, 2 & 3	x	2, 4

Brean Down Fort (OA56)

County Somerset
District Sedgemoor
Parish Brean
NGR ST 28087 59230
Group Bristol Channel

PASTSCAPE#	1065684, 191330
HER#	10128
NT HBSMR#	118500
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1008211: Multi-period site on Brean Down SSSI and Special Area of Conservation: Mendip Limestone Grasslands
Recommendations	None

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Brean Down Fort is one of four Palmerstonian forts on the Bristol Channel coast, the others being Steep Holm, Flat Holm and Lavernock (the latter two are not included within this report as they are situated in Wales). They were designed to protect the Bristol Channel from invasion by Napoleon III.

Brief History

Brean Down Fort is a Palmerston Fort located on the end of Brean Down overlooking the Bristol Channel. The fort was built in 1866 and as part of a group was designed to protect the Bristol Channel from invasion by Napoleon III, by giving covering fire across the Severn Estuary towards Steep Holm Island. It originally housed a garrison of 50 men and provided accommodation for 20 horses.

The fort was originally equipped with seven 7-inch RML guns which were positioned in three main gun emplacements. Each emplacement had underground magazines for the storage of ammunition. The guns were pivoted on earlier Georgian cannons with the gun carriages running around a semi-circular racer rail.

For most of its working life the fort was used for training. It was manned by members of the District Establishment, the Officers' Quarters being occupied by a Master Gunner and his family. The 1st. Gloucestershire Volunteers practised on the RML guns on Brean Down between 1874 and 1891

In 1900 a large explosion in the magazine in the south-west corner severely damaged the fort and two guns were overturned. The fort was subsequently closed and the guns sold by auction.

The site was re-used as part of the Second World War Brean Down coastal battery, which was built within the fort.

Outline Description

The fort consists of an enclosed work with a loop-holed wall, barrack block and dry moat across the gorge, a bridge provides access across the moat. To the north of the entrance, the former officers' quarters survive a roofed building of dressed limestone. The barrack block to the south of the officers' quarters survives as an unroofed building of dressed limestone. A small parade area in the centre of the fort separates the barrack from the sea facing gun positions and magazines. The fort comprises a barrack block, officers' quarters, a latrine block, the remains of three gun positions and their associated powder magazine.

The site was re-used as part of the Second World War Brean Down coastal battery. The officers' quarters and barrack block are visible on aerial photographs of the 1940s, but many features of the Palmerston fort are obscured by Second World War refortifications.

The seven 7-inch RML guns emplacements can still be made out, though two are largely obliterated by 20th century emplacements with concrete anti-aircraft shelters.

Condition

Fair.

Trend

Improving.

The fort is being conserved by the National Trust and volunteers, although areas are derelict.

Setting

Located on the western edge of the peninsulas of Brean Down which faces the Bristol Channel, it is 9 miles north-west of Weston-Super-Mare.

Threats

Vandalism – reported on PastScapes website.

Potential decay of fabric through visitor wear and tear.

Ownership

Charity (heritage). The National Trust, gifted by Sedgemoor District Council 18th June 2002.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Open to the public.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Brean Down Fort is the only example of a substantial coastal fort in new Somerset. It is now derelict although it survives generally in fair condition, and it is of evidential value. Historically, the Palmerston Fort was used until the 1900s, although though most of its operation it was used for training. It has a long history of use into the Second World War when a coastal battery was constructed inside the fort.

The value of the fort is enhanced by its setting on Brean Down which is a SSSI and Conservation Area. It is part of the National Trust site, and therefore of high communal value.

References

PF website

PastScapes website

NT website

Breandownfort website

Hanks 2016 (unpublished Erosion Monitoring Report 1997-2016)

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Steep Holm (OA57)

County Somerset
District North Somerset
Parish Weston Super Mare (in Bristol Channel)
NGR Summit BatteryST 22650 60695
Garden Battery ST 23146 60639
Tombstone Battery ST 23134 60710
Laboratory Battery ST 23043 60764
Split Rock battery ST 22657 60585
Rudder Rock Battery ST 22505 60678
Group Bristol Channel

PASTSCAPE#	Summit Battery (1456168), Garden Battery (1456114), Tombstone Battery (1456118), Laboratory Battery (1456124), Split Rock Battery (1456215), Rudder Rock Battery (1456198)
HER#	
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1005415: Two Palmerstonian gun batteries on Steep Holm (Split Rock Battery and Rudder Rock Battery) Grade II Listed (list entry numbers in brackets): Summit Battery (1129739), Garden Battery (1137955), Tombstone Battery (1320678), Laboratory Battery (1137930)
Recommendations	Protected monuments are considered to be in poor condition, and may require management. The SM description is outdated and the protection measures on the island will benefit from review.

Type

Coastal battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Steep Holm was fortified in the 1860's, along with fortifications on Brean Down, Flat Holm and Lavernock Point (the latter two are not included in this study as they lie within Wales). They provided a defensive line across the Bristol Channel to protect the commercial ports of Bristol, Cardiff and Newport.

Brief History

In the 1860s the War Department leased seven parcels of land dotted around the coast of the island to build the fortifications, these were constructed as part of the Palmerston defences. Construction began in 1865 and was completed in 1869 by John Perry of Weston-super-Mare.

The facilities installed included a master-gunners house, a small inn, and a water tank holding. Armaments included ten 7-inch RML Mk III spread between six batteries. These were later replaced with Armstrong 6-inch RML guns.

The six gun batteries are: Summit Battery, Laboratory Battery, Garden Battery and Tombstone Battery, which are further described below. Each battery had a masonry side-arms shed. Local rock was used for the construction together with lime mortar burnt in local kilns. Laboratory Battery had a laboratory building built to the rear that would have serviced all of the islands batteries.

Tombstone Battery – a single Victorian stone gun emplacement built between 1867 and 1871 for a single 7-inch RML gun.

Summit Battery (also know as Steepholm North Battery) – this consisted of two stone gun emplacements built between 1867 and 1871, one of which was lost to the construction of a later Second World War gun

Labatory Battery – two Victorian stone gun emplacements built between 1867 and 1871, the site consisted of emplacements for two Armstrong RML guns, and underground shell stores.

Garden Battery (also known as Steep Holm South) – a battery was constructed in 1941 over two Victorian stone gun emplacements that were built between 1867 and 1871. It consisted of emplacements for two Armstrong RML guns, and underground shell stores

Split Rock Battery – constructed between 1867 and 1871 for two 7-inch RML guns. During the Second World War a small anti-aircraft battery was placed on top of the emplacements. Nissen huts and privy house were built behind the emplacement.

Rudder Rock Battery – single Victorian stone gun emplacement built between 1867 and 1871, with underground shell stores. In 1898 the RML gun was removed from its mounting and nickel steel plates erected as defensive armour with a concrete apron. This was bombarded from HMS Arrogant to test the new larger breach loading guns. A Second World War concrete battery observation post was partly built over the emplacement in 1941.

In 1898 test firing by HMS Arrogant, an Arrogant-class cruiser, on Rudder Rock battery showed that the fixed gun emplacements used on Steep Holm and other sites were susceptible to attack by modern warships, and the site was no longer active. The Victorian batteries were disarmed in 1901.

The facilities were used and upgraded in the First and Second World Wars.

The military control on the island was maintained until 1908 when it was leased. In 1927 the first test of the RAE Larynx, an early pilotless aircraft, to be used as a guided anti-ship weapon, took place just off Steep Holm.

In 1953 the island was leased by the Steep Holm Trust who repaired some of the buildings. In 1974 their lease expired and was taken over by the Kenneth Allsop Memorial Trust, today the island can be visited and one barrack block is in use to provide visitor facilities.

Outline Description

Tombstone Battery –the Listed Building description describes the battery – 'Single battery with one barbette. Inside a semi-circular parapet wall of squared dressed rubble: outer ramp of earth and stone. Pit with racer cannon pivot (remains of Geo III cannon) and displaced 7-ton 7-inch cannon of 1860's. Ammunition chamber: dressed limestone exterior; brick vaulted interior'

Summit Battery – a well-preserved Second World War battery. The Victorian battery consisted of emplacements for two Armstrong RML guns, and underground shell stores. The George III cannon that was the pivot for the

RML gun and the rail used for turning it now lie on the surface behind the Second World War emplacement.

It is described in the Listed Building description – '1866-1868, built as part of the Palmerston forts ["follies"]. Originally a double enclosure. Number one remains almost intact: semi-circular parapet wall of squared dressed limestone on inside of barbette; outer ramp of earth and stone. Racer and cannon pivot (remains of Geo III cannon) and 7-ton 7-inch cannon survive. Ammunition chamber for both batteries are nearby: squared, dressed limestone exterior; brick lined and vaulted interior'.

Labatory Battery – a side arms store and laboratory building have been partly demolished. The laboratory was for testing various mixtures of gunpowder. The battery is described within the Listed Building description 'Double battery with 2 barbettes. Inside a semi-circular parapet wall of squared dressed rubble. Outer ramp of earth and stone. Each pit has racer cannon pivot (remains of Geo III cannon) and displaced 7-ton 7-inch cannon of 1860's. Two underground ammunition chambers at rear: dressed limestone exterior: interior brick barrel vaulted roof'.

Garden Battery – one of the Victorian gun emplacements and the shell stores are buried beneath the eastern Second World War emplacement. Only one of the cannon's survives, but with a deep scar where attempts had been made to break it up, and it lies at the rear of the emplacement.

Garden Battery is described within the Listed Buildings description as – ' Originally a double enclosure, (Pits 1 and 2) but World War II battery built on top of pit 1. Pit 2 has a semi-circular parapet wall of limestone rubble on the inside: an earth and stone bank on the outside. The racer, cannon pivot (remains of Geo III cannon) and displaced 7-ton 7-inch gun survive'.

Split Rock Battery – constructed in local stone, it consisted of emplacements for two Armstrong RML guns, and underground shell stores. Split Rock Battery is described as one of the best preserved of the batteries on Steep Holm (VF website).

Rudder Rock Battery – consisted of a single emplacement for an Armstrong RML, with underground shell stores behind the emplacement. In 1941 a concrete battery observation post was constructed partly covering the Victorian emplacement. The RML gun was buried beneath the floor. In the late 20th century a hole in the floor was dug to reveal the gun.

Condition

The individual conditions of the batteries are described on the VF website, and are detailed below. In general, they are thought to be in reasonable condition and manged at a low level by the wardens on the island. There has been some unsympathetic repairs, but this was partially due to difficulties in getting material to the remote area, and past inexperience with historic repairs. This assessment is also informed by a HE Field Monument report given by Mel Barge (Ms) in 2005.

Split Rock battery – good, it is described as the best preserved on the batteries on Steep Holm (VF website).

Summit and Garden Batteries – fair condition.

Tombstone, Rudder Rock and Laboratory Batteries – poor condition.

The barrack block has been restored to visitor centre by the Kenneth Allsop Memorial Trust and most of the batteries are in good condition. Most of the Victorian gun positions have suffered damage as a result of the Second World War refortifications; however, all except one of the 7-inch RML barrels remain.

Trend

Stable/ Improving

Setting

The island of Steep Holm is located 4.8km north west of the Brean Down peninsula in the centre of the Bristol Channel.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Decay of fabric – reported in the 2005 field monument report to the Second World War features, which may fall within the SM area.

Ownership

Charity (heritage). The whole island is owned by the Kenneth Allsop Memorial Trust.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Boat trips bring visitors to the island during the summer

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Split Rock Battery and Rudder Rock Battery are Scheduled Monuments and Summit Battery, Garden Battery, Tombstone Battery and Laboratory Battery are Grade II Listed.

The concentration of a group of batteries within a single area adds to the group value of the site, and the individual significance of each of the batteries. The batteries are of evidential value for their level of survival, although the condition of elements is deteriorating. Historically, the batteries have a long period of use, and played an important role particularly during the Second World War.

The batteries are of high communal value as part of the National Trust site, and can be visited as part of the visitor experience to the island. The ecology of the site further enhances the value of the landscape in which the batteries are situated.

References

PF website

VF website

Wikipedia website

Steep Holm Island website

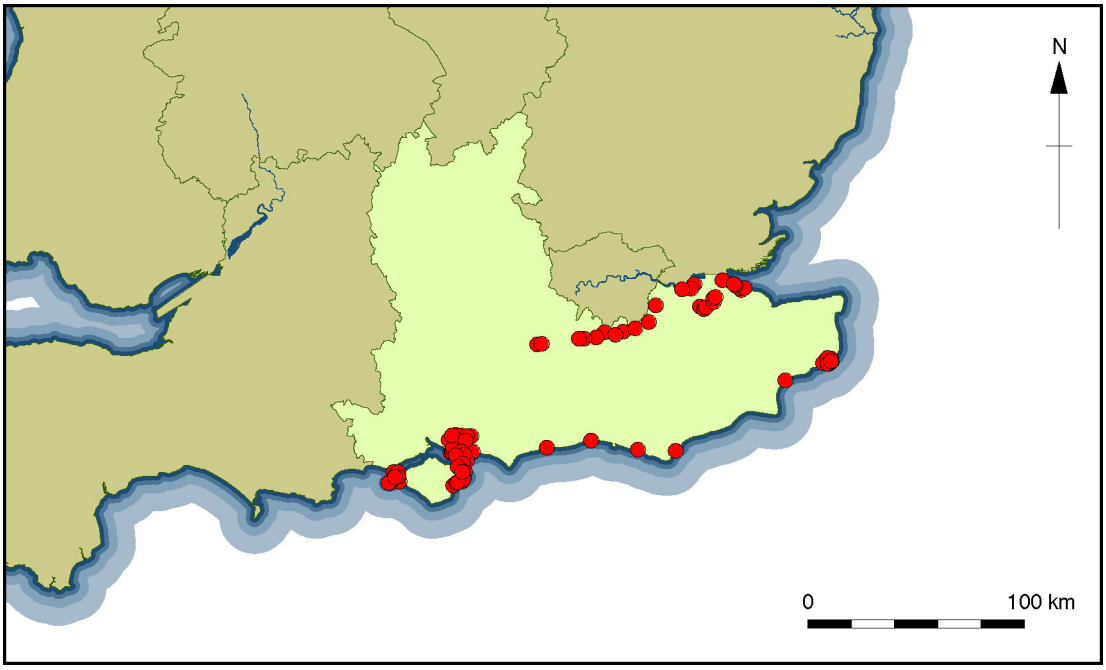
HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

REGION 2: SOUTH-EAST REGION

Area No.	Area Name	No. of Sites
7	Portsmouth	48
8	Sussex	3
9	Mobilisation Centres	12
10	Thames	7
11	Thames/ Sheerness	3
12	Chatham and Medway	8
13	Coastal Redoubts	3
14	Dover	13
Total		57



Distribution of forts within the South-East region

There are five fortifications that fall within the south-east strategic groups, but geographically are part of the HE East of England regional group. These forts have therefore been duplicated in both sections, but have been given only one OA reference number. These fortifications are:

Area 9: Mobilisation Centres

- North Weald Redoubt (OA109)

Area 10: Thames Group

- Coalhouse Fort (OA115)
- East Tilbury Battery (OA116)
- Tilbury Fort (OA119)

Area 12: Coastal Redoubt

- Harwich Redoubt (OA135)

AREA 7: PORTSMOUTH AND THE ISLE OF WIGHT

OA no.	Fort name	Signif.	Designated	Group	Phase	Condition			Threats
						BAR / level	Condition	Trend	
58	Browndown Battery	B	LB (II) (1232657)	1	2	x	2	Stable	1, 6
59	Fort Elson	A	SM (234456)	2a	2	A1	3	Declining	2, 4, 3
60	Fort Monckton	B	SM (1001844)	1	1	x	1	Stable	1
61	Stokes Bay Lines	B (1,2 & 5) and D (3 & 4).	SM batteries 1 & 5. LB (II) - battery 2 (1405953, 1001829 &)	2	3 (RC)	x	2, 3, 4	Stable except No.1 battery - declining.	4, 6, 7
62	Eastney Forts (East and West)	B	SM. LB (II) (1001830, 1387041, 1387042)	4a	3	x	East Fort - 2. West Fort - 1.	East Fort -Improving. West Fort - Stable.	1, 3, 4
63	Fort Blockhouse	A	SM (1001873)	1	1	x	1	Stable	1, 6
64	Fort Brockhurst	A	SM (1013401)	2a	2	x	1	Stable	2, 4
65	Fort Cumberland	A	SM. LB (II) (1015700, 1104273)	4a	1	C1	3	Declining	2, 3, 4, y
66	Fort Fareham	B	SM. LB (II) (1001856, 1094240)	2a	3 (RC)	A1	3	Declining	2, 3, 4, 5, 7
67	Fort Grange	B	SM. LB (II) (1001807, 1233816)	2a	2 (RC)	x	3	Declining	2, 3, 4
68	Fort Nelson	B	SM. LB (I) (1001860, 1350616)	2b	3 (RC)	x	1	Stable	x
69	Fort Purbrook	B	SM. LB (II*) (1001842, 1092134)	2b	3 (RC)	x	3	Stable	8
70	Fort Rowner	B	LB (II) (1233871)	2a	2 (RC)	x	3	Declining	2, 4
71	Fort Southwick	B	SM. LB (I) (1003802, 1001808, 1167213, 1104368))	2b	3 (RC)	D1	2	Declining	7, 8
72	Fort Wallington	B	LB (II) (1094233)	2b	3(RC)	x	4	Stable	7
73	Fort Widley	B	SM. LB (II*) 1001862 & 1387128	2b	3 (RC)	x	4	Stable	2, 7
74	Hilsea Lines	B	SM (1001861)	4a	2	A1	3	Declining	2, 3, 4, 7
75	Horse Sand Fort	B	SM (1018558)	1a	3 (RC)	C1	3	Improving	1, 6
76	Hurst Castle , Wing Batteries	B	SM (1015699)	3	3(RC)	x	1	Stable	1, 8
77	Spitbank Fort	B	SM (1018587)	1a	3 (RC)	x	1	Stable	1, 8
78	Point Battery	B	SM (1001870)	4a	1	x	3	Unknown	1, 6

OA no.	Fort name	Signif.	Designated	Group	Phase	Condition			Threats
						BAR / level	Condition	Trend	
79	Southsea Castle (including east and west batteries)	B	SM (1001869)	4a	1	x	2	Unknown	1
80	Fort Gilkicker	B	SM. LB (II*) 1001789 & 1276716	4	3 (RC)	D1	3	Declining.	3, 4
81	Bembridge Fort	B	SM (1012717)	3	2 (RC)	x	2	Improving	8
82	Cliff End Battery	C	x	3	3 (RC)	x	3	Declining	1, 2, 3, 4
83	Fort Albert (Cliff End Fort)	B	LB (II*) (1291552)	3	2	x	2	Sable	4
84	Culver Down Battery	C	x	3	5	x	2	Stable	1
85	Fort Victoria	B	LB (II) 1209376	3	2	x	2	Stable	1
86	Freshwater Redoubt	B	LB (II) (1292676)	3	2	x	1	Improving	1, 6
87	Golden Hill Fort	B	SM. LB (I) (1013289, 1291516)	3	3 (RC)	x	1	Stable	8
88	Hatherwood Battery	D	x	3	3 (RC)	x	4	Declining	1
89	New Needles Battery	A	SM. LB (II) 1422839 & 1209415	3	4	x	1	Stable	1, 8
90	No Mans Land Fort	B	SM. LB (II) (1018589 & 1234103)	1a	3 (RC)	x	1	Stable	x
91	Old Needles Battery	B	SM. LB (II) 1009392& 1220402	3	3 (RC)	x	1	Stable	1
92	Puckpool Mortar Battery	B	1012721	1	3 (RC)	x	1	Sable	1, 7
93	Sandown Barrack Battery	B	1019195	2c	3 (RC)	x	1	Stable/ potential to improve	1
94	Sandown Fort	D	x	2c	3 (RC)	x	4	Stable	1, 7, 8
95	St Helen's Fort	B	SM.LB (II) (1017370, 1034399)	1a	3 (RC)	x	2	Unknown	1
96	Steynewood High Angle Battery	A	SM (1427301)	2c	4	x	1	Stable	x
97	Warden Point Battery	C	x	3	3 (RC)	x	4	Declining	1, 2, 3, 6, 7
98	Yaverland Fort and Battery	B	SM (1021443)	2c	3 (RC)	C1	3	Declining	1, 2, 4 ,6
99	Nodes Point	C	x	1	5	x	3	Stable	8

Browndown Battery (OA58)

County	Hampshire
District	Gosport
Paris	Gosport
NGR	SZ 5825 9891
Group	Portsmouth, Spitbank

PASTSCAPE#	461598
HER#	6322
Heritage status	Grade II Listed (list entry number 1232657)
Recommendations	Consideration needs to be given to the future development of the site following its sale in 2009. The battery is also situated within an archaeological and ecologically sensitive area.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the wider Spitbank Defences, also included within this group are: Puckpool Battery, Fort Monckton, Fort Blockhouse and Nodes Point Battery. Four sea forts are also included within the Spitbank group, these include: St Helen's Fort, Spitbank Fort, Horse Sand Fort and No Man's Land Fort.

Browndown Battery is also associated with the Stokes Bay Lines and Stokes Bay No.2 battery. The battery acted as 'connecting link between the inner and outer defences by virtue of being the end of the Stokes Bay Line of ditch from Gilkicker and its relationship to Fort Gomer' (Hogg 1974, p141).

Brief History

The first batteries at Browndown were erected in 1852 on the shore at Browndown Point to the west end of Stokes Bay at Gosport to defend the western approach to Portsmouth harbour and to prevent an enemy landing on the beach. These batteries were known as Browndown Battery East and Browndown Battery West.

The completion of the Stokes Bay Lines in 1860 rendered the Browndown batteries obsolete, there was a need for a battery to protect the deep water anchorage off Browndown Point.

The later 1880s was a key period within the development of the Browndown Battery, when on 1888 the need for two heavy guns to protect the deep water anchorage off Browndown Point resulted in the demolition of Browndown Battery East and the rebuilding of the west one. It was extensively remodelled to mount two 12.5-inch 38-ton RML guns on the terreplein in open barbette positions.

The guns were still in position in 1898 when the Montgomery Committee proposed to replace them with two 9.2-inch BL guns acting as a gun group with two 6-inch guns on nearby Stokes Bay No.2 battery. The new battery received its armament by 1904 but was declared superfluous by the Owen Committee in 1905.

Outline Description

The battery has a dry ditch to the seaward side only.

The Listed Building Description describes the surviving battery -

'The structure, of brick and concrete, makes provision for 2 large guns, and a rearward control point on the west side. The concrete front to the emplacements slopes upwards to the rim of the V-shaped gun pit. There is ground floor accommodation underneath the rear of each platform, between which is a central ammunition store, with a more heavily protected roof. Although incomplete and derelict, there is a survival of many detailed features (steps, cupboards, channels, metal fixtures, railings and so forth), to indicate the scale and type of armament. The south face (towards the fleet anchorage) is protected by a sloping earthwork; on the north inner side is a yard, with a high brick wall on its northern boundary' (Listed Building entry 1232657)

Condition

Fair.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The battery is situated on the coastline to the west of the Stokes Bay Lines, and the south-west of Gosport centre. It is within a sandy area, and set in from the sea front.

The Browndown Battery sits within an archaeologically and ecologically sensitive area, including the Browndown SSSI and close to the Browndown ranges. The latter were used extensively to train troops in trench warfare during the First World War. Many of the trenches can be seen today, and are of archaeologically significance.

Threats

Development threat: the site was sold by the MOD in 2009 to a private contractor. Future plans for the site need to be given careful consideration.

The fort sits within an archaeologically and ecologically sensitive area, which needs to be given careful consideration.

Flooding/ coastal erosion – the fort is situated directly on the coastline.

Ownership

Commercial. A private contractor 'Jumbuck Ltd'.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Vacant.

In 2009 the MOD in a review of its estates stated that Browndown Camp was surplus to requirement and it was closed. The site was released and sold to a private contractor for £754,000 in 2012 (Wikipedia website).

The MOD have retained the camping ground and ranges for military use. The ranges area is open to the public when not in use.

Development proposals

The site is likely to be developed in the future, following its sale in 2009. The fort's future use is as yet unknown.

The Browndown site is in an area of archaeological interest and is part of the strategic gap, the area of land from the shoreline up to the Alver Valley. Gosport Borough Council seeks to maintain the integrity of the Strategic Gap so development proposals should not physically and/or visually diminish the gap. Any future proposals should be designed sympathetically to respect the open character of the Strategic Gap with regard to the existing built footprint (fort gilkicker website)

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is Grade II Listed.

The battery has evidential value because although it is incomplete and derelict, it has survival of many detailed features (steps, cupboards, channels, metal fixtures, railings and so forth), which indicate the scale and type of armament. The battery is also an important part of the Browndown military landscape, situated in close proximity to the Browndown ranges and First World War training trenches. The battery's association with these military features enhance its value, as does its connection with the Stokes Bay Lines and Stokes Bay No.2 battery.

The battery although of considerable significance as a Grade II listed structure, is of less significance that other Portsmouth sites qualified as of 'considerable' significance, because it does have strong historical, aesthetic or communal values.

References

Wikipedia website

VF website

PF website

Fort gilkicker website

Hogg 1974

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Elson (OA59)

County	Hampshire
District	Gosport
Parish	Gosport
NGR	SU 5990 0293
Group	Portsmouth

PASTSCAPE#	234456
HER#	19662
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1001841: Fort Elson
Recommendations	Currently on the Heritage at Risk register at category 'A'. A Management Plan has been drafted and this requires implementation to ensure the future preservation of the fort.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the western flank 'Gosport Advance Line' (including Fort Gomer (now demolished), Fort Grange, Fort Rowner, Fort Brockhurst and Fort Elson). Fort Elson is the northernmost fort in the defence line to the west of Gosport.

Brief History

Fort Elson is located on land immediately to the south of Elson Creek, to which it was connected by a sluice. It was the most northerly fort in the line of five which formed part of the 'Sea Front and Spithead Defences', Inner Line, Land Front, Left Flank.

The fort was commenced in 1855 and completed in 1860, and was already in existence when the Royal Commission decided to complete the line of fortifications to the west of Gosport inner defences. The Commission decided to incorporate Fort Elson and Fort Gomer into the defences by adding three identical forts between them to form the Gosport Advanced Line.

Plans within the National Archives show that the fort was still being adapted for rearmament in the early 1890s, despite its main role being that of a discharge depot.

The 1890s was a key period in the fort's use when in 1891 the forts gun positions were altered, many of the traversing positions, including all of those on the Cavalier were filled in; as the fort was adapted to take three Moncrieff gun emplacements for 7-inch RBL guns. Two Moncrieff gun positions were located at the salient angles of the front face, with a third at the eastern end of the right face. The fact that 9 of the 14 guns allocated to the fort at this time were on the front and right faces, shows that the forts offensive role was to cover the gap between the Gosport advance line and Fort Fareham.

In 1900 it was proposed to remove all remaining armament and by 1901 and the fort served no further purpose in the defence line.

In 1917 the fort was given a new lease of life when an early QF 3-inch 20-cwt anti-aircraft gun on a peerless lorry was stationed there. It was also used during the Second World War.

Outline Description

Fort Elson is a polygonal fort with a wet ditch, this sluice was built to connect the northern section to Fareham creek.

The method of construction was to build brick arches, similar to a railway viaduct, forming the main ramparts and then to pour earth on top allowing this to fall back through the arches, allowing it to be carried away a returned to the top once more, until the whole of the scarp rested upon their ends and the parapet was supported by the arches. This method was known as 'escarp en décharge'. It proved difficult and during the construction a major portion of the escarp slipped into the ditch during one night.

The fort consists of a D-shaped rampart for the main armament with the rear (or gorge) closed by a barrack block. The front face is a short one with two long flanks, all three having earth ramps up which the main armament and supplementary movable armament could be moved into position. The main magazine is beneath the salient of the front face and left flank accessed by a tunnel from the central parade.

The fort included a barrack block and stables. In front of the barrack a cavalier held a second line of armament but this was disarmed and the embrasures filled during the modifications of the ramparts of all of the Gomer-Elson line of forts in 1892. Access to the fort is over a drawbridge spanning the rear ditch, then through a tunnel in the centre of the barrack block and finally through a second tunnel in the centre of the cavalier to the parade beyond.

The main ramparts had the usual mixture of 7-inch RBL and 64-pdr RML guns. The southern flanks had two double Haxo casemates and in the 1880s three Moncrieff disappearing mountings for 7-inch RBL guns were added. Two Moncrieff gun positions were located at the salient angles of the front face, with a third at the eastern end of the right face. The fact that nine of the fourteen guns allocated to the fort at this time were on the front and right faces, shows that the forts offensive role was to cover the gap between the Gosport advance line and Fort Fareham

Condition

Poor.

Derelict and heavily overgrown, following HE's policy of 'controlled ruination'.

Fort Elson is classified as class 'A' of the HAR register with 'Immediate risk of further rapid deterioration or loss of fabric; no solution agreed'.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

It was located on land immediately to the south of Elson Creek, to which it was connected by a sluice. The fort is situated along the coastline to the north-west of Gosport centre, it is surrounded by a wooded area within an MOD munitions storage area, and as such retains a military context. It is situated opposite Portsmouth harbour.

Threats

Decay of Fabric – the fort is in very poor condition, tunnels are reported to have collapsed.

Uncontrolled plant growth – however it is understood that programmes of 'vegetation removal are imminent'.

Deterioration/in need of management – a Management Plan has been drafted but not agreed or implemented.

Ownership

Government Agency: MOD.

Occupancy

Vacant.

The site cannot be occupied because it is part of a munitions storage area.

Current use(s)

Part of DM Gosport. The fort is no longer in use, the fort still lies within the Defence Munitions Centre Gosport, and has been purposefully left to nature as part of a nature reserve.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Fort Elson was the second of the polygonal forts and, since the destruction of Fort Gomer in 1964, it is the oldest surviving polygonal fort. It is also unique in plan, this time completely abandoning the bastions of earlier fortifications in favour of earth ramparts constructed 'en decharge'. Fort Elson has three Moncrieff guns pits.

Although in deteriorating condition the main components of the fort are thought to survive. The fort is of exceptional value for its pioneering design enhanced by the loss of its counterpart, Fort Gomer.

References

Wikipedia website

VF website

PF website

HE website

Moore 2016

Saunders 1989

Dobinson 2000

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Monckton (OA60)

County Hampshire
District Gosport
Parish Gosport
NGR SZ 6117 9781
Group Portsmouth, Spitbank

PASTSCAPE#	462038
HER#	19018
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1001844: Fort Monckton
Recommendations	None

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the widern Spitbank defences, also included within this wider group are: Browndown Battery, Nodes Point Battery, Fort Blockhouse and Puckpool Mortar Battery. Four Spitbank seaforts are also included within this group: Horse Sand Fort, Spitbank Fort, No Man's Land Fort and St Helen's Fort.

Fort Monckton also has links with Fort Gilkicker, which replaced the role of Fort Monckton in the 1860s. In 1859 extensive work began at Stokes Bay to connect the eastern forts, the Gomer to Elson Gosport Advance Line included Fort Monckton situated at the west end. The fort was incorporated into the defences of Stokes Bay as an adjunct to the Stokes Bay Lines.

Brief History

The fort was constructed between 1783 and 1789/90, and completed prior to the French revolutionary war of 1793. Records of the artillery that it carried suggests it was of some importance at this time. Its importance declined when the newer defences were built (Hogg 1975).

When the 1859 commission reviewed Fort Monckton it was considered to be out of date, its role being replaced by the new iron shield Fort Gilkicker on Gilkicker Point, built for heavy modern RML guns. It was given a minor defensive role in the great scheme for Portsmouth Harbour. Subsequently, the role of Monckton Fort was predominantly for training and played a limited defensive role.

In 1878 the Royal Engineers moved into Fort Monckton to use it as a barracks whilst they trained in the use of submarine mines, and later searchlights. In the 1880s the armament of the fort was revised, at this time Fort Monckton was the headquarters of the 4th (Submarine Mining) Company Royal Engineers.

During the First World War it was used to hold anti-aircraft search lights, and in the Second World War it held an anti-aircraft artillery unit.

Outline Description

Fort Monckton is a bastion trace, with two bastions commanding the sea front, it is enclosed by a dry ditch of elaborate trace with the remains of two

'redans' of triangular outworks and the whole was then surrounded by a considerable wet ditch. This has been canalised over the years so that it is hardly recognisable as an obstacle.

The fort was built with a stone casemated sea battery parallel to the coast with bastions at each end, plus three additional bastions with connecting curtain walls to the rear. The fort was surrounded by a large dry ditch. On the outside of the ditch was a covered way. The entrance in the north curtain wall was covered by a Ravelin, and a second Ravelin was also built in front of the west curtain to protect it. In the ditch between each of the eastern (No.1 and 5) bastions and western bastions (No.3 and 4) was built a double storied masonry musketry caponier of an unusual arrowhead design. The main magazine, containing 573 barrels, was built next to the rampart behind the central (No.4) bastion.

Condition

Good.

It is reported to be 'actively preserved' by the military (VF website). The fort survives in its entirety, but many subsequent buildings have been added to the site.

Trend

None identified.

Setting

Fort Monckton is situated to the east of Gilkicker Point, along the coastline to the south-west of Gosport centre. Fort Gilkicker lies immediately to the west and Fort Blockhouse to the east.

The immediate setting of the fort has not been compromised by later development. The fort is situated directly on the coastline, and is immediately surrounded by a buffer of green area including a golf course.

Threats

Flooding/ coastal erosion – the fort is situated directly on the coastline.

Ownership

Government Agency. In military (not navy) use.

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Actively used by the military, and reported to be used for the MI6 intelligence officer's training.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Fort Monckton is of high heritage value as one of the last true bastion forts constructed. The fort is of evidential value; it survives in good condition and it is understood to be largely complete. Many later buildings have however been added to its immediate military surrounds. The fort did not play a key defence role during the 19th century and up to 1918, its main role was a training establishment. The fort has remained in military hands since its construction, and it may therefore have communal value to those servicemen who continue to use it.

References

Wikipedia website

VF website

PF website

Moore 2014

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Stokes Bay Lines (1-5) (OA61)

County	Hampshire
District	Gosport
Parish	Gosport
NGR	Stokes Bay Lines Battery No.1: SZ 58763 98989 Stokes Bay Lines Battery No.2: SZ 58691 98909 Stokes Bay Lines Battery No.3: SZ 59715 98603 Stokes Bay Lines Battery No.4: SZ 60215 98354 Stokes Bay Lines Battery No.5: SZ 60511 98124
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight Coast Defences

PASTSCAPE#	462047
HER#	18977 (Stokes Bay Lines), 57643 (No.1), 6464 (No.2), 38772 (No.3), 57644 (No.4), 27653 (No.5)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1405953: No 1 Battery, Stokes Bay Lines Scheduled Monument 1001829: No. 5 Battery, Stokes Bay Lines Grade II Listed (list entry number 1276305): No.2 Battery
Recommendations	Consideration needs to be given to no.5 battery which may be subject to future development. The setting of no.2 battery is compromised by the encroachment of a mobile home park, the gardens of a caravan park are also compromising the structural integrity of battery no.1. Interpretation of the Stokes Bay Lines as a landscape feature would enhance understanding.

Type

Battery. Defence Line.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The Stokes Bay Lines are associated with Fort Monckton, Fort Gomer, Browndown Battery and Fort Gilkicker.

Brief History

The Stokes Bay Lines were completed in 1861, and consisted of a rampart and wet ditch with five batteries. They were built to defend the western flank of Portsmouth Royal Dockyard.

In the 1840s and 1850s the possibility of a French landing at Stokes Bay caused concern and three batteries were built along the bay to counter this; two at Browndown Point and one at Gilkicker Point. All three were simple earth ramparts with little to protect them from direct assault. In 1857 Major Jervois proposed a complex system of moats, ramparts and batteries to close off the gap between the new fort at Gomer and the earlier fort at Gilkicker, Fort Monckton. This defensive moat was to become the 'Stokes Bay Lines'. It ran from the rear of the Browndown batteries in the west to the glacis of Fort Monckton in the east and consisted of a ditch with rampart and five flanking batteries of various traces.

Outline Description

Rampart and ditch, plus five batteries.

At the western end No.2 Battery consisted of a sea facing rampart with four casemated guns to fire westwards across the gap between the Browndown Batteries and Fort Gomer. Three more casemated guns fired eastwards along

the first branch of the moat running towards No.3 Battery. No.1 Battery was at the rear of No.2 straddling the only coast road to Browndown army ranges and Lee-on-the Solent. It also covered the rear of a dam constructed to flood the Gomer marshes in time of attack by closing off the River Alver. A tunnel connected No.1 Battery to the parade of No.2. No.3 Battery mounted three guns to fire westwards along the section of moat towards No.2 Battery. At No.3 Battery the moat turned south towards the sea for a short section before continuing eastward to the lake at Gilkicker. This section of moat was flanked by No.4 Battery. No.5 Battery was to the north of this section of moat and mounted nine guns facing seawards.

Condition

No.1 Battery – Poor. The battery survives as a substantial earthwork retaining the tunnel which connects it to No.2 Battery. The principal survival of the battery is described in the Scheduling description:

> *'Most of the southern part of No.1 Battery survives on the northern edge of a mobile home park under grass with some tree and shrub. It includes a 'Z' shaped earth rampart varying between 1m to 1.5m high on its vertical north (internal) face and up to 3m high on its sloping south (external) face. The width varies from 2m to 6m. The north face of the rampart is faced with mass concrete 0.2-0.3m thick, in which can be seen the cast of the shuttering used in its construction. The southern face is composed of an earth bank sloping to the south' (HE website Scheduled Monument Description 1405953).*

No.2 Battery is in fair condition, and reused by the Diving Museum. Two emplacements are visible in reasonable condition with lower magazines present (PastScapes website).

No.3 and No.4 Batteries are in very bad condition, as they were demolished during the 20th century.

No.5 Battery survives in fair condition, the rampart is mostly intact and the expense magazines survive.

The Scheduling of No.5 Battery includes the following principle elements:

> *'The scheduled area comprises the surviving ramparts of No.5 Battery and its expense stores. The scheduling is divided into two separate areas of protection by the break in the ramparts made for a road in the 1950s. The northern area included the northern flanking rampart and one expense store. The southern area includes the central and southern flanking rampart and the remaining three expense stores. The remainder of the site including the gorge of the battery and the area beyond the ramparts falls outside the scheduled area' (HE website, Scheduled Monument Description 1001829).*

Trend

Stable, with the exception of No.1 Battery which is being impacted by its situation next to the mobile home parking

Setting

The Stokes Bay Lines is situated on the coastline to the south-west of Gosport Centre. No.2 Battery survives at the west end of the line, immediately to the east of Browndown Battery, and at the western end is Fort Gilkicker. The Stokes Bay Line batteries have largely been lost but the line and setting of the lines can still be discerned. In places the setting of the line is compromised by development.

Threats

No.1 Battery – decay of fabric. The cement facing and earthworks of the battery are vulnerable to damage and modification due to their situation abutting the gardens of the mobile home park (HE website).

No.2 Battery - there has been encroachment from a caravan park. Camp buildings at SZ 583 993 that were originally shared with Browndown Battery are in reasonable condition, however some new buildings and encroachments are visible at the camp (Pastcapes website).

No.5 Battery is due to be sold by the owners QinetiQ Alverstoke and may be used for housing or light industry (The News website).

Ownership

No.1 and No.2 Batteries are Local Authority: Gosport Borough Council, No.3 private (domestic), No.4 private and No.5 is a commercial owner: QinetiQ Alverstoke (but due for sale).

Occupancy

No.1, 3 and 4 Batteries – not applicable.

No.2 Battery – part occupied/ in use.

No.5 Battery – unknown, probably part vacant.

Current use(s)

Most of the southern part of No.1 Battery survives on the northern edge of a mobile home (Stokes Bay Home Park).

No.2 Battery is used as partly Stokes Bay Home Park caravan/chalet park, and also the Diving Museum.

The site of No.3 Battery (demolished) is a private garden on the corner of Palmerston Avenue/ Jellicoe Way.

No.4 Battery (demolished) is used a stables/paddock for horses.

No.5 Battery remained a military research facility until it was closed in 2012. It is fenced off within a light industrial area (Google Maps website).

Development proposals

It is report that No.5 Battery may be developed in the near future into housing or industrial use (The News Website 2014), but no planning applications were identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

No.1 and No.5 Batteries are Scheduled Monuments, and No.2 Battery is Grade II Listed, as such they are of Considerable significance.

No.3 and No.4 Batteries were demolished in the 20th century, and are of little significance. Although there is potential for surviving below-ground archaeology.

Collectively, the Stokes Bay Lines are considered to be of considerable significance, because the alignment of the Stokes Bay Line is still possible to discerned in the landscape. The survival of some of the batteries enhance understanding of the aesthetic value of the lines. The Stokes Bay Lines also have group value with other Royal Commission fortifications in and enhance understanding of the defence of Gosport.

The batteries have evidential and historical value, No.1 Battery is of particular interest as it has rare cement revetments which is a unique feature for an 1860s open battery. The battery survives reasonably well retaining the tunnel which connects it to No.2 Battery. No.5 Battery also survives well, and has undergone phases of reconstruction to meet the rapid changes in armament.

References

Google Street View 2012, Google maps

VF website

PF website

PastScapes website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Eastney Batteries (East and West) (OA62)

County Hampshire
District Portsmouth
Parish Portsmouth
NGR SZ 6674 9871
Group Portsmouth, Sea Defences Inner Line

PASTSCAPE#	461967
HER#	19071 (both), 41609 (East)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1001830: Eastney forts and perimeter defences of barracks East Battery Grade II Listed (list entry number 1387041), West Battery Grade II Listed (list entry number 1387042)
Recommendations	None.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The Eastney Forts are part of the 'Portsea Island' group of forts within the inner line of Portsmouth's defence. These were not built as a result of the 1859 Royal Commission but did receive improvements because of it. Others within the group include: Fort Cumberland, Southsea Castle, Point Battery and Hilsea Lines.

Brief History

Completed in 1863 to command the entrance to Langstone Harbour and the waters of Spithead to the east of Horse Sand Fort.

Both batteries were to be manned in time of need by marines from the barracks. The armament was virtually the same with the exception of the provision of Maxim machine guns on parapet mountings in 1898 to the west battery.

The main magazines of both forts were reinforced in the early 1900s by partial infilling on the seaward site. Each fort received a 6-inch BL of 5 tons on a hydropneumatic disappearing mounting Mark IV with associated Battery Command Post and telephone room on top of the cavalier.

By 1907 the east battery had only its 6-inch BL remaining and this was removed in April of that year. Little is known of its history from then on but it was occupied for some years up to the 1980s by the Royal Navy, who used it for traning personnel on the use of RADAR.

The batteries were not armed during either of the World Wars.

Outline Description

The two batteries were constructed as mirror images with a dry ditch. They acted as beach defence and were connected to each other by a parapet, and covered way which also provided protection for the barracks and parade ground.

The outer walls are constructed of brick with galleted panels of flint. Stone is used in structural openings such as the embrasures. A brick lined and vaulted magazine was built below ground in each fort and their position may well indicate the position of cavalier bastions. Both forts have been heavily altered, particularly the East Fort, which now contains several brick buildings from the 1930s and 1940s when the fort was used by HM Signal School for development of radar and, during the war, by the Admiralty Signals Establishment for naval radar.

Condition

East Fort – fair

All of the buildings on the parade have been demolished. The southeast bastion has been partly demolished where the main seafront road encroaches on the site. The north-west caponier and south-west bastion are covered by the infilling of the moat to the top of the carnot wall. In 2002 the PFS began restoring some of the gun positions to their original profile.

West Fort - good.

It served for some years as the gardens of the Commanding Officer Royal Marines Eastney Barracks and until recently the hydropneumatic disappearing gun pit was used to contain a greenhouse whilst the magazines were employed as a toolstore and the artillery store was used as a potting shed. The moat and left (east) caponier have been completely removed. The south and west moat and the open bastions at the south east and south west angles have been filled in to the level of the carnot wall

Trend

The East Fort – improving, following restoration by the PFS.

The West Fort - stable.

Setting

Located at the esplanade at Eastney, to the east of the entrance of Portsmouth harbour. They retained their historic context with the barracks situated to the rear.

Threats

Decay of fabric - the forts have been compromised by infilling and demolition, and consideration needs to be given to the future preservation of the surviving elements of the forts.

Deterioration/ in need of management.

Possible threat from coastal erosion.

Ownership

The east battery is owned by the MOD (Government Agency), and serves as the Royal Marines Museum.

The west fort is in private ownership, in 1993 it was sold with the provision that with would not be developed, but in 1996 the site began to be cleared to create a private garden.

Occupancy

The East Battery - part occupied/ in use.

West Battery – part occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

East Battery used as private gardens for residents in Teapot Row, Clocktower Drive. It is currently being restored.

The west battery is the Royal Marines Museum.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Both batteries are Scheduled Monuments and are both Grade II Listed.

The west battery is of enhanced evidential value as it survives in better condition than the east battery, and is well maintained. Both batteries are an important element of the 'Portsea Island' group of fortifications, although they did not represent particular historical or aesthetic qualities. There period of use was relatively short-lived and neither battery played a defensive role in the World Wars.

References

Google Street View website

VF website

PF website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Blockhouse (OA63)

County Hampshire
District Gosport
Parish Gosport
NGR SZ 626 993
Group Portsmouth, Spitbank

PASTSCAPE#	462035
HER#	19017
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1001873: Fort Blockhouse
	Fort Blockhouse lies within a Conservation Area.
Recommendations	Consideration needs to be given to the future development of the fort and the impact of environment factors.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the widern Spitbank defences, also included within this wider group are: Browndown Battery, Fort Monckton, Nodes Point Battery and Puckpool Mortar Battery. Four Spitbank seaforts are also included within this group: Horse Sand Fort, Spitbank Fort, No Man's Land Fort and St Helen's Fort.

Brief History

Fort Blockhouse is one of the original defences of the principal entrance to Portsmouth Harbour, which began as a tower erected in the reign of Edward VI. In 1744 the fort was reported to be in a dilapidate state, but was improved to take 24 guns in 1750. It was enlarged and improved, and by 1805 carried fifteen 36-pdr and fifteen 18-pdr guns, demonstrating its prominent defensive role. In the mid-18th century it became known as Fort Blockhouse.

The 1859 Commission made no changes and recommended no new weapons suggesting a degrading of defensive role. In 1867 its armament still consisted of 32-pdr SB, and no heavy RML guns were ever installed. In 1875 the Royal Engineers took over Blockhouse as a sea-mining base and by 1880 the 4th Company were quartered in Blockhouse. New buildings were added and piers built along the creek.

The Portsmouth Militia Division (Submarine Miners) moved from Monckton to Blockhouse in 1892. In the 1890s Fort Blockhouse continued to be armed, and in 1892 there was a proposal to update the fort with quick-firing guns, but in 1899 it was dismantled temporarily. Between 1901 and 1910 five 12-pdr were in place. The Submarine Mining Establishment became superfluous when the Navy took over responsibility for submarine training in 1904/5.

By the First World War it had lost its value as a coastal defence work and was in the hands of the Royal Navy, who used it from then on as a submarine depot. It was however armed during the First World War, including a 4-inch anti-aircraft gun in 1916.

Outline Description

A date stone above the main gateway, suggests the present Fort Blockhouse was reformed in 1813. In 1825 Fort Blockhouse was converted to a granite casemated battery for thirteen guns firing through embrasures (Moore 2014).

Between 1817-20 the west demi-bastion was widened towards the sea and the open seaward battery of 19 guns was enclosed in casements shortly afterwards, and reduced to 13 embrasures. The north-west and north-east sides were still palisaded at this time, but this was remedied by 1832, and these sides were enlarged with casements between 1840-5. In 1845 the Times reported that when finished Fort Blockhouse would be 'one of the best fortified positions on the coast' (Moore 2014).

By 1863, the fort had reached its final state, with an upper floor battery raised on brick arches, above the lower embrasures on the south-east side.

Condition

Good.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located at the end of a spit of land on the western side of the entrance Portsmouth Harbour, Fort Blockhouse lies directly opposite old Portsmouth to the east. It is surrounded by sea with frontages onto the Solent and Haslar Lake, it is connected to Gosport by Haslar Road and Dolphin Way.

Fort Blockhouse is within the Haslar Peninsula which also comprises of the former Royal Hospital Haslar and the Haslar Marine Technology Park.

Threats

Flood/coastal erosion: Fort Blockhouse lies within a flood zone, including flood zones 1, 2 and 3 (Gosport Local Plan 2011-2014, *Strategic Flood Risk Assessment, Level 1, June 2014*, pp 42 and 44). Significant improvements in flood defences will be required.

Parts of the Fort Blockhouse sites experience 'medium wave energy' and part are identified as having a 'high impact' from surface water run off. (Gosport Local Plan 2011-2014, *Strategic Flood Risk Assessment, Level 1, June 2014*, p 43).

The MOD has notified the Borough Council that it intends to release the Blockhouse site although timescales and details are not known at this stage (investingosport website).

The site is identified as a development site within the Gosport Local Plan which is a potential threat to the fort. Policy LP3 identifies it as a brownfield site with 'priority' for development for 'mixed use leisure/ maritime led'. It states – 'Blockhouse will also offer new opportunities for tourism, leisure, and marine employment and training' (Gosport Borough Local Plan 2011-2029, pp 26 and 36).

Further threats to the fort are difficult to determine as access is restricted, and information therefore limited.

Ownership

Government Agency. MOD.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

The Submarine mining establishment HMS Dolphin (MOD) was at the base until 1989/99.

The Fort Blockhouse sites is divided into three parcels of land described accordingly in the Gosport Local Plan –

'Blockhouse 1 (former HMS Dolphin) includes a Submarine Escape Training Tank and 33 Field Hospital as well as MOD administration, training and sports and welfare facilities. Blockhouse 2 includes the RN Submarine Museum and the Joint Services Adventurous Sailing Training Centre (JSASTC)....Blockhouse 3 (former HMS Hornet) is separated from Blockhouse 1 and 2 by Haslar Road and is used jointly by the JSASTC and the Hornet Sailing Club primarily as a boatyard'.

Development proposals

Fort Blockhouse lies within the 'development allocation' of the Gosport Local Plan (2011-2029). Fort Blockhouse is identified as a 'heritage/ maritime led regeneration site' (Gosport Local Plan 2011-2014, *Strategic Flood Risk Assessment, Level 1, June 2014*, p 39).

Summary of Significance

The fort is of exceptional significance.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument and lies within a Conservation Area.

Fort Blockhouse is of exceptional significance as a military installation which is multi-phase that has been built and extended over a long time span. It originated in the reign of Edward VI and is one of the original defences of the principal entrance to Portsmouth Harbour. It is of clear historical value, and reflects the development of military installations to meet the changing threats and developments in weaponry.

Fort Blochouse survives well, and is of clear evidential and aesthetic value, it is also of communal value as an establishment that has remained under military control and occupation.

References

VF website

PF website

Hogg 1974

PastScapes website

Fortgilkicker website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Brockhurst (OA64)

County	Hampshire
District	Gosport
Parish	Gosport
NGR	SU 5960 0204
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight Coast Defences

PASTSCAPE#	234453
HER#	19716
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1013401: Fort Brockhurst
Recommendations	Threat of decay of fabric and uncontrolled plant growth which requires action and monitoring.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the western flank 'Gosport Advance Line' (including Fort Gomer, Fort Grange, Fort Rowner, Fort Brockhurst and Fort Elson) to defend the western approaches to Portsmouth Harbour.

Brief History

Fort Brockhurst was designed, together with its sister forts, Grange and Rowner, by William Crossman. It was constructed between 1858 and 1862. Fort Brockhurst is an example of the practical application of Jervois's theories in works designed before 1860, which were a set of observations in the better defence of England following advances in technology, particularly the introduction of the first modern gun (Armstrong's gun) in 1858.

In 1859 the defences were reviewed by the Royal Commission who recommended that two further forts should be built to the west of the three currently under construction as they were not deemed to be far enough away from the dockyard to provide it with adequate protection. Ultimately because of expense, the recommended western forts were not built.

In 1882, the overwhelmed Army Discharge Depot moved into Forts Brockhurst and Elson. Over the following forty years the forts accommodation was adapted by the staff for the processing of the vast amounts of servicemen.

Fort Brockhurst's role changed at the start of the First World War when it served as a demobilisation centre at the end of the war. After the war it was used as a depot and barracks for a variety of regiments, with further sheds and buildings being erected upon the parade. The fort was in use by the Army until 1957.

Outline Description

Fort Brockhurst is an early British example of a polygonal fort and features a circular keep of last resort built in the middle of its gorge. It has a wet ditch. The fort's ramparts, gun ramps, keep and parade ground are all well preserved.

Brockhurst Fort was built within the crescent shaped rampart, containing the offensive gun positions, is an extensive series of casemated barrack rooms. The

central parade is divided into three sections by two long earthen gun ramps, which also act as traverses. The shoulders of the fort house the main magazines whilst the north and south flanks provide accommodation for officers and NCOs as well as gun casemates for flank defence. On the ramparts, at the flanks, are two Haxo casemates, one on each flank.

Condition

Good.

The fort remains largely unaltered.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Fort Brockhurst is situated at the north of Gosport, although there is some green space to the west of the fort, it is now largely surrounded by later development.

Threats

Decay of fabric:

- Water ingress from the earthworks into the casemates causing mould and damp (Braddock pers comm 2016)
- The ramparts have slumped into the gun emplacements in several areas causing localised flooding (Braddock pers comm 2016)
- Dry rot in areas where wood has penetrated the brickwork (Braddock pers comm 2016)

Uncontrolled plant growth:

- Difficulty in managing vegetation on the outer edges of the fort (Braddock pers comm 2016)

Ownership

English Heritage. On licence from Historic England until 2023.

Current use(s)

English Heritage curatorial store for the south-west and south-east region. Open to the public occasionally between April-September and has a small museum within the Regimental Institute building and several set dressed spaces within the casemates.

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Fort Brockhurst has strong evidential and aesthetic value as an early British example of a polygonal fort, which survives in good condition and is largely unaltered.

Fort Brockhurst (with Popton Fort in Milford Haven), is of historical value as a practical example of the development of fortification construction following the introduction of new technology in weaponry. It demonstrates Jervois's theories for improved defences designed before 1860, following the introduction of the first modern gun (Armstrong's gun) in 1858. For example, that forts should be defensible by a comparatively small number of men.

Fort Brockhurst however by the1880s did not play a defence role, from when it was used as a discharge depot and later as a demobilisation centre.

The fort also has group value as one of the Gosport Advance line, it is of the same construction as forts Grange and Rowner. Of these three forts Brockhurst is the best surviving example.

References

Braddock, Pam, 2016, pers comms (Curator for English Heritage at Fort Brockhurst)

VF website

PF website

Hogg 1974

Saunders 1989

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Cumberland (OA65)

County	Hampshire
District	Portsmouth
Parish	Portsmouth
NGR	SZ 6826 9925
Group	Portsmouth, Sea Defences Inner Line

PASTSCAPE#	461961
HER#	6590
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1015700: Fort Cumberland Grade II* Listed (list entry number 1104273) 3 Listed Buildings
Recommendations	The building is on the HAR register, and careful management is need to prevent further deterioration. The improvement of coastal defences may impact the setting of the fort which requires consideration. This may also impact surviving below-ground archaeology relating to the earlier fort.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Fort Cumberland is part of the 'Portsea Island' group of forts, these were not built as a result of the 1859 Royal Commission but did receive improvements because of it. Others within the group include: Eastney Batteries, Southsea Castle, Point Battery and Hilsea Lines.

Geographically, the Eastney Forts are situated further along the coastline to the west of Fort Cumberland.

Brief History

The fort was erected to guard the entrance to Langstone Harbour, east of the Dockyard of Portsmouth on the south coast of England. It was sited to protect the Royal Navy Dockyard, by preventing enemy forces from landing in Langstone Harbour and attacking from the landward side.

The first fort on the site was built by the Duke of Cumberland. Although there did previously exist an earthwork battery on the site, built in 1714. The extant fort was completed in 1785 and was the brainchild of the 3rd Duke Richmond. In the course of construction all traces of the original fort were destroyed, with the exception of the guard house and store room, both of which were incorporated into the new design.

By the late 1850s, the development of rifled cannon had rendered the fort's smooth bored muzzle loading ordnance obsolete. In late 1858 the fort was transferred from the War Department to the Board of Admiralty and, in 1859 it became the headquarters of the Royal Marine Artillery. Between 1860 and 1861, the defences were improved to accommodate new muzzle loaded Armstrong guns.

Between 1886 and 1892, major modifications were made to three of the bastions to accommodate new armaments, 6-inch BL Mk IV guns on Mark

IV Hydropneumatic Disappearing mountings. These modifications included cutting down the bastions and infilling them internally, and the creation of new magazines underneath. By 1892, the fort was equipped with three 6-inch BL guns, two 9-inch RML guns and one 64-pdr gun

The Royal Marine Artillery's permanent association with the fort began in 1817, and during the Great War became the base for its Howitzer and anti-aircraft Brigade.

Cumberland Battery

To the south of the ravelin a high angle fire battery was inserted into the glacis between

1890 to 1894, using older 9-inch RML guns (from the 1860s) on special high angle mountings. The theory was that shells fired from such guns could plunge onto the relatively lightly-armoured decks of attacking ships, which would have to anchor to bombard the Portsmouth Naval Dockyard effectively. A small number of trial carriages were built to test the idea, and two of these, the Mark I and Mark II, were then installed in the purpose-built concrete emplacements at Fort Cumberland. Only one of each carriage was ever made, so the emplacements at Fort Cumberland are unique, and the differences in carriage designs is reflected in the differences between the two emplacements. Rapid advances in the design of naval ships and artillery during this period meant that the battery was obsolete by 1905, and disarmed by 1907.

Fort Cumberland remained in military ownership for most of the twentieth century, serving as a base for the Royal Marine Artillery howitzer and anti aircraft brigade, and later for the Royal Marine Mobile Naval Base Defence Organisation, as an experimental and training centre. Beginning in 1938, Fort Cumberland also provided space for the Inter-Service Training and Development Centre. In 1975 it was taken under the Guardianship of English Heritage.

Outline Description

Fort Cumberland is a pentagonal artillery fortification with a dry ditch. It has five bastions and a ravelin on the western side, it occupies an enclosed area of 24 acres.

Defences support the main armament of the fort, it is stone-faced with a brick parapet, with earthworks covering casemates, located mainly on the western side of the fort. Four of the five lengths of curtain have central gates and the fifth - Land Curtain - is now pierced by a modern vehicle entrance. The flanks of the five bastions have embrasures to provide enfilading fire along the curtains.

Beyond the ramparts on all but the western, landward, side is a dry ditch, the outer-face of which is brick-lined. The entrance in the left, seaward, curtain is approached by a road which crosses a place of arms and the ditch. The defences for this entrance were later strengthened by the construction of Pivot Battery housing a 10-inch RML gun. On the western side of the fort is a ravelin

designed to cover approaches from the landward side. Beyond both ditch and ravelin is a glacis which partly survives.

Cumberland Battery

Cumberland Battery is a high-angle battery, one of only installed in the country. The battery consists of two gun emplacements for 9-inch 12-ton RML guns, each adapted to take a particular mark of mounting. Behind the two gun positions is an Artillery Group Store constructed in the glacis of the Fort moulded into the concrete apron of the gun emplacements are two cartridge recesses and a telephone shelter. The battery was surrounded on three sides with a barbed wire fence.

In 2014 HE cleared a very small proportion of the rampant vegetation, which showed that the remains of the battery are relatively well-preserved beneath. Structures relating to the battery are also extant including the Artillery Group Store.

Condition

Poor.

The building is at the HAR register at category 'C', 'slow decay, no solution agreed'.

The HE BAR register states:

> *'The Guardhouse has been repaired and is now partly in use. The casemates are suffering from water ingress and associated decay. In addition there is localised deterioration of the Fort's defences, particularly the curtain and counterscarp, with areas of falling material, loose bricks and masonry and exacerbated by vegetation growth. A condition survey was carried out in 2014, and works to define a programme of works are currently underway'.*

A condition survey was carried out in 2014, and works to define a programme of works are currently underway.

Trend

Declining

Setting

Fort Cumberland is located on the south coast of England, on Portsea Island, east of the Dockyard of Portsmouth. It sits directly on the coastline and is largely surrounded by a buffer of green area with a marina and leisure area to its rear and west.

Threats

Decay of fabric –

- The casemates are suffering from water ingress and associated decay.
- Localised deterioration of the Fort's defences, particularly the curtain and counterscarp, with areas of falling material, loose bricks and masonry.

Uncontrolled plant growth.

- Deterioration/ in need of management - a condition survey was carried out in 2014, and works to define a programme of works are currently underway.
- Development proposals – an application for coastal defences may impact the setting of Fort Cumberland (*see* development proposals below). The work may expose important elements of the fort which require archaeological recording.

Ownership

English Heritage (or HE).

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in use

Current use(s)

Historic England's research establishment with three departments: Archaeology, Archaeological Science and Archaeological Archives. Open to the public occasionally during open days.

Development proposals

There is a planning application awaiting decision: 16/00255/FUL, Feb 2016: Replacement of existing coastal sea defences with a rock revetment. This is noted on planning documents as having the possibility of impacting the setting of Fort Cumberland.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II* Listed. Many of the surrounding buildings for example the Guard House, Hospital and Officers' Quarters, are Listed Grade II.

Fort Cumberland is of clear evidential and aesthetic value, it is little altered from its original condition and is one of the most impressive pieces of 18th century defensive architecture remaining in England.

It is also of clear historical value as one of the last self-contained fully bastioned fortress constructed in England, and the first to provide casemated ordnance. Fort Cumberland (and Fort Monkton) demonstrate the important modifications which had taken over bastioned fortifications towards the end of the 18th century. These are chiefly characterised by - the move towards separating offensive fire from defensive, which implied the conscious identification of ditch defences.

the adoption of bombproof casemates for guns as well as for barrack purposes

the outworks were to be the springboard of active defence as well as incorporating the function of the glacis to protect the rampart scarp from direct fire.

Fort Cumberland has a long period of military use and upgrading to meet the changing needs of warfare.

The High Angle Battery at Fort Cumberland is noteworthy, it is one of only six built in the country. The batteries were designed as a response to increasingly armoured enemy warships, and surviving batteries are representative of a short but clearly-defined period of use and are examples of cutting edge fortification technology. Large amounts of vegetation were removed from the battery in 2014, which showed that the battery is well preserved beneath.

Also, within the Portsmouth area, Steynewood High-Angle Battery and New Needles High-Angle battery survives. Within the Portland group, Verne High-Angle battery is also extant. These batteries are rare installations and survivals, and this rarity greatly enhances their significance.

The historical value of the Fort Cumberland high angle battery is enhanced by the unique carriage design, and the recent documentary research of its history and use. This battery also enhances the significance of Fort Cumberland, illustrating its long defence use and the rapid advances in technology and engineering in response to changes in threat.

References

Saunders 1989

VF website

PF website

HE website

Wikipedia website

dayofarchaeology.com/high-angle-fire/

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Fareham (OA66)

County	Hampshire
District	Fareham
Parish	Fareham
NGR	SU 572 048
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight Coast Defence

PASTSCAPE#	234459
HER#	6144
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1001856: Fort Fareham Grade II Listed (list entry number 1094240)
Recommendations	The fort is of the HAR register, it is impacted by its use as an industrial estate and surrounding expansion. Careful consideration needs to be given to its future preservation and setting.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Fort Fareham was built to form the link between the Gosport Advance Line, the Outer Line on Portsdown Hill and the advance works in front of the Gosport Line.

Brief History

Fort Fareham is a Palmerston fort, constructed following recommendations by the Royal Commission, to build an outer line of three more forts two miles in advance of the Gosport Advanced Line. Of these three projected forts only Fort Fareham was built due to the need to cut costs. It acted as a hinge between the forts on Portsdown Hill and those of the Gosport Advanced Line, filling the gap at Fareham.

The fort was completed in 1868. Seventeen of the rampart guns positions were built into Haxo Casemates, with most of them being fully enclosed. As initially built, the fort had forty-one gun positions on the ramparts, fifteen in the caponiers, seven in the redan and a three position casemated mortar battery. Later some of the rampart gun positions were rebuilt as five Moncrieff gun pits, again to give the gun crews better protection from enemy fire. The barrack accommodation, main magazines and expense magazines were all built buried into the ramparts.

With the town of Fareham blocking the defence line to Fort Wallington (2,500 yards to the northeast), it was decided in the 1890s that Fort Fareham should have mobile artillery (40-pdr RBL and 4-inch BL), so that the defences could be pushed out to advanced positions in case of attack.

From the 1900s until after the Second World War the fort was used as barracks for various Army units, with the 108th (Heavy) Battery RGA being in occupation in 1911.

Outline Description

A land fort with a wet ditch, this was intended to be wet but problems with obtaining and holding water in this meant that for much of its life the northern portion remained dry.

In trace Fort Fareham is a pentagon with a west facing rampart for the main armament, and a north flanking rampart with armament to command the Fareham gap towards Fort Wallington. The design of this fort had to reflect its isolated position as a link between the Portsdown forts and the Gosport Advance Line. To act as a link in the defence system Fort Fareham had to cover a field of fire of 270 degrees, and because of this the fort had to be designed with features to protect the gun positions from possible shell fire from the rear.

The ramparts to the south were subject to enfilade fire and were therefore given a greater measure of protection by hiding the guns in a complex range of Haxo casemates. This fort is the only one of the Palmerston Forts to receive such a concentration of Haxo casemates.

The ditch is ably protected by a grand caponier to the west with smaller demi-caponiers at the north, southwest and south salient angles. A decision was made in the later stages of construction that resulted in the choice of a redan at the rear, closing the gorge of the fort, rather than a self-contained keep, like those of the inner three forts of the Gosport Advanced Line.

Condition

Poor.

Fort Fareham is on the HAR register at category 'A' - immediate risk of further rapid deterioration or loss of fabric; no solution agreed

In the 1970s the ramparts were cleared of vegetation by bulldozing it flat. All of the earth was stripped from the Haxo casemates, together with the earth forming the parapets and merlons, leaving the gun emplacements and expense magazines devoid of cover. One Haxo casemate was completely removed.

The guard room and gateway were demolished together with the stables, sling wagon shed, movable armament shed, vehicle shed and portions of the parados before an injunction prevented further damage. The parade of the fort is entirely covered with Fort Fareham Business Park. The casemates are intact but have been converted to modern industrial units.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Fort Fareham is located within Gosport to the south-west of Fareham, on land immediately to the west of Salterns Creek. It is surrounded by an area of green, with residential areas, industrial buildings and HMS Collingwood immediately beyond this.

Threats

Decay of fabric: the fort is in very poor condition, a number of buildings in a ruinous state. It is on the HE 'Buildings at Risk Register'.

Deterioration/ in need of management – the rampart and moat is a neglected open site.

Uncontrolled plant growth in open site.

Development (indirect/ setting) - modern industrial buildings, car parks, depots and access roads are encroaching on the fort.

Vandalism.

Ownership

Exterior of the fort owned by the local authority. Interior of the fort is Commercial owners in its function as a business/ industrial estate.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Part occupied/ in-use. Used as an industrial estate. Most of the casemates and caponiers are let as individual business units. The parade has been covered with modern buildings, again let as business units.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II Listed.

The evidential value of the fort has however been compromised by demolition in the 1970s, and today it remains in a deteriorating condition. The fort is of some historical interest as being the only one of the Palmerston Forts to receive such a high concentration of Haxo casemates. However, it is not of particular historical, aesthetic or communal value when compared to other forts of its type.

References

VF website

PF website

Wikipedia website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Grange (OA67)

County	Hampshire
District	Gosport
Parish	Gosport
NGR	SU 5905 0023
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight Coast Defences

PASTSCAPE#	234447
HER#	6419, 19663
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1001807: Fort Grange Grade II Listed (list entry number 1233816)
Recommendations	Deteriorating condition requires management.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the western flank 'Gosport Advance Line' (including Fort Gomer, Fort Grange, Fort Rowner, Fort Brockhurst and Fort Elson).

After Gomer and Elson were built, three more forts were built to fill the gap, and Grange is the most southerly of these three. It was built as part of the outer defence line for Gosport along with Fort Brockhurst and Fort Elson, and it also identical in construction to these two forts.

In construction Fort Grange is virtually identical with Forts Brockhurst and Rowner.

Brief History

Fort Grange is a Palmerston Fort constructed between 1858 and 1863.

Grange served as an army barracks and was the HQ of the Gosport Sub District Royal Artillery. In 1914 the Royal Flying Corps was stationed at the fort and nearby Grange airfield. It then became part of RAF Station Gosport in 1918.

The RAF used the fort in the Second World War, it served as the headquarters for 7 Group Coastal Command from 1940 to 1945 and was known as 'Aeronautics Gosport'. It was incorporated into HMS Siskin in 1946 as a Naval Air Station, and was the home of first British Helicopter Squadron. It became part of HMS Sultan in 1956

Outline Description

Fort Grange is described within the HE Listed Building (HE website) entry –

'A polygonal fort, 6-sided and symmetrical, formerly surrounded by 2 moats, of which only part of the inner one around the keep survives. The 2 outer lines make a very obtuse angle, at which point a caponier projects; this has a series of rifle loops above 3 gun casemates, facing the line of the former moat. The north-west and south-west shoulders are approached by ramps from a central position; at these points caponiers face the moat of the flanks. From the flanks small barrack ranges follow the lines of the gorge,

continuing as a high wall across the moat of the keep. The general section of the main lines had a moat and then an earthen rampart supported at the rear by storage casemates, still intact; the top had open gun emplacements with interior sunken and vaulted expense magazines. The flanks are of 2-storeys, with Haxo casemates above a series of ground level casemates. The circular 'keep of last resort' is surrounded by a moat; the outer face has gun loops and several rifle loops, some within small caponiers. The centre of the keep is a circular courtyard with a 2-storeyed barrack elevation; a roadway passes along the axis, crossing the moat (now partly filled) via drawbridges, and has round-arched portals. The high earthwork above the keep provided gun emplacements, capable of firing across the parade'.

The fort is described as 'much altered' (VF website).

Condition

Poor.

The fort is derelict and overgrown in some areas. There are many surviving details and the main structure is intact, however, the earthworks have been much reduced from the top of the casemates to prevent water ingress. Much of the moat is also infilled.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Situated to the west of Gosport, sandwiched between Grange Road and Military Road. Today it is surrounded by residential housing and the complex of HMS Sultan.

Threats

Uncontrolled plant growth

Deterioration/ in need of management - derelict, vacant site.

Decay of fabric.

Ownership

Government Agency. The fort is still owned and occupied by the Royal Navy as part of HMS Sultan.

Current use(s)

Still used by the Royal Navy. The HMS Sultan VCC (Voluntary Cadet Corps) uses the fort. The parade ground contains three tennis courts and one football pitch (Google Earth 2016).

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in use.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II Listed.

Fort Grange has group value as part of the Gosport Advance Line, but survives less well than Fort Brockhurst which is of exceptional significance, and is largely unaltered. The evidential and aesthetic value of Fort Grange has been compromised by the reduction of the earthworks from the top of the casemates to prevent water ingress and the infilling of the moat.

References

VF website

PF website

Google Earth 2016

Saunders 1989

Hogg 1974

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Nelson (OA68)

County Hampshire
District Gosport
Parish Gosport
NGR SU 607 072
Group Portsmouth, Isle of Wight Coast Defences

PASTSCAPE#	238616
HER#	10652
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1001860: Fort Nelson Grade I Listed (list entry number 1350616)
Recommendations	None

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

One of five polygonal forts built to protect the heights of Portsdown including Fort Fareham, Fort Wallington, Fort Nelson, Fort Southwick and Fort Widley. The line was finished off at the eastern end with Crookhorn Redoubt and Farlington Redoubt.

Brief History

The fort was constructed between 1861 and 1870. As a land fort, Fort Nelson was little used. The fort was disarmed in 1907 and then used for accommodation. It was occupied from 1905 to 1914 by 35 (heavy) Battery Royal Garrison Artillery.

In 1938, it was converted to an area anti-aircraft ammunition store, and abandoned in the 1950s.

Outline Description

A polygonal Parlmerston Fort with a dry ditch.

Fort Nelson is a six sided fort, built of brick, chalk and earth, protected by a deep dry ditch, revetted on the scarp but unrevetted on the counterscarp. This ditch is protected by a full fish tail shaped caponier in the salient of the main north rampart and two smaller demi caponiers at the shoulders. The main rampart has positions for 64-pdr RML guns, 7-inch RBL guns and 6.6-inch howitzers. Each flank also has a Haxo casemate for two 7-inch RBL guns (the only one of the Portsdown forts to have this feature). The intermediate range defence of the fort is from three mortar batteries, one to the rear of each caponier, hidden within the rampart.

Each contained three 13-inch mortars. The lower fighting levels consist of three separate tunnels running from the barrack block area through the chalk of the hill to the caponiers. The centre tunnel to the full caponier also passes through the main magazine 40ft beneath the parade ground. The centre of the gorge is closed with a barrack block and redan containing officers quarters

Condition

Good.

It is actively conserved.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

It is located above the village of Portchester between Forts Wallington and Southwick. It lies to the north of the M27 between Gosport and Portsmouth, and is surrounded by fields with little encroachment of modern development.

Threats

None identified.

Ownership

Local Authority. Hampshire County Council purchased the fort in 1988 from the MOD following a fire.

Current use(s)

Hamphire County Council restored it at a cost of £3-4million, and it opened to the public in 1994. It is leased by the Council to the Royal Armouries, becoming part of the Royal Armouries in 1995. It houses their collection of artillery. The Palmerston Forts Society is also based at the fort.

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade I Listed.

Fort Nelson is of evidential and aesthetic value, as it survives well and is actively conserved. As the base of the Palmerston Forts Society within this historic building, it also has communal value. Fort Nelson is also of group value with the other forts which make up the Portsdown group of defences. With Fort Widley it is considered to be one of the best surviving examples of the Portsdown group of forts.

References

VF website

PF website

Wikipedia website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Purbrook (OA69)

County	Hampshire
District	Havant
Parish	Havant
NGR	SU 678 064
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight Coast Defence

PASTSCAPE#	238454
HER#	6948, 23276, 26732
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1001842: Fort Purbrook, including covered-way to east Grade II* Listed (list entry number 1092134)
Recommendations	Consideration needs to be given to the future management and preservation of the fort as it is in poor condition.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Fort Purbrook forms part of the line of forts on Portsdown Hill, along with Forts Widley, Southwick and Nelson. Fort Purbrook lies to the east of Fort Widley, and was originally supported by two small redoubts known as Farlington and Crookhorn, although both have know been demolished

Fort Purbrook occupies the east end of the defensive line to the north of Portsmouth.

Brief History

Fort Purbrook was completed in 1870, following the report of the Royal Commission. It has a similar design to the other forts on the hill, with a large brick barracks facing south and a ditch to the north protected by caponniers. It was armed in 1876, 1893 and 1898 and disarmed in 1907.

In the First World War it was armed with an 18-pdr heavy anti aircraft gun. It was later used as a siege artillery barracks. The Army withdrew in 1925, but the fort returned to active use during World War II as a civil defence and ambulance centre. From 1947 to 1968 the site was then used as a navigational school for the Navy.

Outline Description

The polygonal fort has a seven-sided trace with a dry ditch. Because of its position on the exposed eastern flank of the hill it was constructed to bring more firepower to bear on the north-eastern approaches and its north-east salient is protected by a full caponier with a large five-bay casemated mortar battery behind. The western ditch is protected by a demi caponier whilst the minor branches of the ditch are covered by two musketry caponiers and two musketry galleries crossing the ditch.

A central spiral stair leads from the parade to the underground service tunnels from the caponiers and barrack. The main magazine is off a side tunnel from the central spiral stair. The vulnerability of the fort to its northeast and east led to the construction of two out works to the fort, Crookhorn Redoubt.

Access to both redoubts was by covered ways from Fort Purbrook, although underground tunnels were in the original designs.

The barrack block and redan at Purbrook are almost identical to those at Fort Nelson. However Fort Purbrook does have some unique features, which none of the other Portsmouth forts have:

- Two of the tunnels were equipped with Chicanes. This was a drawbridge that could be raised to completely close the tunnel, leaving a drop ditch to protect the closed bridge.
- The caponiers were also used for experiments in the use of iron shutters to cover gun ports.

Condition

Poor.

The fort has been little altered, however it is understood to be in deteriorating condition.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Situated to the north-east of Portsmouth, and directly to the north of the Porstmouth Down Road. To the east, west and south it is surrounded by an area of green, with an expanse of modern housing beyond this.

Threats

Possible impact including wear and tear, resulting form its use as an outdoor pursuit centre.

The fort is owned by Portsmouth City Council, and leased to a charitable trust as an outdoor activities centre. Problems related to the drainage of the ramparts and the maintenance of the moat's retaining walls put it at risk. HE are working with all parties to address these issues.

Ownership

Local Authority. Portsmouth City Council.

Current use(s)

Used by Peter Ashley Activity Centre (outdoor pursuits centre for children).

Occupancy

Occupied/ in-use.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II* Listed.

The fort is of evidential value as it has been little altered since its construction; however it is understood to be in worsening condition. The fort has historical and evidential value due to the experimental design which is not understood to be evident in other Portsdown Hill group of forts. Unique features include chicanes in two of its tunnels, with a drawbridge and drop pit to close the tunnel and iron shutters to cover the fun ports (still extant).

References

VF website

PF website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Rowner (OA70)

County	Hampshire
District	Gosport
Parish	Gosport
NGR	SU 5929 0113
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight Coast Defence

PASTSCAPE#	234450
HER#	6418
Heritage status	Grade II Listed (list entry number 1233871)
Recommendations	Vegetation needs to be controlled to maintain the structural integrity of the fort. Maintenance of derelict areas needs to be given consideration.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the western flank 'Gosport Advance Line' (including Fort Gomer, Fort Grange, Fort Rowner, Fort Brockhurst and Fort Elson), built to defend the western approaches to Portsmouth Harbour, across the Gosport peninsular.

Brief History

Fort Rowner was designed, together with its sister forts, Grange and Brockhurst, by William Crossman.

Fort Rowner is a Parlmerston Fort completed in 1859, and served much of its life as an army barracks. It was used as the home of the Hampshire Artillery Militia and was used to prepare troops for the Boer War. The fort was manned by companies from the garrison Artillery and in the 1880s it became the Depot of the 2nd Brigade Southern Division RGA. Various regiments were quartered in the fort during the Victorian period as they moved to and from postings in the U.K and the colonies.

The fort was intended to be armed with 53 heavy guns; 19 of these were on the faces, 16 on the flanks, a lower tier of 9 guns in each flanking gallery under the ramparts with a further 30 lighter guns in the keep and caponiers besides four 13-inch mortars on the parade ground. The armament of the fort remained until 1902 when all of the Gosport Advanced Line forts were disarmed.

In 1911 the No.2 Depot Company of the RGA were garrisoned within the fort. In 1916 it was armed with a 6-pdr Hotchkiss heavy anti aircraft gun. It was used by the RAF during the Second World War.

Both Fort Grange and Fort Rowner were incorporated into HMS Siskin in 1945 when the RAF moved out. This in turn became Sultan in 1956 and the forts are still within their jurisdiction.

Outline Description

Fort Rowner is an early British example of a polygonal fort and features a circular keep of last resort built in the middle of its gorge. It has a wet ditch, and was completed in 1862.

It is built within the crescent shaped rampart, containing the offensive gun positions, is an extensive series of casemated barrack rooms. The central parade is divided into three sections by two long earthen gun ramps, which also act as traverses. The shoulders of the fort house the main magazines whilst the north and south flanks provide accommodation for officers and NCOs as well as gun casemates for flank defence. On the ramparts, at the flanks, are two Haxo casemates -one on each flank.

Condition

Poor.

There are many surviving details (iron railings, steps, chimneys and so forth), the whole structure is virtually intact, with only a few losses and some erosion of the earthworks. There are some brick and timber abutments, of recent date, within the parade.

Trend

Declining

Setting

Located with in the north-west area of Gosport, the Fort is sandwiched between Military and Grange roads. It is within the area of HMS Sultan, and surrounding by residential development.

Threats

Uncontrolled plant growth – the keep and the north and south flanking casemates are unused and in an overgrown and derelict state. At various times the undergrowth is removed to reveal the forts features.

Decay of fabric – erosion of earthworks.

Ownership

Government Agency. The Fort is now part of the larger site which forms the Naval/RAF engineering training establishment. Some of the rooms are used by various recreational clubs, the wet moat is used by the Royal Naval and Marines Fishing Club

Current use(s)

Part of Naval/RAF engineering training establishment HMS Sultan. The fort is used for storage, recreational activities and a nursery school (The Worshipful Company of Turners website 2016).

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Fort Rowner is Grade II Listed.

The fort is of clear evidential value as it survives virtually intact with original details, although it is in a deteriorating condition. The fort has group value as part of the Gosport Advance Line, and is of the same construction as forts Brockhurst and Grange, however Fort Brockhurst is considered to be the best surviving example.

References

VF website

PF website

Turnesco website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Southwick (OA71)

County	Hampshire
District	Portsmouth and Winchester (boundary of both)
Parish	Southwark and Widley
NGR	SU 628 069
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight Coast Defences

PASTSCAPE#	238613
HER#	10938
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1003802: Fort Southwick (Hampshire), Scheduled Monument 1001808: Fort Southwick (Portsmouth) Grade I Listed (list entry number 1167213) (Hampshire) Grade I Listed (list entry number 1104368) (Portsmouth)
Recommendations	None

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

One of five polygonal forts built to protect the heights of Portsdown including Fort Farham, Fort Wallington, Fort Nelson, Fort Southwick and Fort Widley. Fort Southwick is located in the centre of the Portsdown Hill line of forts, between Fort Nelson and Fort Widley.

Fort Southwick is the highest fort on the hill, and holds the water storage tanks for the other forts, supplying them via a brick lined aqueduct.

Brief History

Construction was started in 1861 and completed by 1870. It was designed to house a large complement of men (about 220) in a crescent-shaped barrack block.

Like the other Portsdown forts, Southwick saw little in the way of armaments until after the gun positions were modified in the late 1880s. During the upgrade of armaments, the gun emplacements were modified to include nine 64-pdr RML guns for blocked up carriages and two 7-inch RBL on Moncrieff counterweight carriages. No armaments were every received for the ditch or flanking defence.

Although disarmed in 1906, the fort was retained by the military as a barracks, and also used to train soldiers how to capture and hold a fort. It became a demobilisation centre for three years after the First World War.

After the Second World War and up until the 1990s Fort Southwick was used as the headquarters of Commander-in-chief Home Fleet

Outline Description

Both Southwick and Widley are nearly identically built. They are surrounded by a dry ditch which is defended by a full caponier and two demi-caponiers; each having two floors with four guns on each face. Both the scarp and counterscarp walls are revetted in masonry.

Between the top of the scarp wall and the rampart is a chemin-des-rondes, with firing step and, intermittently, flanking galleries. The curved rampart at Southwick was designed to mount 31 heavy guns. To the rear of the fort, the gorge was closed by a large U shaped barrack block and a high, but relatively thin, masonry wall. The design allowed 41 lighter guns to be emplaced within the caponiers and barrack block to provide flanking defensive fire.

Behind each of the demi-caponiers a bomb-proof casemated battery was built, each for five 13-inch mortars. To connect the barracks to the gun positions a number of access tunnels were dug through the chalk, off the central tunnel was located, underground, the main magazine.

Condition

Fair.

The fort is on the HAR register, it is noted as at level D – 'Slow decay; solution agreed but not yet implemented'.

Parts of the monument are in a poor condition. Following disposal by Defence Estates the new owners have carried out some repairs but more are needed.

The fort has been altered with the Parade ground converted into an industrial estate and car park.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located to the north of the M27 between Portsmouth and Gosport. It is situated on the Portsdown Hill Road and surrounded immediately by green space with extensive development to the south and open fields to the north.

Threats

The commercial use of the fort may impact its historic fabric.

Ownership

Commercial. Fort Southwick Company Limited.

Occupancy

Port occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Industrial and commercial estate with several business including Candy King (sweet shop). Also used by the NHS Heath Visiting Service.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Southwick Fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The fort survives fairly well although it has been altered with the parade ground converted into an industrial estate and car park. It is however in a deteriorating condition and on the HAR register, as parts of the monument are in a poor condition and require repair.

The fort has group value with the other Portsdown group, however Fort Nelson and Fort Widley are believed to be a better example as it survives in a more complete condition and is well maintained.

References

VF website

PF website

Google Maps/Streetview

Hogg 1974

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Wallington (OA72)

County	Hampshire
District	Fareham
Parish	Fareham
NGR	SU 588 069
Group	Portsmouth

PASTSCAPE#	234246
HER#	6132
Heritage status	Grade II Listed (list entry number 1094233)
Recommendations	There are planning applications on the council website relating to the re-use of the site, consideration needs to be given to protecting the remains of the fort.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

One of five polygonal forts built to protect the heights of Portsdown including Fort Farham, Fort Wallington, Fort Nelson, Fort Southwick and Fort Widley.

Fort Wallington lies at the western end of the line, in a very exposed position as the fort could be commanded from rising ground to the east and west, and had to act as a lynch pin between the line of Portsdown forts and those on the Gosport peninsular

Brief History

Building of this Palmerston Fort was started in 1861 and completed in 1874.

Like Fort Nelson, Wallington was never armed until after the review in the 1880s. This resulted in the gun positions being upgraded with Moncrieff pits for 7-inch RBL guns being built, three on the western side and one above the mortar battery on the eastern side. Additionally, four C pivot 6 foot parapet concrete emplacements were built on the northern face for 64-pdr RML guns.

Between 1905 and 1914 Fort Wallington was occupied by the 26th (Heavy) Battery Royal Garrison Artillery. During World War Two Wallington served as an annexe to the nearby Victualling Depot.

Outline Description

Fort Wallington is in a vulnerable position as the hinge between the hill forts and the Gosport western defensive line, Wallington had to be designed to repel an attack from all sides. The fort was a six sided work and was the smallest of the hill forts.

Protected by two double storey caponiers and one counterscarp gallery the ditch was revetted in concrete where the scarp galleries had failed. A single mortar battery for six 13-inch mortars was sited at the north east shoulder. The caponiers and mortar battery were serviced by tunnels through the chalk from the rear barrack block and redan sited in the centre of the gorge. Wallington was the only one of the Portsdown forts to have its magazine separate from the tunnel complex. Like the other Portsdown Hill forts the entrances were on two levels, each crossing over the gorge ditch by a Guthrie rolling bridge.

Portsdown Fort was designed to be the smallest of the Portsdown forts; but because of its exposed position it was designed with a number of features that made it different from the other Portsdown forts (listed on the PF website).

The fort is described in the Listed Building description (1094233):

'Eastern part now (1974) demolished and all other earthworks except south facing curtain wall were levelled by road works for the M27 motorway. Built within the hillside with a pointed, or tooth-shaped projection in the centre. Faced with red brick. An earth band above with stone coping. The flanking portions have a castellated parapet. Beyond, are plain blank portions each containing a round-headed "Norman" doorway with flanking stone columns (1 missing) and stone soffit and dripstone above. Flat arched and segmental arched windows'.

Condition

Very bad.

The fort is mostly destroyed apart from a section of wall in the south western corner of the fort.

The fort was purchased by in 1964 and was subsequently predominantly demolished, remaining structural evidence includes the outer wall of the redan and western gateway and within the fort, only the guard room and coal store structures were retained.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The fort is situated to the east of Fareham, to the south of the M27. The remains of the fort are surrounded by an industrial estate and modern housing, and its historic context is now largely lost.

Threats

Encroachment of the industrial estate on the remaining section of the fort

Ownership

Commercial. Fort Wallington Industrial Estate.

Current use(s)

Used as Fort Wallington Industrial Estate.

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use.

Development proposals

There are numerous applications listed on the council planning portal relating to the industrial estate, for example those relating to change of use and demolition.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is Grade II Listed.

The fort is of considerable significance, however its is of lesser evidential value as large parts of it have been destroyed, and it is now in a very bad condition. The historic setting of the fort is largely lost, and it is used as an industrial estate. The fort is of historical value, as it had a number of unique design features not seen in the other Portsdown forts. It is also of group value with the other forts which make up the Portsdown group of defences.Fort Nelson and Fort Widley, which are also part of the Southdown group are considered to be better surviving examples.

References

VF website

PF website

Google Earth 2016

Hogg 1974

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Widley (OA73)

County Hampshire
District Portsmouth
Parish Portsmouth
NGR SU 657 065
Group Portsmouth, Isle of Wight Coast Defences

PASTSCAPE#	238451
HER#	6739
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1001862: Fort Widley Grade II* Listed (list entry number 1387128)
Recommendations	None

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

One of five polygonal forts built to protect the heights of Portsdown including Fort Farham, Fort Wallington, Fort Nelson, Fort Southwick and Fort Widley.

Brief History

The fort was completed in 1870, under the design of William Crossman. Fort Widely is a Palmerston Fort with a dry ditch, which is very similar in construction to Fort Southwick albeit slight differences.

The casemated mortar positions were declared obsolete soon after they were built. Initially they were replaced with open mortar positions on the parade, later the smooth bore mortars were superseded by the rifled howitzers mounted on the ramparts and parade.

Even before they were completed questions arose over the effectiveness of the forts in the face of improving weapons technology and the forts were not fitted with guns until some years after they had been completed. This delay resulted in changes to the fort's planned armament.

Like the other Portsdown forts, Southwick saw little in the way of armaments until after the gun positions were modified in the late 1880s. During the upgrade of armaments, the gun emplacements were modified to include four 64-pdr RML guns for blocked up carriages and two 7-inch RBL on Moncrieff counterweight carriages.

Unlike Forts Nelson and Southwick, Widley did receive most of its armament for the flanking positions, with 32-pdr SBBL in the caponiers and 20-pdr RBL in the flanking positions of the barrack block. Fort Widley was disarmed in 1907.

Fort Widley was used as an Army barracks up until the Second World War, and had a variety of uses during the Second World War and Cold War including as a shadow control centre for the D-Day landing centre and as a Civil Defence HQ in the Cold War.

Outline Description

The following description is taken from the HE list entry description (1387128):

> *'Red brick in English bond, flint, stone dressings. Roofs concealed by earth. Main elevation facing road has to barrack block a brick chimney stack at far left and right with 3 evenly spaced at centre. PLAN: massive polygonal trace plan surrounded on 3 sides by wide dry moat with scarp and counterscarp walls in flint set between bays of brick piers with round relieving arches. Extensive earthworks to ramparts with gun emplacements and expense magazines set within earthworks. Projecting into rear facing moat (north) is a brick caponier with embrasures at centre and to left and right corners (west and east). Underground gallery cut through chalk runs from centre of barrack block leading to underground magazine and thence to a spiral staircase with ammunition hoist rising up to parade level. From spiral staircase, 3 underground galleries lead to centre caponier and west and east mortar batteries'.*

The entry also describes in detail the barrack block.

Condition

Good.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Fort Widley is located on the Portsdown Hill, above the village of Widley.Its historic setting is compromised by the development of Cosham which extends into Portsmouth to the coastline. To the rear of the fort the open landscape has been retained.

Threats

Uncontrolled plant growth.

Potential threat from the use of the fort as an outdoor activity centre.

Ownership

Local Authority. Portsmouth City Council.

Current use(s)

Used by Peter Ashley Activity Centre (outdoor pursuits centre for children) including a riding school. Open occasionally for public tours.

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II* Listed.

The fort is of similar construction to Fort Southwick, but is in a more complete example and in better condition, and therefore is of higher evidential value. It is also of group value with the other forts which make up the Portsdown group of defences. Fort Widley, with Fort Nelson, is considered to be the best surviving example of the Portsdown line of forts.

Fort Widley is also of enhanced historical value because of the role it played in the 20th century during the two world wars, and the Cold War. It was used as a shadow control centre for the D-Day landing centre, and as a Civil Defence HQ in the Cold War.

References

VF website

PF website

Wikipedia website

Saunders 1989

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Hilsea Lines (OA74)

County	Hampshire
District	Portsmouth
Parish	Portsmouth
NGR	SU 650 044
Group	Portsmouth, Sea Defences Inner Line

PASTSCAPE#	238698
HER#	19427
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1001861: Hilsea Lines The Hilsea Lines are a Conservation Area
Recommendations	The Hilsea Lines are on the HAR register at category 'A' requiring immediate action. The Conservation Area Appraisal sets out management guidelines to work towards their preservation, which should be considered.

Type

Bastioned line.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The Hilsea Lines are part of the 'Portsea Island' group of forts, others within the group include: Eastney Batteries, Southsea Castle, Point Battery and Fort Cumberland.

Brief History

The current lines were constructed between 1858 and 1871, they included special fortified bridges for road and rail access. There had been defences at this natural barrier for hundreds of years, when it was proposed to upgrade the line into a substantial bastioned line of rampart and ditch fortifications in 1857.

The design was later approved by the Royal Commission as a second line of defences for the landward front.

During the late 1880's the armaments of the lines were upgraded to include six Moncrieff (CW) disappearing gun pits for 7-inch RML and 7-inch RBL. This were placed in newly constructed emplacements. Five were positioned on the salient's of each bastion with an extra one on the east flank of the East Bastion. The heavier 7-inch RML guns were positioned to cover the ground to the east in order to better protect the approach to Portsmouth from the East. By the early 1900s all of the guns were declared obsolete and removed.

A QF 6-pdr Hotchkiss was mounted on the lines during the First World War. A small number of guns were mounted on the lines during the Second World War.

Outline Description.

The lines, which have a wet ditch, followed the natural canal, called the Hilsea Channel, joining Langston and Portsmouth harbours which cut off Portsea Island from the mainland.

The lines consisted of three full bastions with demi-bastions at each end. The extensive ramparts could mount 168 guns, and within casemates built into each of the bastions, a further 50 guns could be emplaced. The merlons which

covered the embrasures were found to be insufficient protection and alternate embrasures were subsequently blocked. In order to improve the bomb proofing the embrasures of alternate casemates were bricked up to that the external earth merlons could be larger and thicker. Immediately in front of the rampart a ditch 8ft deep and 90ft wide was dug, which was flooded from natural springs.

Condition

Poor.

The Hilsea Lines are on the HAR register, Bastion 5 is identified as in a poor state.The central section of the site, comprising three quarters of the Centre Bastion, and the west side of East Centre Curtain, where the railway enters Portsea Island (all formerly referred to broadly as Bastion 5) are continuing to suffer from vandalism and neglect, largely due to the difficulties presented by very limited access on the south side.

They are classed as category A – 'Immediate risk of further rapid deterioration or loss of fabric; no solution agreed'.

The lines are still intact for most of their length but the extreme east end has been demolished. It is overgrown in sections.

The Conservation Area guidelines (Portsmouth City Council 2009) sets out the history and condition of the Hilsea Lines and has a series of management guidelines in place to ensure their protection.

Trend

Declining.

The HAR register states that: 'Discussions on proposals for the site and access are being held with owners, potential tenants and surrounding land owners'.

Setting

Today the lines are situated to the north of Portsmouth, they are sandwiched between the M27 and residential development to the east. They are however, immediately surrounded by green space.

Threats

Vandalism.

In need of management – the isolated location of some of the lines makes their protection and management problematic, particularly from vandalism.

Decay of fabric - original fabric has been lost, in particular windows and doors within the casemates.

Uncontrolled vegetation

The setting of the Hilsea Lines has been impacted by the encroachment of development, most recently an industrial estate (*see* development proposals below).

Ownership

Local Authority. Portsmouth City Council and Portsmouth Grammar School.

Occupancy

Vacant/ not in use.

Current use(s)

West Demi Bastion is used by Portsmouth Grammar School as a playing field on the south side. To the north of the West Demi Bastion is a recreation park with Hilsea Lido and South Coast Wake Park. The rest of the lines are open and used for nature and leisure activities.

Development proposals

Historic applications on the planning portal relate to the Hilsea Lines Industrial Estate, but none are current.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The lines are a Scheduled Monument.

They are of clear evidential value, as the lines are still intact for most of their length but the extreme east end has been demolished and it is overgrown in sections. The Hilsea Lines are on the HAR register, in particular bastion 5 is in a deteriorating position. Today the lines are of communal value as a recreational feature, they are accessible for most of their length, and the moat is used for fishing.

The lines are also aesthetically striking, the bastions and curtains differ in their plan form but are essentially uniform in character, the length of the lines is an impressive feat of Victorian engineering.

References

Saunders 1989

VF website

PF website

Wikipedia

Portsmouth City Council (2009)

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Horse Sand Fort (OA75)

County	Hampshire
District	Portsmouth
Parish	Portsmouth
NGR	SZ 65558 94938
Group	Portsmouth, Spitbank

PASTSCAPE#	462089
HER#	31406
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1018588: Horse Sand Fort
Recommendations	Possible threat of future residential development which requires consideration.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Pat of the Spitbank Defences. Four sea forts were constructed between 1865 and 1880 to protect Portsmouth and the Solent: St Helen's Fort, Spitbank Fort, Horse Sand Fort and No Man's Land Fort.

Horse Sand Fort and No Man's Land Fort are identical in plan.

Also included within this wider group are: Browndown Battery, Nodes Point Battery, Fort Monckton, Fort Blockhouse and Puckpool Mortar Battery.

Brief History

Horse Sand Fort is a Royal Commission Fort completed in 1880, it has a main armament of twenty-four guns on the lower tier and twenty-five guns on the upper tier.

The original armament was to have been forth five 10-inch and forty-four 12.5-inch RML guns on the gun floors and ten 12-inch RML guns on the roof in five turrets. In fact, the turrets were never built and the limited space meant the 12.5-inch guns had to be operated with less than full charges of powder. In 1882, 12-inch RBL guns were placed in alternate bays.

In 1912 both forts were armed with three 6-inch BL guns. Horse Sand also retained nine of the 12-inch guns and two 12.5-inch guns.

Outline Description

Horse Sand Fort and No Mans land Fort are identical in plan, each having two floors of gun casemates, a basement level containing the shell and cartridge stores and a roof level originally intended to mount guns in five turrets. Built by the same method used for Spitbank Fort, Horse Sand Fort has its foundation on the sea bed of Horse Sand Shoal.

A ring of stone at the top of the sill course rises from the sea bed, contained within the masonry basement were the twenty-four shell stores and fourteen cartridge stores. On top of this the gun floors were constructed with an iron framework supporting iron armour. A central core is separated from the main gun floors by a courtyard containing ancillary rooms and officers' quarters.

Condition

Poor.

The fort is on the HAR register, categorised as 'C - Slow decay; no solution agreed'.

Trend

Declining.

The fort is in decaying, but it is understood the new owners are working towards its restoration.

Setting

The fort is north of the main shipping channel, off Southsea, and surrounded by the sea.

Threats

There is a potential threat from development proposals (*see* below). This may however have a positive impact on the long-term management and condition of the fort.

Coastal erosion.

Decay of fabric.

Ownership

Commercial. Solent Forts, which is part of Amazing Venues (Clarenco LLP).

Occupancy

Unknown.

Current use(s)

Amazing Venues (Clarenco LLP) under the name Solent Forts is restoring the fort as a museum for tours and events (Solent Forts website 2016).

Development proposals

Application given in 2004 for conversion to 14 apartments which had a five year expiry date.

The current plan for the fort appears to be restoration of the fort as a museum.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Horse Sand Fort has evidential value as a well preserved example of its class, although lack of management has resulted in its deterioration and it is on the HAR register.

As part of an integrated sea based defensive line the massive structure of Horse Sand Fort provides a visual reminder of the strategic importance of the Solent in the late 19th century. The sea forts are among the most impressive of the coastal defences, they are a visually commanding structure and is of clear

aesthetic value, and with St Helen's Fort, Spitbank Fort and No Man's Land Fort has group value. It is an exceptional and innovative feat of engineering, and of considerable historic value.

References

VF website

PF website

Solent Forts website 2016

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Hurst Castle, Wing Batteries (OA76)

County	Hampshire
District	New Forest
Parish	Milford on Sea
NGR	SZ 3180 8974
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight Needles Passage

PASTSCAPE#	459358
HER#	22376, 42217
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1015699: Hurst Castle and lighthouse
Recommendations	None

Type

Caste. Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Hurst Castle was built entirely for defending the Needles Passage, and therefore belongs to this group of installations. Also within this group are: Fort Albert (OA83), Fort Victoria (OA85), Cliff End Battery (OA82), New Needles Battery (OA89), Warden Point Battery (OA 97), Freshwater Redoubt (OA86), Culverdown Battery (OA84), Golden Hill Battery (OA87), Hatherwood Battery (OA88) and Lower Old Needles Battery (OA91).

Brief History

The Victorian wing batteries of Hurst Castle were added to the Tudor keep to replace earlier wing batteries that were considered to be too low-lying. A casemated work was recommended by the Royal Commission.

Work began in 1861 and the superstructure was completed by 1870. The wing batteries were not fully armed until 1879 because of the pace of development of bigger and better guns and thicker armour plate on battle ships. Only twenty-one 9-inch guns had been mounted by 1873 when it was proposed to mount more powerful guns, the roof turrets were never fitted. Eventually by 1879, after thicker shields had been fitted, sixteen of the 9-inch guns were removed and heavier 12.5-inch and 10-inch RML guns put in their places.

It seems that supply and finance meant that once in place Hurst was left to wither away, it is probable that with modern armament now provided on the Isle of Wight, Hurst was no longer needed. It is possible that had Hurst been provided with a 9.2 inch gun there was a risk that such a low lying sit a miss could do more harm than good by hitting Sconce Point.

From the 1890s Hurst was abandoned as an armoured work and reverted to use as an Admiralty signal station, and a cross-observation and range finding post for the island batteries.

As the RMLs became obsolete they were gradually withdrawn leaving Hurst with three 12-pdr QF guns and 3 machine guns by 1909, together with a few RMLs as running past guns.

In 1898, 1902 and 1914 searchlight emplacements were added. The RML guns were to be used from 1914 to 1918 with case shot against torpedo boats. The

12-pdr QF guns and searchlights were removed in 1928 and the fort put in care and maintenance until 1940. It was used during the Second World War, after which the guns were gradually removed until the end of the coast defence in 1957.

Outline Description

The new wing batteries are casemated and granite faced with iron shields. The west battery had positions for 37 guns, whilst the east had positions for 24 guns. They were the largest of their kind built in England

In 1889, as in most other Victorian Coast batteries, Hurst was strengthened against shells penetrating the magazines. Part of each flank magazine was filled with concrete and traverses were provided by filling nine of the casemates with concrete. The western expense magazines were rebuilt to store shells at ground level and cartridges below.

Condition

Good.

It has been restored.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Hurst Castle is located on a 1.5 mile shingle spit jutting out from Keyhaven into the Solent, less than a mile from the shoreline of the Isle of Wight. It is largely surrounded by water with lakes and green area between it and the village of Keyhaven.

Threats

Visitor wear and tear.

Possible threat from coastal erosion.

Ownership

English Heritage (or HE). Managed by English Heritage under licence from Historic England.

Current use(s)

English Heritage site open to the public.

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The batteries although not of particular individual significance, enhance the value of Hurst Castle by providing evidential value of the historic use of the castle from its Tudor beginnings to the Second World War.

The scale and intended firepower of the casemated wing batteries shows the contemporary response to the introduction of steam driven warships, while later alterations to the batteries demonstrate the continuing strategic importance of the fort during the major conflicts of this century.

References

VF website

PF website

HE website

Hogg 1974

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Spitbank Fort (OA77)

County	Hampshire
District	Portsmouth
Parish	Portsmouth
NGR	SZ 6363 9715
Group	Portsmouth, Spitbank

PASTSCAPE#	462032
HER#	17565
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1018587: Spitbank Fort
Recommendations	None

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Spitbank defences. Four sea forts were constructed between 1865 and 1880 to protect Portsmouth and the Solent. These are: St Helen's Fort, Spitbank Fort, Horse Sand Fort and No Man's Land Fort.

Also included within this wider group are: Browndown Battery, Nodes Point Battery, Fort Monckton, Fort Blockhouse and Puckpool Mortar Battery.

Brief History

The fort was completed in 1868 as a result of the Royal Commission. Spitbank is smaller than the two main Solent forts, Horse Sand Fort and No Man's Land Fort. Its main purpose was as a further line of defence for ships that made it past the two main forts.

In 1898 the role of the fort was changed to defend against light craft and the roof was fitted out with two 4.7-inch guns and searchlights.

The armament was upgraded several times; large 12.5-inch 35-ton guns being substituted in the iron portions for the 10-inch guns by 1893. These were removed by 1905 leaving three as running-past guns. Two 4.7-inch guns were then fitted on the roof and searchlights were also added, the role of the fort now being to counter light craft instead of heavy warships. The armament was revised again in 1905 to take two 6-inch BL guns on the roof which remained until 1916.

Guns continued to be fitted until after the Second World War, until coastal defence was disbanded in 1956.

Outline Description

Designed by Captain E. Steward R.E. the sea forts were originally planned as masonry works, and completely transformed into armoured structures.

The forts were adapted to include iron portions consisting of 25 inches of iron plate, wrought-iron and teak sandwiched in layers in order to withstand the latest naval guns. The fort stands on a stone and concrete foundation ring built directly on the seabed.

Spitbank Fort is a circular fort constructed of iron, concrete and granite. The lower level basement of the fort contained the shell and cartridge stores together with the kitchen and stores. On the gun floor level, Spitbank is constructed in two halves, the outer iron portion designed to hold nine 10-inch guns whilst the inner brick-vaulted, granite-faced portion (facing the harbour entrance) was to hold six 7-inch RML guns.

Condition

Good.

The fort has been altered during the course of its history.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Surrounded by the sea, Spitbank Fort is situated within the Solent, off the Portsmouth coastline.

Threats

Coastal erosion.

Visitor wear and tear.

Ownership

Commercial owner. Solent Forts, which is part of Amazing Venues (Clarenco LLP).

Current use(s)

Amazing Venues (Clarenco LLP) under the name Solent Forts have converted the fort into a luxury hotel (Solent Forts website 2016).

Occupancy

In use/ occupied.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Spitbank Fort has evidential value as a well preserved example of its class and remains in good condition, although it has been converted into a hotel.

As part of an integrated sea based defensive line the massive structure of Spitbank Fort provides a visual reminder of the strategic importance of the Solent in the late 19th century. The sea forts are among the most impressive of the coastal defences, they are a visually commanding structure and of clear aesthetic value.

Spitbank Fort with St Helen's Fort, Horse Sands Fort and No Man's Land Fort has group value. It is an exceptional and innovative feat of engineering, and of considerable historic and aesthetic value.

References

VF website

PF website

Solent Forts website 2016

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Point Battery (OA78)

County Hampshire
District Portsmouth
Parish Portsmouth
NGR SZ 63025 99303
Group Portsmouth, Sea Defences Inner Line

PASTSCAPE#	859283
HER#	19025
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1001870: Point Battery including King Edward's Tower and Square Tower
Recommendations	Consideration needs to be given to planning applications to convert the battery to a secondary use.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Point Battery is part of the 'Portsea Island' group of forts, others within the group include: Eastney Batteries, Southsea Castle, Fort Cumberland and the Hilsea Lines.

Brief History

The origins of a permanent fortification on this site date back to the early part of the 15th century, during the 1680s a larger permanent fortification known as eighteen-gun battery was erected as part of the last phase of the de Gomme defensive works of Portsmouth.

In 1847 the de Gomme battery was modified to allow for new weaponry, and the Round tower and Square Tower incorporated with the defences. The Portsea Island group of forts were not built as a result of the 1859 Royal Commission but did receive improvements because of it. Others

During the 1880's and early 1890's the battery was armed with an assortment of RBL and RML guns, mainly for drill purposes and two 6-pdr QF guns. The battery was again updated in the late 1890s to accommodate three 12-pdr QF guns on the roof of the eighteen gun battery, a 12-pdr QF on the Round Tower, and another 12-pdr QF on nearby King James's Battery. Electric searchlights were added in 1904.

Three 12-pdr QF guns were mounted during the First World War, which during the Second World War was reduced to two 6-pdr guns.

Outline Description

In 1495, the Round Tower was rebuilt in stone and another tower was constructed to the south of it. This new tower, known as the Square Tower, had guns mounted on its roof. Between these two towers runs Point Battery, the seaward side of which preserves the work of Colonel Desmaretz in the 1750s, updating de Gomme's work of the 1660s.

Point Battery was built in 1847 modifying an earlier 'L' shaped structure built by de Gomme and incorporated the Round Tower which was heightened as

part of the changes. The new structure consisted of battery of 24 guns with the bulk covering the harbour entrance and the remainder in a two storey gallery providing covering fire along the length of the curtain wall. The de Gomme battery gun casemates were deepened to accommodate 68-pdr guns and an extra storey of four stone casemates was added to the flanking gallery to accommodate five 32-pdr SB guns on traversing platforms.

To the rear of the eighteen-gun battery, the demolished houses made way for a narrow parade ground with soldiers barrack accommodation (in four casemates with two en-barbette gun emplacements on the roof) at the northern end together with an L shaped flanking musketry gallery linking it to the Round Tower. The site was enclosed with a high brick wall.

Condition

Poor.

Partly demolished. Plans in motion to change use.

After the disposal of the battery, in 1962-3 Portsmouth City council demolished the gorge wall and associated buildings, removed the rear walls and ammunition recesses of the main gun casemates and cut in half the soldiers accommodation casemates leaving an open site. They also removed any reference to the later QF gun positions and modified the Victorian magazine into public toilets. The extent of what the casemates used to look like is now marked out with cobble stones.

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

The battery and towers are situated in old Portsmouth, directly on the coastline with Broad Street and a compact landscape to the rear including residential and business structures. The setting of the arches is now divorced from their original 18th century historical context.

Threats

Potential threat from change of use and character (*see* development proposals below), however re-use and maintenance of the buildings has the potential for a positive effect.

Flooding/ coastal erosion - potential flooding is also mentioned in the planning proposals for alteration to the battery (see refs 15/01371/VOC and 15/01345/VOC below)

Ownership

Local Authority. Portsmouth City Council.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Point Battery is now used as an extension of the Southsea sea front promenade as well as a public viewing point to watch shipping entering and leaving harbour.

Development proposals

In the last five years there have been a number of development proposals to convert the partly demolished battery into 13 artist studios and associated buildings. This main development was approved by the Secretary of State in 2013 but since there have been a number of amendments.

An application received in March 2016 is awaiting decision (16/00347/LBC) which entails various structural maintainence works to Point Barracks.

There are various outstanding applications since 2012 relating to alterations of the site, for its secondary use.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The battery is however significantly demolished and altered, and is divorced from its primary setting and associations.

The remains of the battery however enhance the value of the site including King Edward's Tower and Square Tower, providing a visual reminder of the military use of the site from the 15th century. The battery also has communal value as an extension of the Southsea sea front promenade as well as a public viewing point to watch shipping entering and leaving harbour.

References

VF website

PF website

Portsmouth City Council Planning website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Southsea Castle, including East and West Batteries (OA79)

County	Hampshire
District	Portsmouth
Parish	Portsmouth
NGR	Southsea Castle: SZ 6434 9801 East Battery: SZ 64500 98000 West Battery: SZ 6422 9808
Group	Portsmouth, Sea Defences Inner Line

PASTSCAPE#	462011 (castle), 1429196 (west battery), 1448351 (east battery)
HER#	19012, 41670 (west battery), 69104 (east battery)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1001869: Southsea Castle (includes east and west battery)
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Southsea Castle is part of the 'Portsea Island' group of forts, these were not built as a result of the 1859 Royal Commission but did receive improvements because of it. Others within the group include: Fort Cumberland, Eastney Batteries Point Battery and the Hilsea Lines.

Brief History

The Royal Commission ordered two flanking batteries for 32 guns to be added to the existing Southsea Castle in 1869.

When the 1869 Commission visited they found the protection to the guns and magazines to be insufficient to withstand the heavy projectiles of the present day. The gorge of the work was closed with a brick wall, loopholed for musketry defence, a section of which remains.

By the 1890s, the castle's defences had become obsolete once again due to the development of torpedo boats and superior breech-loading guns. In response, five 6-pdr quick-firing guns and searchlights were installed to deal with the torpedo boat threat and, between 1899 and 1901, the east battery was converted to hold breech-loading guns.

By 1914 Southsea East Battery was still armed with the 6-inch and 9.2-inch B.L.s and Southsea West was armed with three 12-pdr QF guns, by 1922 the 6-inch and 9.2-inch BLs were still in place as were three 12-pdr QF guns

By 1929 the Castle had become a tourist attraction, and visitors were able to watch the castle garrison carry out practice firings out to sea. Southsea Common was bought by Portsmouth City Council in 1922 and turned into a park, while the west battery was disarmed in 1927.

After the Second World War the castle was obsolete and in 1960 it was sold to Portsmouth City Council

Outline Description

The open batteries look out to the sea and had a dry ditch to form part of a 17-acre (6.9ha) complex enclosed by a defensive wall; the old castle was used for range and direction finding, rather than to house weapons, and was left to slowly decline.

Today the emplacements and lower level works remain, and the area has been heavily landscaped (PastScapes website).

Condition

Fair.

Southsea Castle is partly demolished, most of the gun positions were destroyed or filled in to form rock gardens. One of the 9-inch RML barbette positions remains. The gun batteries remain on open ground adjacent to Southsea Castle.

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

The surviving Southsea Castle and east battery are situated on the Solent coastline to the east of old Porstmouth. To the rear is an expanse of green space with modern housing beyond this. Within the immediate setting of the castle and batteries are some large business/ leisure structures.

Threats

Possible threat from coastal erosion.

Ownership

Local Authority. Portsmouth City Council.

Current use(s)

The 19th century batteries are on open ground adjacent to Southsea Castle.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The castle and batteries are a Scheduled Monument.

Historically, Southsea Castle has a long period dating from its construction by Henry VIII, and had a prominent role in defence in the 19th and early 20th Centuries, when two flanking batteries were constructed. The evidential value of the batteries has been impacted by landscaping, and their context lost by the part-demolition of the castle. The primary setting of the castle has also been effected by development in near vicinity. The castle is however of high communal value to those who are able to visit the heritage site.

References

VF website

PF website

Hogg 1974

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Gilkicker (OA80)

County	Hampshire
District	Gosport
Parish	Gosport
NGR	SZ 6067 9751
Group	Portsmouth

PASTSCAPE#	462041
HER#	6364
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1001789: Gilkicker fort (sic) Grade II* Listed (list entry number 1276716)
Recommendations	The Fort is on the Buildings at Risk Register at category 'D'; there are future plans to convert the fort for residential use. Sensitive reuse of the fort would improve its current condition. The earth bank is now owned by the Council with the remainder of the fort.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Stokes Bay Lines and Browndown Battery.

Brief History

Fort Gilkicker is a Parlmerston Fort completed in 1871, the present Fort Gilkicker replaced an earlier one constructed in 1856 on the same site. The Royal Commission of 1860 recommended that the first battery should be extended and strengthened, instead a new fort was built and its name changed to Fort Gilkicker.

It was intended to cover the beach at Stokes Bay, already defended by a line of ditch and rampart with five flanking batteries, known as the Stokes Bay Lines, and the deep water anchorage off Browndown as well as the inner approaches to Portsmouth Harbour. It was to direct its principal fire on Stourbridge Shoal and the flanks on Spithead and Stokes Bay.

Fort Gilkicker was to be a casemated battery of curvilinear form with guns on one tier. Construction began in June 1863, but following the failure of the initial contractor, it was recommenced in 1865. By then the plans had been revised to allow for iron shields to the 22 granite casemates and iron shields to protect five open gun positions on the roof.

In 1888, following the recommendations for all sea batteries, some of the casemates were filled with concrete to act as traverses. The magazine arrangements were also modified. By 1898 the RML armament was obsolete and it was proposed to mount the latest BL guns on the roof instead. These were in place briefly from 1902 until 1906. At this time the casemates were obscured by an earth bank, covering the gun ports. The guns were declared superfluous to requirements by the Owen Committee in 1905.

The fort was armed during the First and Second World War and was bought by Hampshire County Council in 1986

Outline Description

The fort is granite faced with a dry ditch to the front only. A defensible barrack closed the rear of the fort, this was loopholed for rear wards defence. The basement, under the main sea facing gun casemates, contained the magazines allocated equally to shells and cartridges.

To the rear of each gun casemate was a small barrack room, and a defensible barrack block closed the gorge of the fort. The rear wall of the barrack was fitted with rifle loopholes for defence. The ground floor, under the main sea facing gun casemates contained the magazine rooms, with cartridge and shell stores.

Condition

Poor.

The fort is on the BAR register at category 'D' – 'Slow decay; solution agreed but not yet implemented'.

The owner has put barrack block into good order, but casemates and magazines are threatened by water penetration. Repair and conversion to residential units approved but scheme has not yet been implemented'

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Fort Gilkicker retains its historic setting on the coastline to the south-west of Gosport. It is surrounded by green open space with Fort Monkton directly to the east.

Threats

Deteriorating/ in need of management - the purchase of the fort by Hampshire County Council did not include the earth bank, which is an integral part of the fort.

Decay of fabric - water penetration - the owner has put the barrack block into good order, but the casemates and magazines are threatened by water penetration. Repair and conversion to residential units approved but the scheme has not yet been implemented (HE website).

Development threat - a potential threat is the conversion of the fort to residential flats, although the building's considerate reuse would constitute a positive effect.

Ownership

Local Authority. Hampshire County Council and leased to Askett Hawk Developments.

The council brought the fort but not the surrounding earth bank.

Occupancy

Vacant/ not in use

Current use(s)

Plans are in place to convert the fort into luxury flats.

Development proposals

Planning ref.13/00312/EXT – planning permission granted 18th July 2013 for renewal of planning permission to extend the time limit for the implementation of planning permission reference K9316/7 (08/00423/FULL). This includes restoration of Grade II Listed building and Scheduled Monument and conversion into 26 dwellings, residents stores and interpretation room.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II* Listed.

Fort Gilkicker retains its primary setting and has a commanding presence along the coastline, enhanced by its close proximity to other coastal installations such as the Stokes Bay Lines and Fort Blockhouse. It is also accessible along the coastal path which adds to its communal value.

The fort survives well and is of evidential value, although it is now in a deteriorating condition and requires management.

References

Askett Hawk website

HE website

VF website

PF website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Bembridge Fort (OA81)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Bembridge
NGR	SZ 62414 86082
Group	Isle of Wight

PASTSCAPE#	461923
HER#	1163
NT HBSMR#	125442, 125443
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1012717: Bembridge Fort
Recommendations	None

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The fort functioned as the command and control centre for the Western Batteries on the Isle of Wight. In this role Bembridge controlled Redcliff Battery, Yaverland Battery, Sandown Battery and Sandown Barrack Battery.

Brief History

Bembridge Fort was built as part of the 1859/ 60 Royal Commission improvements to coastal defence. It was constructed between 1862 and 1867.

Furthermore, should the island have been invaded, the fort would have acted as a redoubt - a final enclosure where troops could retreat to in the event the area was overrun - the armament of six 7-inch guns supported this function.

In 1880 the fort was re-tasked as accommodation and a test facility for anti-torpedo devices. Cables were run from the fort down to the sea to facilitate these tests. Nevertheless, the fort remained armed and in 1893 and again in 1905 the weapons were upgraded; by the Second World War the fort was armed with two 5-inch howitzers and several machine guns.

During World War II Bembridge Fort re-assumed coastal defence duties and was used as a fire control centre for the batteries at Nodes Point and Culver Down. Two Allen Williams turrets were installed; these were pre-fabricated steel turrets operated by a single man for use of handheld personnel weapons under cover. One of the turrets survives and is a rare example of such a structure in the UK. At the end of the war the MOD withdrew from the site and the fort is now in the care of the National Trust.

Outline Description

Bembridge Fort is brick built with flint detailing, and constructed in a hexagonal configuration with a deep dry ditch surrounding it. There is a covered way and rifle parapet on the outer side, complete with crochets.

The Historic England list description describes the fort –

'It has a central courtyard or parade ground enclosed by barrack blocks. Steps at the north west end of the courtyard lead to an upper level walkway

with gun positions and bunkers. Outside the walls of the fort are a moat and earthen rampart..... Originally there were casemented barracks around most of the parade ground. However, the facade of the barracks on the south side has been destroyed in its conversion into offices; this is also the case on the east side where a new building has been inserted and on the north side where there are workshops. Behind the new facades, however, the converted buildings contain original features and fabric. A passage-way runs around the inside of the wall on the south east and similarly on the north west side of the fort, and the barracks and magazines open off from this. Around the perimeter of the upper level walkway are a number of bunkers in various states of repair. These have grass-covered roofs and are faced with brick on their inside. The bunkers on the roof at the south end of the fort have shafts which led to the munitions stores below'.

Condition

Fair.

The Historic England list description states –

'Bembridge Fort survives well and is an excellent example of its class. Despite its conversion to light industrial units, the fabric of the fort is essentially complete'.

Good example of a dry defended ditch, the caponier is typical of the period (Hogg 1974, 51).

Trend

Improving. The fort is actively conserved by a team of volunteers.

Setting

Located 1km north west of Culver Cliff on the high ridge of Culver Downs. Situated on the heights of Bembridge Down the fort had clear visibility of events in Sandown Bay and the Eastern Solent. The fort commands the space between Brading Haven and the sea and retains its original setting, surrounded by open landscape.

Threats

Visitor wear and tear.

Ownership

Charity (heritage). The National Trust.

Occupancy

Part-occupied/ in-use.

Current use(s)

The fort is open to the public by National Trust volunteers several times a month. The fort is also being conserved by volunteers. Parts of the buildings are used by a company that make crop spraying equipment.

Development proposals

None identified (pers comm Rosie Lansley, Isle of Wight County Archaeology and HER)

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is a Scheduled Monument.

The fort survives well and is of clear evidential and aesthetic value, it also retains its original setting. It is actively conserved by a group of volunteers, and is communal value to those who work and visit the site. As one of the Royal Commission forts it has particular historic value as the last redoubt of the island, in the event of it being invaded.

References

PF website

thenationaltrust website

castlefortsbattles website.

Hog 1974

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Cliff End Battery (OA82)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Freshwater
NGR	SZ 33140 89007
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight, Needles Passage

PASTSCAPE#	459490
HER#	1274
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	The remaining battery appears to be in a deteriorating condition and would benefit from management.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Needles Passage group of defences with: Hurst Castle, Fort Albert (OA83), Fort Victoria (OA85), New Needles Battery (OA89), Warden Point Battery (OA 97), Freshwater Redoubt (OA86), Culverdown Battery (OA84), Golden Hill Battery (OA87), Hatherwood Battery (OA88) and Lower Old Needles Battery (OA91).

Brief History

As a result of the recommendations of the Royal Commission of 1859 the battery was constructed on the cliffs overlooking Fort Albert. It was designed to protect the ship canal between Hurst Castle and Cliff End, the original proposals were for a twenty-gun barbette battery, but the cliff proved to be unstable.

No guns were mounted until 1877. In 1880 it was reported that the battery was complete and armed but it would be desirable to strengthen it with slight gorge defences. These consisted of a loopholed brick wall with caponiers at each end. A bomb proof magazine was constructed behind the 12.5-inch gun positions. An old guardhouse of a former battery remained behind the 10-inch guns positions until about 1896. A tunnel through the ramparts gave access to Fort Albert below the cliffs.

In 1886 a bombproof engine room and submarine mining test rooms were added into the northern flank and five position finding cells were built to the north. The battery received various upgrades of guns to the end of the Second World War, it was then released in 1957 and sold and the land used for holiday bungalows.

Outline Description

Two batteries were built, the right hand to contain eight 7-in RML and the left-hand to contain twelve similar guns. The work was not completed until 1871 and the planned armament was by that time obsolete, so that during its construction it was redesigned as a single battery to mount six heavier weapons.

Only the 4.7-inch emplacements now remain and a battery command post is visible.

Condition

Poor.

Over half of the emplacements have been demolished and the area used for holiday and residential bungalows, the 6 inch BL gun emplacements are gone and only some of the 4.7-inch QF emplacements now remain. A battery command post is also visible.

Photographs of the remaining battery show that the fabric is in deteriorating condition, with some vegetation growth.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located 1.5km north of Freshwater and 150m from the coastline to the north, opposite at the narrowest entrance to the Solent (opposite Hurst Castle in Hampshire). It is set in from the coastline, *c* 0.1 miles from Fort Albert. There is a wooded area to the north of the remaining battery with holiday bungalows to the south, east and west.

Threats

Decay of fabric.

Coastal erosion.

Uncontrolled plant growth.

Deterioration/ in need of management.

Ownership

Commercial. The remaining emplacements are on private land.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Over half of the battery is demolished and the area is used for holiday bungalows, the remaining batteries are open.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Some.

Cliff End Battery is one of the few military installations included within this study which are not protected by scheduling or listing. There are however partial remains only of the battery evident, and these appear to be in a deteriorating condition. The setting of the fort is also impacted by the surrounding holiday bungalows.

References

PF website

VF website

Hog 1974

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Albert (Cliff End Fort) (OA83)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Freshwater
NGR	SZ 32967 89062
Group	Isle of Wight, Needles Passage

PASTSCAPE#	459489, 459497
HER#	1273
Heritage status	Grade II* Listed (list entry number 1291552)
Recommendations	None

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Fort Albert was constructed as a pair with Fort Victoria. They are part of the Needles Passage Group of Defences, which also include: Hurst Castle, Fort Victoria (OA85), Cliff End Battery (OA82), New Needles Battery (OA89), Warden Point Battery (OA 97), Freshwater Redoubt (OA86), Culverdown Battery (OA84), Golden Hill Battery (OA87), Hatherwood Battery (OA88) and Lower Old Needles Battery (OA91).

Brief History

This fort was designed by William Drummond Jervois, later Inspector General of Fortifications. The original intention was for a semi-circular fort of approximately 41 guns on Warden Ledge but this idea was abandoned because of costs and unstable ground. The beach at Cliff was chosen for the new fort but shortage of money resulted in the construction of a small brick fort for 29 guns in four tiers.

The fort was completed in 1856 on an artificial island to defend the western approach to Portsmouth, opposite Hurst Castle, which was strengthened at the same time. Intended to house 29 guns in four tiers, it was among the last gun-towers constructed in England and was rapidly rendered obsolete by advances in gunnery. In 1887 when the fort became redundant as a gun platform, being used instead as an infantry barracks.

In 1886-88 a portion of the fort was converted for use with a Brennan Torpedo installation. A lean-to was added to the north section with a launch ramp and associated engine room and torpedo handling room. The northern portion of the fort was filled to the roof with sea sand to protect the installation. The remaining casemates were used for accommodation.

The Brennan Torpedo installation too became obsolete and was dismantled in 1906.Upgrades of armament continued until 1941, the fort which was finally closed in 1957.

Outline Description

The Historic England Listed building description describes the fort –

'A Former Artillery fort, 1854 and attached torpedo house, 1886, with alteration 1940s and conversion to residence 1970s-80s. rick foundations and superstructure with granite base, additions of 1940s and 1970s-80s in blockwork or concrete; all now rendered except for western face. Original block is a broad irregular chevron in plan, pointing west. Three storeys surmounted by a warhead. Above this now rise a lift shaft (1970s) to serve a smaller fourth storey of flat-roofed buildings in the centre, constructed for anti-aircraft purposes 1940s, terminated by 2 direction towers. Prominent 1980s addition with slate false pitches attached to north of northern turret. Masking the eastern return of the original build at the north end is the single-storey torpedo house, with mass concrete roof shallowly pitched against fort, covering a brick half-vault. Winding room beyond this is flat-roofed. The massive walls are pierced by cambered-headed gunports (to seaward) and masket loops (to landward).... The INTERIOR was divided into seven brick compartments on each floor but has now been substantially altered in conversion to residential use. The ports have splayed inner reveals in two stages. The torpedo house has a semi-vaulted recess cut out of the foot of the fort wall and rods inset into the vaulting; the passage to the winding room has rectangular sinkings in its walls; all are presumably connected to the operation of the wire-guided Brennan torpedo. It stands over the original moat, which allowed construction of subterranean chambers that may survive'.

Condition

Fair.

Converted into eight luxury flats

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on the coastline 1.5km north of Freshwater opposite the narrowest entrance to the Solent (opposite Hurst Castle in Hampshire). End Battery set directly inland from Fort Albert. There is now a car park to the east of the fort and a holiday park to the south, but to the east and west it is surrounded by a rocky and wooded landscape.

Threats

Decay of fabric - the flats suffer from damp due to sea water ingress into the basement (VF website and PFS website)

Ownership

Mixed multiple owners.

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Residential: converted into eight luxury residential flats.

Development proposals

An old application (LBC/17548/X - P/02369/05) dating from 2006 is stated as having 'no decision'. This application is for Listed Buildings Consent for demolition of outbuildings 4/5 storey building to form 9 flats and 1 penthouse flat with parking at ground floor level alterations to vehicular access

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is Grade II* Listed.

The fort has been converted into residential accommodation, which will have inevitably impacted its evidential value. The fort overall is understood to survive well, and its reuse has given it a viable future.

Fort Albert has historical value as a late example of its type and for the Brennan installation.

References

PF website

VF website

HE website.

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Culver Down Battery (OA84)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Bembridge
NGR	SZ 63621 85609
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight, Needles Passage

PASTSCAPE#	461925
HER#	1165
NT HBSMR#	125452
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The ammunition for the battery was stored in Bembridge Fort.

Culver Down Battery is part of the Needles Passage Group of Defences, which also include: Hurst Castle, Fort Albert (OA 83), Fort Victoria (OA85), Cliff End Battery (OA82), New Needles Battery (OA89), Warden Point Battery (OA 97), Freshwater Redoubt (OA86), Culverdown Battery (OA84), Golden Hill Battery (OA87), Hatherwood Battery (OA88) and Lower Old Needles Battery (OA91).

Brief History

A battery on the eastern cliff of Culver Down was first proposed in 1887, but only completed between 1904 and 1906.

Its purpose was to stop enemy ships firing unopposed at the pre-existing batteries at Yaverland and Redcliff. The new fortification would be armed with three 6-inch breach loaders with two QF 6-pdr Hotchkiss in support. The guns would all be fitted on hydraulically operated disappearing mounts. However, by 1889, even though the battery had still not been built, the War Office had decided the Hotchkiss would be replaced with 4.7-inch guns.

The delay in construction was caused by a disagreement at the War Office between the Inspector-General of Fortifications and the Director of Artillery over the installation of disappearing mounts. Objections were raised over their necessity because Culver Down is atop a cliff, 91m above the shoreline. The row led to further delay as the funding for the military project was no longer available.

Due to the purpose of the battery being to deter naval attack, its two 9.2-inch guns were not intended to cover Sandown Bay. But they could fire as far as Spithead, bombarding any enemy ship entering The Solent. Its command post was in the same building as the Port War Signal Station, which was located between the battery and Bembridge Fort to the north.

During the First World War, the battery's main role was to defend the Isle of Wight's torpedo boats' anchorage against long-range fire from armoured cruisers. It also remained in use throughout the Second World War and in

1943, a Coastal Defence Chain Home Low (CHL) radar station was erected just to the east of Culver Battery.

In 1956, the battery was decommissioned by the Ministry of Defence.

Outline Description

The two main gun emplacements which had a twydall profile ditch, were built from brick and reinforced concrete, each had a fixed barbette that housed a 9.2-inch Mk X gun.

Condition

Fair.

Following decommission in 1856 the guns, the fire control centre, storerooms and domestic quarters were completely removed, the site was covered with earth.

However, in 1966, the gun emplacements were re-excavated to make them more accessible. The two emplacements are still extant as are several of the bolts for the guns, together with traces of the filled-in Armstrong pits.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The battery is located at the eastern part of the Isle of Wight, on the cliffs of Culver Down overlooking Horseshoe Bay. The battery is situated on the coastline, surrounded by open landscape, with Bembridge Fort positioned directly inland.

Threats

Possible threat from coastal erosion.

Ownership

Charity (heritage). The National Trust.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Open site used as a viewing platform and car parking.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Some.

The buildings associated with the battery have been removed, but the emplacements have now been excavated and survive.

There are only seven other examples of installations with a twydall profile ditch in the country, surviving ditches are therefore a noteworthy survival, however

the example at Culver Down is thought to no longer be extant. The battery is of historical value continuing into use in both world wars.

References

PF website

VF website

Wikipedia website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Victoria (OA85)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Freshwater
NGR	SZ 33887 89781
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight, Needles Passage

PASTSCAPE#	459492
HER#	1276
Heritage status	Grade II Listed (list entry number 1209376)
Recommendations	None

Type

Artillery Fort

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Fort Victoria is part of the Needles Passage Group of Defences, which also include: Hurst Castle, Fort Albert (OA 83), Culver Down (OA84), Cliff End Battery (OA82), New Needles Battery (OA89), Warden Point Battery (OA 97), Freshwater Redoubt (OA86), Culverdown Battery (OA84), Golden Hill Battery (OA87), Hatherwood Battery (OA88) and Lower Old Needles Battery (OA91).

Brief History

Its position overlooks the whole of the Needles Passage and approaches to Yarmouth, and is almost opposite Hurst Castle on the mainland. The fort was completed by 1855.

In 1872 the Defence Committee recommended that the fort be dismantled, the main disadvantage of the fort was that it was low lying and its interior can be seen into by passing ships. The fort was disarmed in 1876 when it had become increasingly used purely as a barracks. The Royal Engineers took over the fort in that year and it was converted into a submarine mining depot, the casemates were used for storing sea mines. The parados was removed and buildings added as offices.

It effectively became a military barracks and storehouse until rearmed with more modern armament in the 1880s.

During the First and Second World Wars the fort saw service as a landing point and for storage, it was used for various units training prior to D-Day. Between the wars it saw little use with the royal engineers leaving in 1920. At the start of World War II the fort was used as a training battery for coastal gunners and it was equipped with torpedo tubes mounted on the pier. After the war it was used as a National Service training station. Its military use came to an end in 1962.

Outline Description

Fort Victoria is a brick-built casemated fort with a wet ditch, and concrete gun floors. It has two seaward batteries meeting at a right angle. It became a functioning part of the new batteries on the heights above. At the same time a pier was built to serve the fort.

The gun casemates had open upper portions to allow enemy shell fire to pass through rather than cause it to burst inside injuring the gun crews. A broad parados stood behind the casemates to protect the inner barracks which closed off the gorge. An earthen glacis protected the front of the sea facing casemates. This sloped down to a wet ditch which protected the fort against infantry attack. The rear of the fort was closed by two barrack blocks each of two storeys joined by a loopholed wall with the entrance in the middle fitted with a portcullis and drawbridge.

The Historic England list description describes the fort –

'Triangular fort with two seaward batteries meeting at a right angle. Built of brick consisting of a series of cambered brick arches, some now having been filled in with C20 brickwork to form visitor facilities. What remains is a fragment of the original fort'.

Condition

Fair.

Altered and part demolished. The council demolished the barracks in 1969, the seward casemates are still extant.

Trend

Stable

Setting

Located on the coastline 1.4km west of Yarmouth and facing the northwards to the narrow gap of the entrance to the Solent. Fort Victoria is situated on Sconce Point west of Yarmouth.

Surrounding the fort is open landscape, wooded areas and modern expansion, which is predominantly residential and holiday accommodation.

Threats

Possible threat from coastal erosion.

Ownership

Local Authority. Isle of Wight Council.

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Fort Victoria Country Park open to visitors and includes a model railway, marine archaeology centre (Sunken Secrets) and a planetarium.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is Grade II Listed.

Much of the fort however has been demolished and altered impacting its evidential value. Fort Victoria had a long period of military use until 1962, including as a training point for the D-Day landings, however it was used for much of its life as training barracks and for storage. Today, the fort has communal value as Fort Victoria Park.

References

PF website

VF website

HE website

Hogg 1974

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Freshwater Redoubt (OA86)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Freshwater
NGR	SZ 34454 85560
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight, Needles Passage

PASTSCAPE#	459491
HER#	1275
Heritage status	Grade II Listed (list entry number 1292676) Freshwater Bay Conservation Area.
Recommendations	Consideration needs to be given to future Listed building planning applications.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Fort Victoria is part of the Needles Passage Group of Defences, which also include: Hurst Castle, Fort Albert (OA 83), Fort Victoria (OA85), Cliff End Battery (OA82), New Needles Battery (OA89), Warden Point Battery (OA 97), Culverdown Battery (OA84), Golden Hill Battery (OA87), Hatherwood Battery (OA88) and Lower Old Needles Battery (OA91).

Brief History

Freshwater Redoubt is a Palmerston fort, completed in 1856 to defend Freshwater Bay, which was a possible landing beach for enemy troops. The deep, dry ditch protects the landward approaches.

The redoubt consisted of a QF battery overlooking the bay and a four gun battery facing south. The south battery was originally armed with smooth bore guns but was remodelled in 1871 for two 7-inch RBL and two 64-pdr RML guns. The 64-pdr guns were originally firing through embrasures but were 'blocked up' to fire over the parapet in 1888.

The lower east facing beach battery originally mounting 8-inch SB Howitzers was remodelled in 1891 for two 6-pdr QF guns and a maxim machine gun. In 1893 the 7-inch RBL guns were removed and the upper battery emplacements 1 and 4 were to be remodelled for 4.7-inch QF guns, the present 64-pdr being withdrawn, but the idea was abandoned in 1898.

Only the lower battery was armed in the First World War. The fort was sold by the military in 1928. The barrack block was converted into a private residence in 1936. A new building used as a tea room was added overlooking the southern rampart.

Outline Description

The fort has a ditch on two landsides only. It was designed with two batteries for a total of seven guns. The Upper Battery, facing the sea, had four gun emplacements and a separate lower battery with three gun emplacements covered Freshwater Bay.

Freshwater Fort has a deep, brick lined ditch which protects the landward approaches whilst to the seaward steep cliffs make a frontal assault impossible. The redoubt is entered over a drawbridge, to the left of which a large two-storey caponier projects into the rampart to provide flanking fire along it. On a small parade in the centre of the fort was constructed a barrack for Officers and NCOs. Twenty four men were accommodated in the caponier which is entered via a long staircase down from the parade. This caponier is now an empty shell, the floors having collapsed. Beneath the western rampart are the shell and cartridge stores.

Condition

Good.

Trend

Improving.

The condition of the fort was poor until *c* 2016 when the new owner has restored the fort and refurbished the barrack block and reinstated the entrance bridge and has plans to restore the rest of the fort (PF website).

The current owners have completed their own accommodation in the main building and carried out landscaping improvements in the grounds to recover the original setting of the property. The bridge over the moat was replaced in 2011 and, like the original bridge, affords a view of the caponier along the moat.

Setting

Situated at the west of the Isle of Wight, directly on the cliffs to the west of Freshwater Bay facing south to the English Channel. It is in close proximity to Freshwater Bay House and the development of Freshwater Bay directly inland to the east.

Threats

Development proposals may constitute a threat (see below), the use of buildings may however constitute a positive effect to the fort and its environs.

Possible threat from coastal erosion.

Ownership

Private.

Current use(s)

Residential.

Development proposals

The current owner has plans to restore/refurbish the derelict caponier into a residence or a holiday home.

Various Listed building consents have been approved between 2009 and 2015 for replacements within the buildings and for the alteration and conversion of different buildings for holiday accommodation, tea rooms, museum and conference facilities.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Freshwater Redoubt is Grade II Listed and is within the Freshwater Bay Conservation Area.

In recent years the fort has been restored and it now has a secondary use as accommodation, which has improved the condition and setting of the fort.

Although of clear value Freshwater Redobut has been impacted by its secondary use, including the loss of a building on the central parade ground. The fort was used until after the First World War for defence, but the structure or its function is not of particular importance compared to other similar installations.

References

PF website

VF website

Wikipedia

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Golden Hill Fort (OA87)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Freshwater
NGR	SZ 33885 87851
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight, Needles Passage

PASTSCAPE#	459493
HER#	1277
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1013289: Golden Hill Fort: buried remains and outer defences. The fort is Grade I Listed: 1291516.
Recommendations	None

Type

Fort. Barrack.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Hurst Castle, Fort Albert (OA83), Fort Victoria (OA85), Cliff End Battery (OA82), New Needles Battery (OA89), Warden Point Battery (OA 97), Freshwater Redoubt (OA86), Culverdown Battery (OA84), Hatherwood Battery (OA88) and Lower Old Needles Battery (OA91).

Hatherwood Fort's detachment would have been accommodated at Goldern Hill Fort.

Brief History

Golden Hill Fort was a defensible barracks built as part of the Palmerston defences by the 1859 Royal Commission on the Defence of the United Kingdom to provide manpower to man the defences at the western end of the Isle of Wight. It overlooks the land looking south towards Afton Down.

The fort was completed in 1868, the intended guns of the roof were not fitted, instead six 40-pdr RBL guns were placed, one to each salient. Artillery was updated in 1886 and 1891. From 1869 the fort was occupied by two companies of coast gunners. In 1888 the fort became the Western District School of Gunnery, providing courses for regulars and volunteers.

During the 1914-18 war it was used as an infantry training depot, training over 30,000 men of the Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry between 1915-18. During 1939-45 it was a depot for the British and Canadian infantry.

In 1945 it was taken over by the RASC as a barrack for waterborne troops. Until 1962 the fort was used by them as their Junior NCOs' Training School.

Outline Description

Built in hexagonal form.

The Historic England Listed building describes the fort -

> *'Former fort now museum and shops. 1863-1872. A fortified barracks with guns on the roof which covered the rear of 4 coast batteries and accommodated their garrisons in peacetime. Hexagonal building approached by a brick lined tunnel and bridge over a ditch. 2 storeys red brick in English*

bond with stone coping and some brick dressings. Internally on 3 sides there are 1st floor cambered arches with 2 sashes and doorcases with fanlights and sashes to ground floor. 2 storey cast iron balconies. Other 3 sides have sashes with some having round-headed arches. The building accommodated 8 officers and 128 men, and had its own hospital. It mounted 6 guns on the roof and 40-pdr breach loaders at each angle on an iron traversing platform. Roof had ammunition recesses'.

Condition

Good.

Altered. Original elements in good condition, restored sympathetically and to a high standard.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Golden Hill Fort is situated to the west of the Isle of Wight at Afton Down. Located south east of Norton Green, 1km south east of the nearest coastline. It overlooks much of the land looking south towards Afton Down. It is immediately surrounded by a buffer of open land, but is setting is impacted by surrounding development including industrial buildings to the north-west.

Threats

Visitor wear and tear.

Ownership

The fort is under private ownership, the surrounding land is owned by the local authority.

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Converted into 18 luxury residential and holiday flats. The surrounding land is open to the public. It is managed as a country park by the Isle of Wight Council, and is an open grassland with bridleways, viewpoints and a small car park.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The fort is of clear evidential value as despite conversion to residential accommodation, the fabric of the fort is essentially complete.

The fort is of historical value with a long period of military use until 1962, it also has group value with the surrounding forts on the west of the Isle of Wight.

References

PF website

VF website

historicengland website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Hatherwood Battery (OA88)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Totland
NGR	SZ 30714 85797
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight, Needles Passage

PASTSCAPE#	459496
HER#	1279
NT HBSMR#	125624
Heritage status	NA
Recommendations	Very bad condition due to land slide and demolition. It is understood that a programme of recoding has been completed, but if this has not implicated, archaeological recording before further loss is recommended.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Needles Passage defences with Hurst Castle, Fort Albert (OA83), Fort Victoria (OA85), Cliff End Battery (OA82), New Needles Battery (OA89), Warden Point Battery (OA 97), Freshwater Redoubt (OA86), Culverdown Battery (OA84), Golden Hill Battery (OA87) and Lower Old Needles Battery (OA91).

Hatherwood's detachment would have been accommodated at Golden Hill Fort, a couple of miles away.

Brief History

The battery was completed in 1869. Before Hatherwood Battery had been finished its design had been modified to enable larger guns, four 9-inch RML and three 7-inch RML to be emplaced. The magazine was positioned to the southern side of the battery, where it also acted as an earth covered bank to flank the gun positions. The barracks had been dropped in favour of a small accommodation block for two married soldiers/caretakers on the entrance roadway to the rear; Hatherwood's detatchment would be accommodated at Golden Hill Fort, situated a couple of miles away.

By 1886 two 12.5-inch RML guns of 38 tons had been mounted in these modified positions. A further upgrade of the two left hand 9-inch RMLs with a 10-inch BL gun were proposed in 1886, but this improvement did not occur.

By 1898 the battery was slipping into the sea. By 1902 the battery was described as having two machine gun fittings only. By 1903 the battery was officially disarmed.

Between 1940 and 1943 the site was used by the Royal Navy as part of an Indicator Loop station.

Outline Description

Hatherwood's original design was for seven shell guns in open barbette positions facing north west. To the rear of the gun emplacements was to have been built a large magazine

containing 298 barrels of powder together with a shell filling store, the magazine was to be buried to provide protection from incoming shot. On the approach road to the Battery barracks were to be built to either side accommodating an officer, his servant, a sergeant and 25 men.

Before Hatherwood Battery had been finished its design had been modified to enable larger guns, four 9-inch RML and three 7-inch RML to be emplaced. The Magazine was positioned to the southern side of the battery, where it also acted as an earth covered bank to flank the gun positions. The barracks had been dropped in favour of a small accommodation block for two married soldiers/caretakers on the entrance roadway to the rear.

Condition

Very Bad.

Today all that remains of the battery are four of the gun emplacements. No traces of any of the buildings, magazines or earth-works remain. The site is now slowly slipping down the cliff, the two right emplacements have already collapsed. The two central emplacements are badly eroded. The two left ones are relatively intact and show signs of their modification for 5-inch B.L. mounts.

Trend

Declining.

The coat line is rapidly eroding and the emplacements are likely to be destroyed by erosion in the near future.

Setting

The battery is located on the Needles Headland and Tennyson Down facing north west on a rapidly eroding cliff edge.

Threats

Coastal erosion - makes it likely that there will be nothing left of the battery in the near future. In 2005 Wessex Archaeology did a geophysical survey of the site (CITiZAN, 2016, the Coastal and Intertidal Zone Archaeological Network).

Ownership

Charity (heritage). The National Trust.

Occupancy

Not in use.

Current use(s)

Open site.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Little.

The evidential value of Haterwoord Battery has been greatly impacted by its loss due to coastal erosion, only four gun emplacements remain. The battery is also not of distinctive historical, communal or aesthetic value.

References

PF website

VF website

CITiZAN website.

Compiler

Jane Phimester

New Needles Battery (OA89)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Totland
NGR	SZ 29907 84802
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight, Needles Passage

PASTSCAPE#	1426243
HER#	1271
NT HBSMR#	125622
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1422839: New Battery and High Down Test Site, The Needles Grade II Listed (list entry number 1209415)
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Needles Passage defences with Hurst Castle, Fort Albert (OA83), Fort Victoria (OA85), Cliff End Battery (OA82), Warden Point Battery (OA 97), Freshwater Redoubt (OA86), Culverdown Battery (OA84), Golden Hill Battery (OA87), Hatherwood Battery (OA88) and Lower Old Needles Battery (OA91).

Brief History

The New Needles battery was proposed as a replacement for the old battery, to take three of the new 9.2-inch BL guns en-barbette which would give greater range and accuracy.

This new battery was constructed in the 1890s on higher ground overlooking the old battery facing north-west. Administrative buildings were sited behind the battery and underground magazines were fitted between the gun emplacements.

Two 9.2-inch BL Mk IX were fitted in 1900 and the third was considered unnecessary. However, by 1904 the third was installed. Additionally, two 3-pdr QF guns were fitted between the centre and northern emplacements for practice use but were removed in 1907.

Between 1900 and 1902 a battery Command post was built on the down above the battery. A cookhouse and shelter for 23 men were built behind the southern emplacement. Behind the northern emplacement were built a guard room and an armoury for Maxim machine guns which would have been used for local defence.

A Port War Signal Station was built east of the battery, together with coastguard cottages.

Between 1911 and 1914 the gun emplacements were adapted for Mark VB mountings and the upgraded guns were in place in 1914, although one was dismounted leaving two in active use. A 6-pdr QF gun was fitted south of the left emplacement for 'examination service'.

Over time additional buildings were erected to the rear of the guns; these included: a Canteen, two huts to accommodate 30 men each, an officers mess and shelters.

The battery was placed in care and maintenance in 1918 and was reactivated in 1926 for Territorial use. The battery was used again in 1939 for counter bombardment against blockships attempting to close the Needles passage. In 1941 Radar guidance for the guns was installed.

In 1942 two 40mm Bofor AA guns were added but one was soon removed. In 1945 the battery was moth-balled again and was put up for disposal in 1952. The guns were removed and scrapped in 1954.

From 1956 to 1971 the battery was used for testing space rockets engines. This is a significant period of the site's use during the Cold War era and is described in detail on the Historic England website and a separate report (Cocroft 2007).

The National Trust brought the site in 1975 and it was subsequently opened as a visitor attraction.

Outline Description

The Historic England website describes the site –

> *'In the north and west of the site is the New Battery and former Test Site Preparation Area. In the centre of the site is the former Battery Command Post. In the south-west and south of the site are the remains of the Firing Area; the test stands, known as gantries Nos. 1 and 2, and between them the Pump and Control Rooms. A new road was constructed to link the New and Old Batteries with an upper road leading to the Battery Command Post and Coastguard Cottages (the cottages have not been assessed for designation). A further roadway links the western gun emplacement with the test stands to its south-east'.*

The site has been the subject of an English Heritage survey (Cocroft 2007) and further detail is provided with 'The List' description on the Historic England website.

Condition

Good.

There is a good survival of both the battery and the test site. Three gun emplacements and adjacent magazines survive in reasonable condition (although the western-most one has a modern structure built into it). The battery observation post is visible and in good condition, the remaining features of the battery have been removed. The circular features and bunker to the east of the battery are associated with a later rocket testing facility.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Remote coastal setting, the battery is located on the Needles Headland 300m south east of the Old Needles Battery and the most westerly point of the Isle of Wight. The battery retains its historic setting.

Threats

Coastal erosion.

Possible threat from visitor wear and tear if not monitored.

Ownership

Charity (heritage). The National Trust.

Current use(s)

Open to visitors with an exhibition within the magazines.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in use.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The battery is part of a Scheduled Monument and Grade II listed.

The site survives well and is of clear evidential value; it has a diversity of defence structures and the test site structures are bespoke designs for the particular testing programmes here. Different elements of the site from its history of use survive well.

Historically, the site reflects two very distinct forms of national defence: the coastal battery, built to protect Portsmouth Dockyard and approaches from enemy attack in the late 19th century and which continued in use into both world wars, and a Cold War site key to Britain's development of a nuclear deterrent, and latterly hugely significant in Britain's space programme. The Cold War test structures at High Down are nationally unique, and a key part of an international rocket testing programme. The site has been subject to English Heritage research, underpinning the assessment of national importance

There is also potential for buried archaeological remains, enhancing our understanding of both 19th century coastal defence and the construction and use of cutting edge Cold War testing programmes. This includes those for both Britain's intermediate range missile Blue Streak and its space programme

References

PF website

VF website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

No Man's Land Fort (OA90)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	NA (Solent)
NGR	SZ 63962 93771
Group	Portsmouth, Spitbank

PASTSCAPE#	462119
HER#	1195
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1018589: No Man's Land Fort Grade II Listed (list entry number 1234103)
Recommendations	None

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Spitbank defences. Four sea forts were constructed between 1865 and 1880 to protect Portsmouth and the Solent: St Helen's Fort, Spitbank Fort, Horse Sand Fort and No Man's Land Fort. These forts are the outer line of Spithead Defences, and are totally iron works. No Mans Land Fort is identical in most respects to its twin, Horse Sands Fort.

Also included within this wider group are: Browndown Battery, Nodes Point Battery, Fort Monckton, Fort Blockhouse and Puckpool Mortar Battery.

Brief History

The spithead forts were originally planned as masonry works, and completely transformed into armoured structures, and every casemated work was now reconsidered and the addition of armour to the casemates discussed.

The fort was approved following the Royal Commission of 1860 and completed in 1880. In 1886 twelve 5-inch 38-ton guns and twelve 10-inch 18-ton guns were mounted, all bearing on the deep-water channel.

Between 1889 and 1895, on No Mans Land Fort experiments were carried out to operate the 12-inch guns by hydraulic machinery. Machinery was installed that could supply power for raising ammunition from the basement and loading it into the gun. Traversing and elevating was also achieved hydraulically, it is thought to be the first fort in England, possibly Europe to use hydraulic or other power for such a purpose. It is also thought to be the first fort to be lighted throughout by electricity.

By 1898 6-pdr QF guns were added to the main armament. In 1902 a 4.7-inch QF gun was installed on top of the fort as an examination gun. A 1906 inspection revealed that No Mans Land Fort had only one of the three proposed 6-inch guns mounted. By 1925 two 6-inch guns were still in place. In 1943 it was armed with a 40mm Bofors which was removed in 1945.

The fort was armed during both World Wars, the last gun being removed in 1951.

Outline Description

Minor difference in the armaments of the two forts reflected their different positions in the eastern approaches to the harbour.

Horse Sand Fort and No Mans land Fort are identical in plan, each having two floors of gun casemates, a basement level containing the shell and cartridge stores and a roof level originally intended to mount guns in five turrets. The foundation of the fort is on the sea bed, constructed on a ring of stone at the top of the sill course rises from the sea bed. Contained within the masonry basement were the twenty-four shell stores and fourteen cartridge stores. On top of this the gun floors were constructed with an iron framework supporting iron armour. A central core separated from the main gun floors by a courtyard contained ancillary rooms and officers' quarters.

Condition

Good.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located 2.2km north east of the village of Seaview on the Isle of Wight at the confluence between the Solent and the English Channel.

Threats

None identified.

Possible wear and tear due to visitor use.

Ownership

Commerical owner. Solent Forts, which is part of Amazing Venues (Clarenco LLP).

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use

Current use(s)

Amazing Venues (Clarenco LLP) under the name Solent Forts have converted the fort into a luxury hotel (Solent Forts website 2016).

Development proposals

Between 2004-2015 Listed Buildings Consent was approved for the construction of breakwater harbour and helipad, the implementation time for this work was increased. The latest application was in 2015 (TCPL/13132/P - P/00281/15)

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II Listed.

Its twin, Horse Sands Fort, is on the HAR register and in poor condition, although it is now being restored as a museum for tours and events.

No Man's Lands Fort has group value with the other three sea forts, which provide a strong visual reminder of the strategic importance of the Solent in the 19th century. Aesthetically, the fort is a visually commanding structure and is an exceptional and innovative feat of engineering and of considerable historic value.

References

PF website

Solent Forts website

VF website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Lower (Old) Needles Battery (OA91)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Freshwater
NGR	SZ 29553 84877
Group	Isle of Wight, Needles Passage

PASTSCAPE#	459005
HER#	1272
NT HBSMR#	125623
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1009392: Lower Needles Point battery Grade II Listed (list entry number)
Recommendations	A review of the surviving machinery and artefacts at the battery would be of value, as these are rare survivals.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Needles Passage defences with: Hurst Castle, Fort Albert (OA83), Fort Victoria (OA85), Cliff End Battery (OA82), New Needles Battery (OA89), Warden Point Battery (OA 97), Freshwater Redoubt (OA86), Culverdown Battery (OA84), Golden Hill Battery (OA87) and Hatherwood Battery (OA88).

Golden Hill Fort was used as barrack accommodation for the battery.

Brief History

The Needles Battery was built on the western tip of the chalk ridge above the Needles rocks. The battery was built at the height of 254ft above sea level, giving it a commanding position of any shipping trying to enter the Solent using the narrow channel between the Isle of Wight and the shingle banks on the northern side. It was completed in 1863 as a result of recommendations put forward by the Royal Commission.

By 1869 it had been recommended that the battery could be upgraded with more powerful 7-inch and 9-inch RML guns. This work was carried out although six 9-inch 12-ton RML guns were eventually emplaced. During the late 1880s shafts and tunnels were cut through the chalk to provide emplacements at a lower level to mount electric searchlights (DEL) and 6-pdr QF guns. Although QF guns and search lights were tested at the Needles none were permanently emplaced.

As the need for more powerful armament occurred in the 1890s, it was decided to mount the heavier guns in a new battery built higher up the hill from the Needles Battery, this became New Needle Battery.

The old battery continued to be used as a Fire Control command position, and in 1913 was used to test the first anti-aircraft gun – a 1-pdr Pom Pom.

During the Second World War the Old Battery was fitted with a searchlight and 3-inch and 40mm AA guns. Towards the end of the war a radar station was located at the Battery

Outline Description

The Needles Battery has a triangular trace with the two longer sides running along the edge of the precipitous chalk cliffs. The gorge, on the shorter 3rd side was closed by a dry ditch running north-south, with access via a draw-bridge.

To the rear of the guns was located the officers accommodation and a two storey barrack for, with the ground floor containing the kitchen and stores and the upper floor the accommodation. As with the other batteries defending the western Isle of Wight, the main barrack accommodation was provided at Golden Hill Fort.

Condition

Good.

The National Trust have reinstalled two of the original 9inch RML guns that were found at the bottom of the cliff. The barracks were demolished.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The battery has a remote coastal setting, it is located on the Needles Headland, the most westerly point of the Isle of Wight.

Threats

None identified.

Ownership

Heritage (charity). The National Trust.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in-use.

Current use(s)

Heritage attraction.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The site is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II Listed.

The battery survives well and is of clear evidential value. This is enhanced by artefacts associated with the battery, including two gun emplacements which have their original later 19th century 9-inch RML guns.

In addition to the original battery and associated works, machinery dating to the late 19th and early to mid-20th centuries also survive. The Campbell oil engine, which dates to 1900-1920 is very rare; similarly, there are very few Lister twin cylinder direct coupled generating sets remaining. These artefacts enhance the historical value of the site, as does the documentary records for

their use. The combination of these components, the documentary records for their use, and their survival in situ, makes this a site of particular interest in the study of 19th and 20th century coastal fortifications.

The battery is also in close proximity to the New Needles battery which is considered to be of exceptional value.

References

PF website

VF website

HE website.

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Puckpool Mortar Battery (OA92)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Nettlestone and Seaview
NGR	SZ 61469 92198
Group	Portsmouth, Spitbank

PASTSCAPE#	462120
HER#	1196
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1012721: Puckpool mortar battery
Recommendations	Development may impact the setting of the battery which requires monitoring.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Spitbank Defences. The battery represents the southernmost defence in the line of forts across Spithead.

Also included in this group are four sea forts: St Helen's Fort, Spitbank Fort, Horse Sand Fort and No Man's Land Fort. Also included within this wider group are: Browndown Battery, Fort Monckton, Nodes Point Battery and Fort Blockhouse.

Brief History

The battery was begun in 1863 in response to the 1859 Commission report on the Defences of the United Kingdom, and was completed in March 1865. It was built to guard the deep water channel to the east of Ryde and formed the southernmost defence in the line of forts across Spithead.

Twenty-one 13-inch mortars were mounted and platforms prepared on the ramparts for eleven light guns. The mortars were positioned to fire bombs at the decks of hostile warships.

Plans were changed in 1868 and modified to mount 30 mortars, four 1-inch 25-ton guns and a 7-inch Armstrong gun for flank defence. To the rear of the battery was accommodation consisting of a small barrack for four officers and 67 men. There were emplacements for five barbette-mounted guns fronted by an earth parapet and wet moat. In 1873 four 11-inch guns were installed.

In 1888 under the provisions of the Imperial Defence Loan two 10.4-inch RML guns were proposed for Puckpool. These were in place by 1892 on protected barbette carriages. These were originally intended for Gibraltar and were the only examples of this type of mounting in the United Kingdon. In 1901 the battery was upgraded with barbette positions for two 9.2-inch BL guns to counter battleships bombarding Portsmouth from Spithead.

The remainder of the battery was extensively rebuilt in 1898-1900, and the emplacements still in good condition remained in use until the 1950s.

The battery was manned in WW1 as a depot for coast gunners transferring to the Western Front. In 1927 the remaining gun was withdrawn. From 1939-

1942 it became HMS Medina to train men for the Fleet Air Arm. After the War it became a public garden once more.

Outline Description

The site is described within on the Scheduled Monument description of the HE website –

> *'The monument includes a 19th century mortar battery and associated structures on the north east coast of the Isle of Wight, facing across the Solent towards Portsmouth. The battery, entered via park gates at the south east corner of the site, has a barrack, a large terre plein for mortars, magazines, and emplacements for eight guns fronted by an earth parapet and wet moat. It is aligned along the sea front and has maximum dimensions of c 390m north west-south east and c 140m north east-south west. The original 19th century buildings are of brick and granite with later building added in reinforced concrete. The battery is defined by an earth rampart c 2m high and 10m wide with a moat c 10m wide and c 5m deep on the seaward side and a concrete and brick revetment to the rear. Beneath the rampart are magazines, while to the rear is an isolated magazine protected by earthworks. There are a total of eight major gun emplacements, three of which are built of brick with granite details. The remaining gun emplacements are of reinforced concrete and represent later additions to the battery. To the rear an earth bank c 2.5m high was established to protect the mortar crews. On the east side a gateway representing the original entrance partly remains. To the rear, on the south side of the battery, some buildings are located which, although somewhat altered, are the remains of the guardhouses, barracks and workshops'.*

The battery shows traces of the 1860s work, rearmament in the 1870s and further First and Second World War modifications.

Condition

Fair.

Part of the battery is demolished.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The battery is situated on the coast and lies within Puckpool Park. It is located 1.1km north west of the village of Seaview. It is now largely surrounded by later additions.

Threats

Development - in 2015 planning was approved to create a residential and hotel complex just to the south of Puckpool Battery. This is likely to affect the historic setting of the battery (*see* development proposals).

Coastal erosion – the battery is situated on the coastline.

Ownership

Local Authority. The Isle of Wight Council.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Open ground, public garden.

Development proposals

In 2015 the Isle of White Council planned to sell of the southern part of Puckpool Park to a property developer to create a luxury hotel and other homes (TCP/17977/K, P/00573/15 Approved 29/05/2015). This involved the demolition of buildings and residential development of 128 units and hotel. There is also provision of a car park for Puckpool Park formation of new vehicular access works to existing access and landscaping (revised scheme).

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The site is a Scheduled Monument.

Puckpool battery is of clear evidential value; it survives well as a good example of its class and the fabric of the battery is essentially complete.

The battery is of historical interest as two 10.4-inch RML guns on protected barbette carriages were the only examples of this type of mounting in the United Kingdom. As part of a park and easily accessible, the battery is also of communal value.

References

PF website

VF website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Sandown Barrack Battery (OA93)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Sandown
NGR	SZ 5942 8372
Group	Isle of Wight

PASTSCAPE#	461512
HER#	814
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1019195: Sandown Barrack Battery
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Sandown Fort.

Brief History

Sandown Battery was completed in 1863 as part of the Royal Commission scheme of works. It was one of three batteries recommended by the 1860 Royal Commission on the Defence of the United Kingdom to be built around Sandown Bay in order to prevent seaborne landings and offer additional support to Sandown Fort.

Between 1891 and 1892 the battery was partially reconstructed to take two 10-inch RML guns from Sandown Fort. These replaced three of the 64pdrs. Further work took place between 1901 and 1902 when the battery was completely remodelled to take two 12-pdr QF and two 6-inch BL Mk VII guns. The 12-pdr guns were reduced to practice status after 1907 and the 6-inch classed as in reserve three years later. In September 1916 the barrels of all four guns were removed and the mountings and shields in 1926. By the end of the decade the battery had been handed over to local authority as surplus to requirements

Outline Description

The battery is described on the scheduled monument description of the HE website –

'The battery was rectilinear in plan, with the cliff edge open and the sides and rear enclosed by a dry moat containing a loopholed brick carnot wall which was flanked at both corners by open musketry caponiers. Entry to the battery was via a drawbridge and gate on the landward side, protected by loopholed demi bastions projecting from the carnot wall. The northern demi-bastion was also used as the cookhouse and guardroom, whilst the southern demi-bastion functioned as an artillery store. Other brick buildings constructed against the inner face of the landward carnot wall included a smith's shop, machine gun store, artillery general store, coal bunker, ablutions room, a war shelter for 12 men and a cartridge and shell store'.

Condition

Good.

Following its abandonment by the military the battery was converted for use as a public park. Work involved the demolition to ground level of the 6 inch BL emplacements, mounding over of emplacements for the 12-pdr QF guns to form an ornamental rockery, the adaptation of the war shelter as public conveniences and the reuse of other buildings as storage areas and a cafeteria.

Trend

Stable (with potential to improve).

A feasibility study is being funded of the fort. In December 2015 the Coastal Revival Fund agreed to fund the study to consider the future of Sandown Barrack Battery (Lansley pers comm June 2016)

Setting

Located adjacent to the coastline to the south west of the town of Sandown, and immediately to the west of Sandown Fort. It is surrounded by residential development.

Threats

Potential for coastal erosion.

Ownership

Local Authority. Isle of Wight Council

Occucancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

A public garden called Battery Gardens.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The site is a Scheduled Monument.

It survives well as a series of standing structures, earthworks and buried deposits and retains many of its original fixtures and fittings. Sandown Battery is therefore of evidential and historical value, which is enhanced by the survival of contemporary documentary sources relating to the battery. The emplacements of the battery have however been demolished.

As part of a gardens, Sandown Battery is easily accessible and of communal value to those that use and visit the gardens.

References

Lansley, Rosie, 2016, pers comms (Assistant Archaeologist at Isle of Wight County Archaeology and Historic Environment Service)

PF website

VF website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Sandown Fort (OA94)

County Isle of Wight
District Isle of Wight
Parish Sandown
NGR SZ 60917 84898
Group Portsmouth, Isle of Wight, Sandown Bay

PASTSCAPE#	461942
HER#	x
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	None

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Sandown Bay group of fortifications, which also includes Sandown Barrack Battery (OA93), Steynewood High Angle Battery (OA 96), Yaverland Fort and Battery (OA98) and Bembridge Fort (OA81).

Brief History

Referred to as 'Granite' Fort in later documents, this fort was constructed close to the beach in the centre of Sandown Bay. Sandown Fort was built between 1861 and 1866 as a result of the Royal Commission report.

The original armament was a number of 7-inch 7-ton guns, but these were soon removed and replaced with 9-inch 12-ton, and by 1880 eight 10-inch 18-ton RML formed the heavy component, four in each face of the work. The remaining casemates carrying 9-inch RML guns. Early in the present century these were replaced by lighter weapons; a number of 3-pdr and 6-pdr QF guns were installed above the casemates.

The fort was sold in about 1930, the rear of it was demolished. In 1943 the fort was used to shelter one of the terminals for PLUTO which carried fuel to the Normandy beaches.

Outline Description

It consisted of a granite faced fort for 18 guns in casemates behind iron shields. The interior of the work was adapted to contain accommodation for four officers and sixty-seven men, while the original plan was modified to give sixteen casemates.

The removal of two 10-inch RML guns in centre of right half of southeast face which were to be placed at Sandown Barrack Battery on High Angle mountings, resulted in the vacant positions being filled with concrete to act as traverses and the expense magazines were given additional front protection against sea attack.

Condition

Very bad.

The rear of the fort has been demolished, it is now a private zoo and little of the original fort can be seen from within. The roof of one of the two front face caponiers is just visible above the earth surround and some of the iron shields are still in place.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located adjacent to the coastline to the south west of the town of Sandown, and immediately to the east of Sandown Barrack Battery. It is surrounded by residential development.

Threats

Potential threat from visitor wear and tear.

Potential threat from coastal erosion.

Ownership

Private Company.

Occupancy

In use.

Current use(s)

Zoo.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Little.

Much of the fort was demolished following its sale and conversion to a zoo. Only the roof of one of the two front face caponiers is visible above the earth surround, and some of the iron shields are still in place.

Historically, the former fort was part of the programme of Royal Commission fortification construction in the 1860s, and played a part in the Second World War Normandy beach campaign. The former fort is easily accessible as it remains part of the zoo, however the limited surviving fabric of the structure means that its military history is not easily appreciated.

References

Lansley, Rosie, 2016, pers comms (Assistant Archaeologist at Isle of Wight County Archaeology and Historic Environment Service)

PF website

VF website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

St Helen's Fort (OA95)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Ryde
NGR	SZ 6479 8988
Group	Portsmouth, Spitbank

PASTSCAPE#	461922
HER#	1162
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1017370: St Helen's Fort Grade II Listed (list entry number 1034399)
Recommendations	None

Type

Sea fort

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Spitbank Defences. Four sea forts were constructed between 1865 and 1880 to protect Portsmouth and the Solent, these include: St Helen's Fort, Spitbank Fort, Horse Sand Fort and No Man's Land Fort.

Also included within this wider group are: Browndown Battery, Nodes Point Battery, Fort Monckton, Fort Blockhouse and Puckpool Mortar Battery.

Brief History

Completed in 1871. The spithead forts were originally planned as masonry works, and completely transformed into armoured structures (Hogg. pg.50).

The following description is taken from the HE Scheduling description –

'The original scheme was for a fort with 15 guns in casemates, but this was later increased to 17 with the proposed addition of four further guns in turrets mounted on the superstructure. However, uneven settlement of the foundations meant that the size and complexity of the superstructure had to be radically reduced and as a consequence it was recommended that the fort should be fitted with a central two-gun turret with a further gun mounted either side on a Montcrieff mounting.

Problems with the latter meant that instead the lower seaward guns on each flank were mounted on turntables, whilst further settling of the foundations in 1878 led to the abandonment of plans to mount a turret. All the emplacements had to be moved to the rear of the fort and in 1880 the turret was replaced by a single 12.5-inch RML firing through an iron-shielded embrasure. Two 6-pdr QF guns designed to combat torpedo boats were mounted on the fort's roof in 1900, but removed in 1904.

In 1916 two 12-pdr QF guns and two searchlights were installed on the roof when the area became an examination anchorage for the searching of suspicious vessels.

During World War II the fort mounted two searchlights in concrete emplacements on the roof and from 1943 a 40mm Bofors gun was installed

in the anti-shipping role, specifically to combat E-boats. The Bofors was removed in 1945 and the searchlights sold for scrap in 1957'.

Outline Description

The following description is taken from the HE Scheduling description –

'The fort.... is oval in plan and includes sea bed foundations formed by a ring of cement and brick-filled iron caissons, the area enclosed by which was dredged and filled with poured concrete. Walls of Roche, Portland and Bramley Fall stone were constructed upon the foundations which were 45.7m in diameter, and these in turn formed the base to a superstructure comprised predominantly of concrete. The fort had two internal floors, the lowest of which, the basement level, was reached by a two-level landing stage constructed in 1880 and demolished in 1959 which extended north from the rear of the fort. A series of brick partitions divides the basement level radially into compartments for ammunition and storage, which in turn are divided concentrically by three circular passages. The outermost passage gives access to nine store rooms. Inside this is the lamp passage, which runs around the three magazines, each of which originally lay directly beneath the gun which it supplied and included an ammunition winch. Access to the magazines is via the ammunition passage.

Above the basement is the gun floor, which had provision for three guns, each of which was mounted within a casemate armoured with three layers of five inch wrought iron, separated by iron and concrete. To the rear of these are the soldiers' quarters, consisting of a room for five other ranks and another for one NCO. The roof originally supported a lighthouse and ventilators.'

Condition

Fair.

Now converted to a residence.

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

Coastal setting, situated 1.2km north of Bembridge on a split of land that creates a causeway to the fort at low tide.

Threats

Coastal erosion.

Ownership

Private.

The Isle of Wight Council brought the fort in 2003 and put it up for sale.

Occupancy

Unknown.

Current use(s)

Converted to a residence, it may be unoccupied.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II Listed. It survives well with many of its original fixtures and fittings, and is of clear evidential value. The fort is also of group value with the other three surviving sea forts: Spitbank Fort, Horse Sand Fort and No Man's Land Fort.

The fort is of clear aesthetic value as a striking monument with the seascape, and as an incredible feat of Victorian engineering. The historical value of the fort is enhanced by the survival of contemporary documents relating to its construction and use.

For many St Helen's Fort is of communal value as the site of an annual unofficial walk from St Helens beach to the fort at the lowest tide of the year.

References

PF website

VF website

HE website

NT website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Steyne Wood Battery (OA96)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Bembridge
NGR	SZ 64100 86900
Group	Isle of Wight

PASTSCAPE#	No pastscape
HER#	2692, MIW2677
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1427301: Steyne Wood Battery
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

At the time of its construction, Steyne Wood Battery belonged to a line of near-contemporary defensive works on the east coast of the Isle of Wight, including Sandown Barrack Battery Yaverland Battery, Redcliff Battery (1861-3; which following cliff erosion in the mid-late 19th century was abandoned and then demolished) and Bembridge Fort.

Styne Wood High Angle Battery is of group value with the other surviving examples of its type including Fort Cumberland High Angle Battery, Hawkins High Angle Battery and Verne Citadel High Angle Battery.

Brief History

Completed in 1894. The 'Twydall' profile of the battery - named after the prototype Grange and Woodlands Redoubts, collectively known as the Twydall Redoubts - with its six sunken gun emplacements, steel palisade and earthworks - represented a change in national defensive tactics at this time towards concealed fortifications which disappeared into the landscape, rather than the more prominent defensive works previously favoured.

There has been some debate as to whether the battery was ever armed but this is confirmed by a list of Armaments of Southern District (Committee of Imperial Defence, 10) which states that six 9-inch RML guns on high angle mountings had been mounted by the time of writing in 1898.

Due to changing perceptions of the national threat, also rapidly changing technologies in terms of armaments, Steyne Wood Battery was only in service until 1898. Despite a proposal to extend the battery with two further guns it was disarmed and decommissioned in 1899. In May 1909, the battery was sold at auction along with an adjoining 12 acres of land.

Outline Description

The following description is taken from the HE Scheduling description -

The battery is broadly triangular on plan with its gun emplacements in an arc on a north-south axis, facing east. These are arranged in pairs and are numbered on original plans from south to north. Between each pair of guns

is a Bomb Proof Shelter, also numbered from south to north. The original plans are then later annotated and they are renamed Cartridge Stores. Between Nos. 2 and 3 emplacements and also between Nos. 4 and 5 are Cartridge and Shell Stores. Behind No 4 is the Artillery Store (now - in 2015 - a cottage and therefore not included in the scheduling). In front of the guns (to the east) is a rampart and ditch. To the rear (west) is a parados, a bank of earth behind the guns to protect the soldiers from a surprise rear attack. The parade is to the west of the parados. To the rear (west) of the parade is a further rampart and ditch of Twydall profile. The entire battery was surrounded by a palisade fence which has been removed although the line of it remains clear and it is understood that some standards for the fence survive. The entrance to the battery is from the south where an access road approaches the entrance, just inside of which is the Guard House (marked on the original plans as such, also 'Caretaker's Quarters'..... To the immediate north of the Guard House is a well and to its north-east is a building known as the 'Actylene House' (which was a secondary function in association with the domestic use of the site and the supply of gas to the house) but which was originally the Position Finder Store.

Condition

Good.

Some of the associated buildings such as the guard house have been altered. The gun emplacements are well maintained by the private residents (PF Society visit 2012).

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located 700m to the south west of Bembridge and 500m north-west of the cliff edge. The battery is facing south east towards the English Channel. It is situated within an area of woodland and is surrounded by development to the south-west, open fields and woodland.

Threats

None identified.

Ownership

Private.

Occupancy

Unknown.

Current use(s)

Converted into a residence.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

This is one of the best surviving Victorian batteries currently known including sharp profiles to its earthworks and quite extraordinary survival in its Bomb Proof Stores and Cartridge and Shell Stores including original external and internal fixtures and fittings and painted signage. All of the fort's principal features survive including its outer palisade and ancillary buildings including its Position Finder Store, both of which are a rare survival;

It is one of only six High Angle batteries ever built in England, designed as a response to increasingly armoured enemy warships, and is one of only four survivors. Styne Wood High Angle Battery is of group value with the other surviving examples of its type including Fort Cumberland High Angle Battery, Hawkins High Angle Battery and Verne Citadel High Angle Battery.

The battery had a short but clearly-defined period of use and is representative of that period in terms of cutting-edge fortification technology, as it was not subject to later adaption its form remains highly legible.

References

PF website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Warden Point Battery (OA97)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Freshwater
NGR	SZ 32480 8763
Group	Portsmouth, Isle of Wight, Needles Passage

PASTSCAPE#	459494 (Warden Point Battery)
HER#	1278
Heritage status	Warden Point Battery is not listed or Scheduled.
	Warden Point gun emplacement (list entry number 1220509), not Warden Point Battery is protected.
Recommendations	Warden Point Battery is under threat from development, there is also potential for surviving below-ground archaeology relating to the former gun emplacement. A programme of archaeological recording should be put in place to enable preservation by record.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Needles Passage defences with: Hurst Castle, Fort Albert (OA83), Fort Victoria (OA85), Cliff End Battery (OA82), New Needles Battery (OA89), Freshwater Redoubt (OA86), Culverdown Battery (OA84), Golden Hill Battery (OA87), Old Needles Battery (OA91) and Hatherwood Battery (OA88).

Brief History

A two gun battery occupied the cliff-top in 1803 and the Royal Commission proposed a six-gun battery to replace it in 1860, it was completed in 1863.

Between 1880 and 1895 several proposals were made to rearm the fort with heavier guns but nothing was done until 1892-3 when the left-hand RML emplacements were demolished in order to built two experimental emplacements for long-range and high-angle mountings, together with a magazine sited between the two emplacements. The trials proved to be a success and the gun emplacements at Warden Point were demolished in 1898 as the site was not suitable for a high angle battery. In 1898-99 four 6-inch BL Mk VII gun emplacements were fitted to the fort in two groups of two. At the same time two 9.2-inch gun emplacements were constructed to the south of the battery. A third one was added in 1900. The armament was in place by 1902. The four 6-inch guns were put in reserve by the Owen Committee recommendations in 1907. In World War One the fort saw a new lease of life with the 6-inch guns reactivated, but two were removed in 1914. Two 3-pdr QF guns had been fitted between the right and centre 9.2-inch BL guns in 1907 and were used until 1918.

After the war the guns were used by the Territorials for summer camps. The 6-inch emplacements had to be rebuilt in 1923-24 because of subsidence. One 9.2-inch BL was removed in 1929 and the others in 1936. Light AA weapons and searchlights were installed in World War Two, the fort serving throughout the war as HQ 530 Coast regiment. It was retained for storage after the war and was sold off in 1957. Until 1995 it was part of a holiday camp.

Outline Description

The original battery had the following elements, which may survive as buried archaeology –

The battery had positions for eight guns, in two groups of four, firing en-barbette. The armament was four 7-inch of 7 tons with four 9-inch of 12 tons. In 1873 the 7-inch guns were replaced with the intended armament, another four 9-inch RML guns. At the centre rear of the gun positions was a large magazine. The landward side of the fort was protected by a loopholed wall with caponiers at the the northeast and southeast corners. Another projected out from the east wall to protect the entrance and flank the gorge wall. This served as a shell filling room and laboratory. A ditch ran around the landward sides of the fort. Barrack accommodation was not provided as the soldiers to man the fort were to be quartered in nearby Golden Hill fort.

The site was sold in 1957 and elements of the fort were demolished to create a holiday camp, these are described below as there is potential for elements to survive as below ground archaeology.

All the concrete and brick buildings, along the internal face of the loophole wall, were demolished as was the old engine room by the main gate. The dry ditch around the exterior was in-filled, except to the north of the site. The southern side of the perimeter wall was demolished, including the southern caponier and many of the loopholes were closed with brickwork. The magazines below the 6-inch gun emplacements were stripped of their fittings and decorated whilst the barbettes themselves were buried beneath made-up ground to create a level platform with landscaped terraces for the construction of the chalets. The northern magazines below the 9.2-inch gun emplacements were untouched but the southern one was decorated and a bowling ally and communal showers installed. The barbettes above were roofed over and partially buried below made-up ground the spaces were used for storage, a discotheque and cinema. The searchlight command post was reduced to a single story building and used for storage whilst the new engine room to the north was replaced by a swimming pool for the Fort Warden Holiday Camp.

The long Victorian brickwork loophole wall, at the north-eastern side of the site, as well as the remaining concrete gun emplacements, are protected.

Condition

Very bad.

Most of the battery has been demolished.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Warden Point Battery is located 400m north of Totland and 100m south east of the coastline. The battery faces north-west towards the westerly confluence between the Solent and the English Channel. It is situated in a developed area of coastline, with modern residential housing further inland from the battery.

Threats

The site is under threat from Fort Warden Housing development, the surrounding setting has already been developed. It is understood that the current development plans show the main gate and loophole wall as a retained feature of the final phase of the Fort Warden Heights housing development.

Uncontrolled plant growth.

Deterioration in need of management.

Possible threat from coastal erosion.

Ownership

Commercial. Until *c* 2014 the land was owned by Roseberry (Yarmouth) Limited, but this company has now been dissolved. The current owner is unknown.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Not in use.

Until the late 20th century the surrounding area was used as a holiday park. Until *c* 2006 the battery and areas adjacent were being converted into residential housing. This is currently on hold due to planning issues and it is unknown who now owns the land.

Development proposals

TCP/17112/X, P/01160/06, 12/05/2006, Appeal Lodged (on hold until certain conditions met) Fort Warden Holiday Village Fort Warden Road Totland Bay PO390DA. Construction of 17 apartments in 2 two storey blocks to include accommodation within roofspace.

Summary of Significance

Some.

Much of the battery was demolished in the mid-20th century, and only some elements of the battery survive. There is high potential for buried archaeology.

References

PF website

VF website

Wikipedia website

Fortwardenheight website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Yaverland Fort and Battery (OA98)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	Sandown
NGR	SZ 61531 85262
Group	Isle of Wight

PASTSCAPE#	461924 (fort) , 1426287 (battery)
HER#	1164
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1021443: Yaverland Battery, 660m south of Yaverland Church
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Yaverland Fort.

Brief History

Completed in 1864 as a result of the Royal Commision, it was to be armed with eight 7-inch RBL guns and was well provided with magazine accommodation. The 7-inch RBL guns were replaced by 64-pdr RML by 1879. In 1887 it was decided to remove one 64-pdr from the the left flank of the battery and to construct a traverse instead to prevent ships from enfilading the battery from the Culver Cliff area. The remaining 64-pdr were to be blocked up on 6ft. parapet slides, this work was carried out by 1892.

In the 1890s three 6-inch BL Mk VII guns were fitted. Between 1898 and 1900 the battery was remodelled to take three 6-inch BL Mk VII guns. The battery was assisted by a searchlight in the cliff east of the battery another at Sandown Fort. In 1910 the no 3 gun was classed as mounted in reserve and removed.

Further additional building were constructed in the period 1914 to 1915. In 1932 the battery was reduced to practice status and the guns scheduled for ultimate withdrawal.

Between the Wars the battery was used for Territorial Army Summer camps and Kings Cup Shoots. During the 1920s two searchlights were installed in concrete shelters near water level for night practice. The Yaverland Coast Artillery Search Lights were closed down. in 1942 when Culver Battery's night role was ended.

The battery and its searchlights was re-activated in 1943 as a Home Guard installation covering Sandown Bay. In April 1943 the battery was reactivated when two 6-inch Mk VII guns were emplaced and it was manned by the Home Guard for the remainder of the War.

In 1956 all guns were removed and the site sold off, and it now forms part of the Sandown Bay Holiday Centre.

Outline Description

This open battery is broadly triangular, or wedge-shaped, in plan, aligned with the gun batteries facing south-west and protected in front by a ditch.

The HE Scheduled Monument description describes the fort which are detailed below, and the different elements of the battery are described in more detail in the HE description.

'The front ditch, gorge, Carnot walls and southern caponiers survive in good condition. Although the original gun positions were, with one exception, removed during the remodelling of the battery in the late 1890s (as were, at that time or subsequently, the original magazines, barrack block and northern caponiers), the remodelled 1890s gun positions and magazines survive particularly well. They retain the remains of shell hoists, lamp recesses, ammunition hatches and signage'.

Condition

Poor.

The building is at the HAR register under category C – 'Slow decay; no solution agreed'.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located on the coastline to the east of the village of Yaverland. The battery faces south east towards the English Channel, with a holiday park directly inland from the battery.

Threats

Uncontrolled plant growth.

Decay of fabric/ in need of management - partial collapse of carnot wall.

Possible development threat (see below).

Possible threat from coastal erosion.

Ownership

Commercial company. Freehold Glenn Collins and Christine Conwell who are leasehold private residents.

The owners of the site are in receivership and the site is for sale.

Current use(s)

Part of Sandown Bay Holiday Centre with chalets on most of the site.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Development proposals

In 2009 the new owners outlined plans for 250 new chalets on the site with phase 1 of the development being 21 apartments and 24 cottages (Isle of Wight County Press Online, 2009).

P/02654/08 - TCP/20193/T(Withdrawn) 24th August 2009. Construction of building forming 21 holiday apartments to include swimming pool; construction of 24 holiday cottages; alterations to vehicular access, (revised scheme)

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is a Scheduled Monument.

Yaverland Battery survives well and it remains a good example of a Royal Commission open battery. The remodelled 1890s gun position and magazines are extant including associated artefacts, fixtures and fittings. The original magazines, barrack block and norther caponiers have however been removed. The setting of the battery has been affected by the very close proximity of the holiday park.

References

iwcp website

PF website

VF website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Nodes Point Battery (OA99)

County	Isle of Wight
District	Isle of Wight
Parish	St Helens
NGR	SZ 63500 89879
Group	Portsmouth, Spitbank Group

PASTSCAPE#	461926
HER#	461926
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Nodes Point Battery is part of the wider Spitbank Defences, also included within this group are: Browndown Battery, Fort Monckton, Fort Blockhouse and Puckpool Battery. Four sea forts are also part of the Spitbank defences, these are: No Man's Land, St Helen's Fort, Horse Sand Fort and Spitbank Fort. Nodes Point Battery is similar in construction to Culver Battery, which were the last two fortifications to be built on the east coast of the Isle of Wight.

Brief History

The battery covers the mouth of the eastern river Yar, which, as the entrance to Bembridge Harbour, would be a potential landing point for enemy troops invading the Island – especially those wishing to attack the Sandown Bay defences from the rear – as well as a safe anchorage for enemy ships, protected from the elements.

The idea for the battery was contained in the Royal Commission Report of 1860 when it was proposed to build a fort at St Helens Point to prevent a landing between Nettlestone Point and Bembridge; the fort was never built as it was eventually replaced by St Helens Fort.

In 1899 the Montgomery Committee recommended that there should be an extra battery of 9. Two-inch guns to cover the area off the north-east coast of the island not covered by the guns. Between 1901 and 1904 the Battery was built and mounted two 9.2-inch and two 6-inch guns.

The Owen Report of 1905 decided that only the 9.2-inch guns were necessary, in a counter bombardment role, and that the six inch guns could be removed; they were withdrawn in August 1909.

The battery remained in use through the First World War, in the 1930s and into the Second World War. It was put into care and maintenance in 1945. It was used for training, and the guns were scrapped in 1956 at the end of coastal artillery.

Outline Description

The battery consisted of four guns. The right flank held the battery's main armaments, two 9.2-inch guns, with two 6-inch guns on the left flank. The battery was protected by iron fences, a steel palisade, ditches and wire, as well as a 10-foot high wall and blockhouses. Also on site was the Battery Command Post, a Position Finding Cell near the 6-inch guns, drill hall, tackle shed, artillery, coal and other supplies stores, guard house, quarters and latrines.

The battery is now the Nodes Point Holiday Park; the gun emplacements have been either buried (9.2-inch) or demolished (6-inch) but their position is easily recognisable. The guardhouse and drill hall survive, the former is the reception area for the holiday park whilst the latter, considerablyaltered, is the dining and recreation area. The ferro-concrete wall survives to its full height and virtually its full length; the PF cell is extant and has been converted to residential use, the adjacent blockhouse (No 4) is derelict.

Condition

Poor.

As described above, there are some surviving remains of the former battery, including the guardhouse, drill hall, PF cell, blockhouse and the ferro-concrete wall survives to its full height and virtually its full length.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Nodes Point Battery is at Nodes Point, halfway between the villages of Bembridge and Seaview. It is close to the coast and surrounded by the chalets of the holiday park.

Threats

Visitor wear and tear.

Ownership

Parkdean Resorts.

Current use(s)

Holiday park.

Occupancy

In use.

Development proposals

No current applications identified. There are several historic planning applications dating from 2004 to 2012.

Summary of Significance

Some.

There is some surviving evidence of the former battery, including the guardhouse, drill hall, PF cell, blockhouse and the ferro-concrete wall. Much of

the battery has however been demolished. The remains have some communal value as buildings remain in use as part of the holiday park, however their military history is not easily appreciated or understood.

Historically, the battery had a long period of use following its construction at the turn of the century through the two world wars until the end of coastal artillery in 1956.

References

h2g2.com/edited_entry/A83150778

VF website

PastScapes

Compiler

Jane Phimester

AREA 8: SUSSEX

OA No.	Fort Name	Significance	Designated	Phase	Condition	HAR? Level	Threat
100	Newhaven Fort	A	SM	3 (RC)	3	C1	1, 3, 7
101	Littlehampton Fort	A	SM	2	3	C1	2, 3
102	Shoreham Fort	A	SM	2	1	x	1

Newhaven Fort (OA100)

County East Sussex
District Lewes
Parish Newhaven
NGR TQ 44774 00163
Group Newhaven

PASTSCAPE#	1424027
HER#	MES1785
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1002242: Newhaven military fort and lunette battery
Recommendations	Newhaven Fort is of exceptional significance and is in need of management to ensure its preservation.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Associated with Littlehampton Fort which is similar in design.

Brief History

The Palmerston Fort was built between 1865 and 1871 next to the existing Newhaven Upper Battery, which became incorporated into the fort as the Eastern Battery. Instead of levelling the site, as was customary, the fort was designed to conform to the existing contours. The fort was built to defend the harbour at Newhaven, on the south coast of England.

On the southern side the fort was designed to mount three 10-inch RML guns en barbette, six 9-inch RML guns in embrasures with iron shields. Above the Eastern Battery, two 9-inch RML guns were mounted on Moncrieff disappearing carriages. These were the largest Moncrieff guns ever mounted and the only arrangement of this kind in the UK.

The land front had space enough to mount eleven further guns with one being positioned in a Haxo casemate at the north-western salient. The old Eastern Battery was at a lower level to that of the rest of the Fort and had positions for four guns.

Between 1899 and 1901 all the RML guns were deemed obsolete and were removed. In 1901 work began on remodelling the fort to take two 6-inch BL and two 12-pdr QF guns, this work was completed in 1902.

During the Second World War the Fort was used as the base for the RAF rescue boat service that kept their boats in the harbour below the fort. The guns were removed in 1941 and the fort was abandoned by the Army in 1962

Outline Description

A wide moat protected the northern and western sides of the fort, which were lined with concrete, the first time this material had been used to any extent in a British fortification. The junction of the northern and western arms of the moat was protected by a counterscarp gallery and a sally port. The eastern side overlooking the harbour was protected by a short wet moat and by the embankment of the harbour.

A caponier at the foot of the chalk cliffs was reached by a tunnel from within the fort. The garrison was to be housed in casemated barracks built into the northern and western ramparts. The main entrance at the north east angle was accessed by an 'Equilibrium Bridge' designed and patented by the architect (Ardagh).

Under the northern ramparts were built a range of 18 accommodation casemates with the officers'accommodation being provided in the casemates beneath the eastern rampart.

The fort was sold in 1967 and fell into a state of disrepair, the Eastern Battery was flattened to facilitate housing development and the ditches filled with spoil. In 1982 Lewes Council began managing the fort and it is now open as a visitor attraction.

Condi tion

Poor.

Newhaven Fort is on the HAR register. The Victorian caponier is in very poor condition in places. The lunette battery was repaired with a HE grant by Lewes District Council in 2009.

Trend

Declining.

It is marked as category C: 'slow decay, no solution agreed' on the HAR register.

Setting

Newhaven Fort is located to the west of the River Ouse, it is built on the cliff overlooking the entrance to Newhaven harbour. It is immediately surrounded by the wooded area of Fort Hill, with the developed area of Newhaven to the rear and Newhaven Harbour and ferry terminal further inland from the fort.

Threats

Deterioration/ in need of management - the condition of the 19th century caponier is deteriorating.

The Palmeston Forts Society datasheet for the fort dated 2016 notes that the council are looking for someone else to take over the management of the fort.

Indirect development threat to the fort's setting.

Ownership

Local Authority. Lewes District Council

Occupancy

Vacant/ not in use

Current use(s)

Open to visitors, used for events and displays. The fort houses a number of collections including Sussex and Surrey Yeomanry and the Royal Observer Corps.

Development proposals

Planning application no LW/15/0034 - Land Adjacent Fisher Terminal East Quay Newhaven East Sussex, planning outcome still undecided: On the opposite bank of the estuary, proposals for a significant quantity of land reclamation and development, primarily to support the construction and implementation of Rampion Windfarm.

HE sent a detailed response to the local authority and noted that any development within the open setting of the fort that is substantial, dense, or high enough to block or detract from the forts gun sightlines or tactical location, may cause harm to the heritage significance of the fort. We identified the proposals would therefore require additional and rigorous assessment to ensure their scale, massing, location and design, were planned sympathetically in order to minimise harm to the fort (HE pers comm).

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Newhaven Fort is of exceptional significance as the largest defence work built in Sussex, and has a number of special architectural and engineering features which set it apart from other examples. Although in poor condition and on the HAR register, overall the fort is of evidential value as it survives well.

Aesthetically and historically Newhaven is an impressive fort, it was constructed 3/4 years later than other Royal Commission forts and it has a quality of craftsmanship and detailing the set it apart. The passage behind the brick casemates below the north rampart is wide and lofty, the communicating passages and stairs are also on a grander scale.

Newhaven Fort is an example of new engineering techniques including a concrete lined moat, which at the time of construction was the first time this material has been used extensively in fort architecture. The main entrance at the north east angle was accessed by an 'Equilibrium Bridge' which was designed and patented by the architect (Ardagh).

The fort is also significant in the type of weaponry used; above the Eastern Battery, two 9-inch RML guns were mounted on Moncrieff disappearing carriages. These were the largest Moncrieff guns ever mounted and the only arrangement of this kind in the UK. The fort has two Moncrieff Pits.

References

PF website

VF website

HE website

Wikipedia website

Saunders A 1989

HE pers comm (20th August 2016)

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Littlehampton Fort (OA101)

County	West Sussex
District	Arun
Parish	Littlehampton
NGR	TQ 02692 01184
Group	Littlehampton

PASTSCAPE#	1427813, 392894
HER#	MWS3361
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1005809: A 19th century artillery fort known as Littlehampton Fort, 317m south west of the Windmill Theatre
Recommendations	The fort is a significant as example as a precursor to Palmerston forts. It is on the HAR register although an active local group are improving its condition. Its conservation and further understanding of archaeological evidence relating to the fort should be prioritised.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Littlehampton Fort and Shoreham Forts were both built prior to the Royal Commission phase of construction, and were prototypes for the design of later forts.

Shoreham Fort differs from Littlehampton Fort as it had positions for five guns instead of six, and it has open bastions for musketry at the salients in place of roofed caponiers.

Brief History

The fort was built in 1854 on the west side of the bank to protect the entrance to the River Arun at Littlehampton against possible attack by the French. Its active use as a fort was only about 20 years, due to technical changes in armaments, but it is important as a precursor of the later Palmerston Forts. It replaced an earlier battery built in 1764 on the opposite side of the river, which had been disarmed in 1834 to be used as a coastguard station.

When completed the fort was armed with five smooth bore guns, although in the 1870s it was recommended that these be upgraded to more modern 64-pdr RML guns, however this was never actioned. The Committee on Coast Defences Report of 1873 found that Littlehampton Fort was inadequate, as it only had smooth bore guns and it was weakly constructed with open bastions and no casemates for the guns and no iron-cladding. The poor silted-up state of Littlehampton Harbour, meant that it was no longer considered worthy of defence, and the fort was eventually disarmed and abandoned in 1873.

Littlehampton Fort was re-fortified during the Second World War and an observation post was built nearby between 1940 and 1941.

Outline Description

The fort was constructed in the shape of a lunette, a straight-sided crescent. It has a platform for the guns with ramparts surrounded by a wide dry ditch, which incorporated a carnot wall with loop-holes. In addition, at each corner

were projecting open bastions from which the garrison could fire at besiegers along the length of the wall. To the rear of the gun platform was a fortified barrack block. A further barrack block was later built outside the fort to house additional troops. Two underground magazines were sited at the ends of the gun battery and shell recesses were provided near to the guns on the terreplein.

The Historic England Scheduling description further describes the fort –

'The fort is built of red brick and pebble and includes a lunette battery for three 68-pdr guns and two 32-pdr guns, which is surrounded by a detached Carnot wall with three open bastions defended by musket loops. Although the fort is largely covered by sand the Carnot wall is thought to survive to full height with original coping. The exterior moat is completely filled with sand but survives as a buried feature. The barrack block and offices to the rear of the fort were partially demolished in about 1965 but the foundations are still visible. The fort is similar in design to Shoreham Fort, which is also a scheduled monument, but the Carnot wall has open bastions instead of caponiers'.

Condition

Poor.

On the HAR Register 2015, and is marked as category 'C' slow decay; no solution agreed'.

There are actions in place to improve the condition of the fort; a local group, the Littlehampton Fort Restoration Project, are in discussions are with the owner to create a new management plan for the site.

A project is in place to remove the ivy from the walls in 2015-2017.The website of the Littlehampton Fort Restoration Project shows that there has been volunteer days where areas of the fort have been excavated from the sand.

Trend

Declining.

A project is however in place to improve the fort (see above).

Setting

Located on the west bank of the River Arun facing south to the English Channel, at the entrance to Littlehampton Harbour. The fort is immediately surrounded by a golf course to the rear with developed area of Littlehampton of the east side of the bank to River Arun. It largely retains its primary open setting.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation – ivy poses the main threat to the structure.

Deterioration/ in need of management – parts of the fort are covered in sand dunes which have SSSI status, however these have offered protection to the fort against the elements and have aided its preservation.

The protection of the fort by sand dunes have largely disguised it from public view, as more of the fort is exposed consideration will need to be given to threats such as vandalism and public access.

Ownership

Commercial company.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Derelict.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Littlehampton Fort is historically and architecturally significant as a precursor to Palmerston Forts. It was the first of its kind in the United Kingdom; its carnot wall and three open bastions make it unique. Littlehampton Fort was built before Shoreham Fort, both were important examples of experimental fortification, using a carnot wall. The design flaws from building Littlehampton Fort were corrected at Shoreham Fort before going on to build the more elaborate fortifications in Portsmouth.

Recent work at the fort shows that is survives well beneath the sand including the carnot wall and coping. The barrack block and offices have been demolished, but the foundations are extant.

There is potential to enhance understanding of the fort, particularly for remains relating to the Second World War which may be further understood through further investigation and surviving below-ground (sand) evidence. The Littlehampton Fort restoration project have improved understanding of the fort, its surviving remains and history.

References

PF website

HE website

Littlehamptonfort website

Wikipedia website

West Sussex planning portal website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Shoreham Fort (OA102)

County	West Sussex
District	Adur
Parish	Shoreham by Sea
NGR	TQ 23347 04541
Group	Littlehampton

PASTSCAPE#	398937
HER#	MWS839
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1005824: Shoreham Fort, 120m SSE of East House
Recommendations	Threat from coastal erosion or flood events in the future, as the flood defence scheme does not extend as far as the fort.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Littlehampton Fort and Shoreham Forts were both built prior to the Royal Commission phase of construction, and were prototypes for the design of later forts.

Brief History

Shoreham Fort sits on a shingle spit on the west bank of the entrance to the river Adur. The fort was built to defend nearby Shoreham harbour and was built in 1857, prior to the Royal Commission. The design flaws from building Littlehampton Fort were corrected at Shoreham Fort before going on to build the more elaborate fortifications in Portsmouth, one of which is our Royal Armouries museum, Fort Nelson.

The history of the fort is described in the Historic England Scheduling description –

> *'Shoreham Fort was completed in 1857 and was designed to guard the entrance to Shoreham Harbour. It represents a significant phase of experimental fortification, following 19th century developments in heavy guns with increased range.*
>
> *The fort was manned by the 1st Sussex Volunteer Artillery of Eastern Division, Royal Artillery, during the 19th century. In the Second World War an emergency coastal battery with a 6-inch ex-naval gun was mounted south-west of the fort. The fort was restored between 1977 and 1979'.*

The fort was designed to position six smooth bore muzzle-loaded guns. On completion it was armed with six 68-pdr guns, in the 1880s these were replaced by 64-pdr RML guns on emplacements I, II and VI and 80-pdr RML on emplacements III and IV.

Outline Description

The fort is described in the Historic England Scheduling description –

> *'The fort comprises a polygonal bastion facing the sea and is constructed of red brick and pebble with details in granite. There is a dry moat on the seaward side, a surrounding Carnot wall with three caponiers at the salient*

angles, sally ports and gun positions. There are mountings for six guns on terrepleins, the rings and rails of which survive, with magazines below. The Carnot wall is up to 3.7m high with rifle slits and a rounded top to make it difficult for assailants to mount. On the northern side of the fort are the foundations of the barracks, which were demolished in 1960'.

The emplacements stood about 4.6m above sea level, so the visibility over the harbour entrance and neighbouring beaches would be increased, enhancing the defence of the fort.

The covered bastions (caponiers) which can be entered from the inside of the fort, allowed defenders to fire along the outside of the Carnot wall whilst still being under cover. These represent a development from the open bastions built a few years earlier at Littlehampton Fort.

Condition

Good.

The ditch is infilled and the barracks and some walls demolished, the rest of the fort including the six emplacements are intact. The Friends of Shoreham Fort maintain the fort.

The Second World War emergency battery has been demolished, and western observation tower have been demolished.

Trend

Stable.

A local group have been actively caring for the fort, and improving understanding of the fort's history and access to the public.

Setting

Located to the south of Shoreham by the Sea on a split of land between the River Ardur to the north and the English Channel to the south. Directly inland from the fort and in close proximity is modern housing development.

Threats

Coastal erosion - Shoreham Harbour Flood Defence Scheme is currently being implemented but this will not extend around the headland of Shoreham, and there is a low key approach to maintaining the coast/beach at this point. This could leave the fort vulnerable to coastal retreat in the future, or significant flood events.

Ownership

Commercial. Shoreham Port Authority

Current use(s)

The Friends of Shoreham Fort open the site for open days and volunteer days.

Occupancy.

Not applicable.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Historically, Shoreham Fort (with Littlehampton Fort) is an important example of experimental fortification, using a carnot wall. The design flaws from building Littlehampton Fort were corrected at Shoreham Fort before going on to build the more elaborate fortifications in Portsmouth.

The covered bastions (caponiers) represent a development from the open bastions built a few years earlier at Littlehampton Fort, and are an important example of a new and experimental engineering feature.

Shoreham Fort survives well and is of clear evidential value, there has been some demolition of walls and infilling of the ditch and structures dating from its Second World War use have been lost. The Friends of Shoreham Fort group have improved understanding of the fort, its surviving remains and history, which has further enhanced its value.

References

PF website

Shoreham Fort website

Wikipedia website

HE pers comm (20th August 2016)

Compiler

Jane Phimester

OA no.	Fort name	Significance	Designated	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
103	Woldingham Fort	B	SM	4	2	x	7
104	Alderstead Fort	B	SM	4	3	C1	1, 2, 3
105	Reigate Fort	B	SM	5	2	x	2, 5, 8
106	Betchworth Fort	B	SM	4	2	x	2
107	Boxhill Fort	B	SM	4	1	x	1, 8
108	Henley Grove	B	SM	4	1	x	8
109	North Weald Redoubt	A	SM	4	3	A2	1, 3, 4, 5
110	Fort Halstead	A	SM	4	1	x	6
111	Farningham Fort	B	SM	5	1	x	6
112	Fosterdown Fort	B	SM	5	2	x	2
113	Pewley Hill Fort	D	x	4	3	x	x
114	Westerham Fort (Beston's Hill)	C	x	5	2	x	x

Woldingham Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA103)

County Surrey
District Tandridge
Parish Tandridge
NGR TQ 3797 5470
Group London

PASTSCAPE#	403891
HER#	1254 – MSE1254
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1019287: Woldingham Fort: a London mobilisation centre 500m south of Whistlers Wood Farm
Recommendations	There is a potential threat to the setting of the fort through a planning application which requires consideration.

Type

Mobilisation Centre.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

One of a group of 12 mobilisation centres built around London, with strong group value. The fort is unlike the other mobilisation centres in construction and plan.

Brief History

The London mobilisation centres were constructed between 1889 and 1903. Following abandonment of the London Defence Positions, the site at Woldingham was sold in around 1909.

A house was constructed on top of the cartridge store during the later part of the 20th century, and the chambers incorporated as basement rooms. The house and its basement rooms, remain occupied as a private residence. Associated with the main compound are the original semi-detached pair of

caretakers' cottages and the mobilisation tool store, which have been altered, and are now occupied as private residences.

Outline Description

The following is taken from the Scheduling description –

'The north west-south east aligned, hexagonal compound is defined by a low, earthen bank around 5m wide and 1.3m high, which has been levelled on its southern side, and which was originally completely enclosed behind spiked metal railings, sections of which survive at various points around the circuit.....Contained within the compound are two rectangular magazine blocks, comprising a shell store, partly sunk below ground level in the northern part of the compound, and a cartridge store, constructed almost entirely below the level of the surrounding ground surface, on the southern edge of the compound. The two roomed, brick-built structures, which appear to have undergone later subdivision by the addition of further internal walls, are enclosed, on three sides, by concrete walls and a flat, concrete roof. In the event of an explosion, the concrete shell around the magazine, would have helped to contain the blast...The magazines retain many of their original features, including lamp recess casements and part of the hoist mechanism for the cartridge store, designed to lift ammunition to ground level for collection'.

Condition

Fair.

The bank is still extant, and the tool store and shell store buildings have been converted into residential houses/ garages.

Trend

Unknown.

It is thought however, that the condition is stable.

Setting

The fort is located on the ridge of the North Downs, 1.2km south east of Woldingham. The fort is within a green residential area, with some of the buildings converted for residential use.

Threats

Planning threat (*see* below).

Possible threat from continued use of buildings to the extant fixtures and fittings.

Ownership

Private (multiple)

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Residential houses and gardens.

Development proposals

Planning application A/2012/902 is a major application that will have a present and ongoing impact on the fort's setting. The application relates to Oxted Quarry, Chalkpit Lane, Oxted.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Woldingham Mobilisation Centre is of considerable evidential value, despite some later additions and conversion the site retains important elements of a mobilisation centre. It is thought that original fixtures and fittings survive, including doors, fencing and ventilation shutters.

Historically, the centre is significant because unlike most of the other surviving mobilisation centres it has no outer ditch and little defensive capability. This variation in construction contributes towards our understanding of the different functions of each centre, and their role in the strategic defence of London. Woldingham Fort has strong group value with the 12 surviving forts situated around London.

The fort is of limited communal value as it is not readily accessible, but it is of value to those that live there. Contemporary plans of the fort, and several detailed studies of the mobilisation centres add to the body of knowledge and significance of the Woldingham Fort and mobilisation centres.

References

VF website

HE website

Smith, V 1975

Beanse, A and Gill, R 2011

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Alderstead Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA104)

County	Surrey
District	Merstham
Parish	Reigate and Banstead
NGR	TQ 2952 5443
Group	London

PASTSCAPE#	400380
HER#	1061
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1018073: Alderstead Fort: a London mobilisation centre at Merstham
Recommendations	Discussions need to take place with the owners to agree a project to enable the site to be conserved and maintained.

Type

Mobilisation Centre.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Alderstead Fort is one of 12 mobilisation centres around London and has strong group value. It is a small fort similar in construction to Box Hill and Betchworth forts, however the magazine is smaller but with a larger trace.

Brief History

Alderstead Fort is also known as 'East Merstham Fort'. The London mobilisation centres were constructed between 1889 and 1903, and the Alderstead Fort is thought to have been built in 1900 and sold off in 1908.

Outline Description

The Scheduling Description describes the mobilisation centre –

'The monument falls into two separate areas and includes the main compound and tool store of East Merstham mobilisation centre, known as Alderstead Fort, situated on a chalk ridge of the Surrey Downs. The main compound forms the south western part of the monument and houses a three-roomed magazine fronted by five casemates. It survives as a roughly north west-south east aligned, north east facing, flat-roofed structure constructed mainly of reinforced concrete and brick, with a large, crescent-shaped earthen blast-bank partly covering and flanking the magazine to the rear. Beyond the bank is an up to 10m wide ditch. The building retains many original fittings, including iron-and-wood door and window shields and magazine vents. The associated red-brick tool store lies around 75m to the north east and is a north east-south west aligned, single storey, rectangular building measuring 14m by 10m, with white washed sandstone dressings under a pitched, blue slate roof. The south eastern face has full-length, central double doors flanked by tall windows with iron grilles. The original caretaker's lodge, situated around 40m to the north east, is in use as a dwelling and is therefore not included in the scheduling'

Condition

Poor.

The fort is on the HAR register.

Trend

Declining.

Alderstad Fort is categorised on the HAR register as 'C - Slow decay; no solution agreed'.

Setting

The fort is located on the North Downs at Shepherd's Hill, 1km north of Merstham. It is an area of woodland, to the east of the M23.

Threats

Flooding - the magazines flood frequently due to a blocked drain

Uncontrolled vegetation - tree growth

Deterioration/in need of management.

Ownership

Private.

Occupancy

Vacant/ not in use.

Current use(s)

Unused, vacant.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Alderstead Fort is of considerable evidential value; it has remained largely free of alteration or renovation and, despite some natural decay and woodland regeneration, survives comparatively well. Architectural survey has shown that the monument retains evidence relating to the construction and use of mobilisation centres.

Today the immediate setting of the fort is compromised by the quantity of disused items surrounding it, and the overgrown woodland it which it is situated. However, the fort survives well, particularly the Tool Store which is largely unchanged and considered to be the least altered of this type of structure. The fort is therefore of evidential value, and of some aesthetic value. The significance of the fort is enhanced by an architectural survey of the remains (Gill 1995), and several studies on mobilisation centres. The mobilisation store is on private land and therefore has limited communal value.

References

HE website.

VF website

Gill, RJ 1995

Smith, V 1975

Beanse, A and Gill, R 2011

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Reigate Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA105)

County	Surrey
District	Reigate and Banstead
Parish	Reigate
NGR	TQ 25700 52060
Group	London

PASTSCAPE#	400377
HER#	1060 – MSE1060
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1019245: Reigate Fort: a London mobilisation centre
Recommendations	None

Type

Mobilisation centre

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Reigate Fort is one of 12 mobilisation centres built around London, and has strong group value with the surviving forts.

Brief History

Reigate Fort is thought to have been constructed in 1900, and was sold in 1907. It was however recommissioned during the Second World War and used by Canadian troops. It possibly played a part in wartime communications for the army's South East Command which was based in tunnels a few hundred metres from the fort.

Reigate Fort has been owned by the National Trust since 1932.

The structure was falling into disrepair, but grant money enabled the Trust to restore the building beginning in 2000.

Outline Description

The following has been taken from the Scheduling description –

'The east-west aligned, elongated compound is defined by a large earthen rampart, roughly `D'-shaped in plan. A deep, unrevetted outer ditch completely encloses the compound.... Access to the interior parade is through loopholed steel gates, with flanking concrete piers, in the rampart at the eastern end of the gorge. The entrance is reached by a causeway across the ditch...Inside the entrance is an almost entirely subterranean magazine block, consisting of two main chambers, and covered by an earthen blast mound.... Many original features survive, including the notices labelling various components of the magazine. On the southern side of the parade, below ground level, are two rectangular casemates set into the rear of the rampart.... A mobilisation tool store with a pitched, slate roof was usually located outside the perimeter ditch. Unusually, a large brick-built tool store with a flat concrete roof was constructed inside the main compound at Reigate Fort, close to the entrance at the eastern end of the parade'.

Condition

Fair.

The ditch, magazine, tool store, firing step, casemates and caretakers cottages are still extant.

Trend

Stable/ Improving.

The National Trust have been restoring the site.

Setting

Located on the North Downs on Reigate Hill, this location enjoys commanding views across the landscape to the south. Although sandwiched between the M25 and the development of Reigate, the fort is immediately surrounded by a large area of woodland.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation – HER data reports clearance of scrub and woodland.

Vandalism – HER data reports some graffiti, although this is thought to be limited.

Possible threat from visitor wear and tear.

Ownership

Charity (other).

The National Trust

Current use(s)

Visitor attraction.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable/ Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Reigate Fort is of considerable evidential value, it survives comparatively well, and remains largely free of alteration or renovation. It will retain evidence relating to the construction and use of mobilisation centres, and is of note for its unusual internal tool store and flint revetted parapet. Although not of high aesthetic quality, the fort has an impressive presence and a commanding setting.

The fort is of exceptional communal value; it opened to the public free of charge in 2007, though restoration work is ongoing. Information boards have been installed to tell visitors about the history of the fort. Contemporary construction plans survive of the fort, and the significance of the fort is further enhanced by several studies on mobilisation centres, which has increased understanding of these military installations.

References

VF website

NT website

HE website

Wikipedia website

Smith, V 1975

Beanse, A and Gill, R 2011

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Betchworth Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA106)

County	Surrey
District	Mole Valley
Parish	Brockham
NGR	TQ 2006 5149
Group	London

PASTSCAPE#	400495
HER#	1008 – MSE1008
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1020370: Betchworth Fort: a London mobilisation centre
Recommendations	None.

Type

Mobilisation Centre.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The fort is one of 12 mobilisation forts constructed around London, Betchworth Fort has strong group value with the surviving forts

Brief History

Betchworth Fort was built between April and October 1899. Following the abandonment of the London Defence Positions, the site was sold in 1908. The chambers of the casemates were subsequently converted for accommodation and were occupied for much of the 20th century. During this period, double doors were added to the eastern end of the magazine passage, and chimney stacks were constructed over the air vents in the flat, concrete roof

Outline Description

The Scheduling description provides a detailed account of the fort, which is summarised below –

The east-west aligned, roughly semi-circular compound, is defined on its southern front by a crescent shaped earthen rampart. The north facing gorge, approached by a track from the west, was made defensible by a row of five projecting casemates, with rear facing doors and windows still retaining their loopholed metal shutters. The top of the rampart, revetted on its inner edge with flint, is accessible from each courtyard, and was designed to function as a firing parapet.

The courtyards are linked by a sunken, covered corridor between the casemates to the north and the three roomed magazine block set into the rear of the rampart, or blast-bank, to the south. The magazine retains many of its original features, including the lamp recess casements and original notices labelling various components of the magazine.

Associated with the main compound are the original, semi-detached pair of caretakers' cottages, situated along the western approach road, around 100m west of the compound. Unusually there is no mobilisation tool store next to the caretaker's cottage.

Condition

Fair.

The casemates are altered into a bungalow and several residential houses located around the perimeter of the fort.

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

Located on the North Downs at Box Hill, today the fort is surrounded by a number of residential houses.

Threats

Possible uncontrolled vegetation –earthworks are overgrown and have tree growth.

Ownership

Private.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Casemates converted into a residential bungalow

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Betchworth Fort is of considerable evidential value; unusually for this type of monument it has remained largely free of alteration or renovation, and despite the conversion of the casemates for accommodation, the chambers remain substantially intact, and the magazine survive unmodified. It retains evidence relating to the construction and use of the mobilisation centre, as part of the strategic defence of the capital, at the start of the 20th century.

Fixtures and fixtures also survive, including within one of these chambers, the original fuse and tube locker. Within the magazine are many of its original features, including the lamp recess casements and original notices labelling various components of the magazine. The forts were functional structures with little architectural embellishment, but remain a commanding presence in the landscape and a visual reminder of the defence of the country at the turn of the century.

The fort is of some communal value for those that live there, and for those within the locality who will identify with it. Betchworth Fort has strong group value with twelve extant mobilisation centres. The value of the fort is enhanced

by surviving contemporary plans and recent detailed studies of mobilisation centres.

References

VF website

PastScapes

HE website

Smith, V 1975

Beanse, A and Gill, R 2011

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Box Hill Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA107)

County	Surrey
District	Mole Valley
Parish	Mickleham
NGR	TQ 17733 51417
Group	London

PASTSCAPE#	397451
HER#	191-MSE191
NT HBSMR#	127036
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1018074: Box Hill Fort: a London mobilisation centre
Recommendations	None

Type

Mobilisation Centre.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Boxhill Fort is one of 12 mobilisation centres constructed around London and has strong group value with the surviving forts. It is almost identical to Betchworth in design, varying only in the orientation of the lamp room and having a rounded trace rather than the angular one seen at Betchworth. It is also similar in design to East Merstham, and is set some way back from the face of the Down.

Brief History

The six acre site of the fort was originally purchased by the Ministry of Defence in 1891, and construction began in 1896. Boxhill Fort was constructed between May 1899 and August 1900.

In 1908 the fort was sold back to the estate trustees.

Outline Description

The following is taken form the Scheduled Monument description –

The north west-south east aligned compound survives as a north east facing, reinforced concrete and brick structure housing magazines and stores. The flat-roofed structure has been the subject of some modern repairs and consolidation. To the rear is a large, crescent-shaped earthen blast-bank flanked by an outer ditch. Associated with the main compound are the original caretaker's lodge and a tool store situated around 110m to the south east. These have been altered and extended and are in use as a visitor centre and office.

Condition

Good.

Conserved by the National Trust. The site is owned and managed by the National Trust, which has resulted in the conversion of the tool store and caretaker's office as a heritage centre and tea room.

The fort is a roost for bats and cannot be entered.

Trend

Stable

Setting

Located on the North Downs at Box Hill, around 2km north east of Dorking. The fort is situated within woodland and largely retains its original setting.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Possible threat to external fabric and landscape from visitor wear and tear.

Ownership

Charity (other). The National Trust.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in-use.

Current use(s)

The fort is not accessible as it is a roost for bats, however the area surrounding it is accessible to the public as part of the National Trust site.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The fort is of considerable evidential value, because despite some modern consolidation and repair, the Box Hill mobilisation centre survives comparatively well, retaining much evidence for the construction and original use of the monument. The site is owned and managed by the National Trust, which has resulted in the conversion of the tool store and caretaker's office. The fort retains some primary fixtures and fittings including the loopholed bulletproof shutters on the casemate block's doors and windows.

The fort has strong group value with the twelve extant mobilisation centres situated around London. It is also of communal value to National Trust visitors who are able to access the site externally, but not internally. The fort has limited architectural embellishment, but remains visually impressive with a prominent position in the landscape. The value of Box Hill Fort is enhanced by the survival of construction plans of the fort, and several research studies on mobilisation centres.

References

VF website

HE website

NT website

Smith, V 1975

Beanse, A and Gill, R 2011

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Henley Grove (Mobilisation Centre) (OA108)

County	Surrey
District	Guildford
Parish	Guildford
NGR	SU 9820 4885
Group	London

PASTSCAPE#	250280
HER#	1644- MSE 1644
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1019286: Henley Fort: a London mobilisation centre
Recommendations	None.

Type

Mobilisation Centre.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Henley Fort, the most westerly of the mobilisation centres and has strong group value with the surviving centres.

Brief History

The London mobilisation centres were constructed between 1889 and 1900. The tool store was added in 1902/3 and the site was sold off in 1907. It was later requisitioned during the Second World War when it was manned by the Home Guard. The site is currently used by the local authority as a field study centre for schools, and has been partly renovated.

Outline Description

The following is taken from the Scheduling description –

The main compound is broadly oval in plan and is defined by an earthen rampart, with a shallow, unrevetted ditch on its southern front and an outer bank beyond. The gorge is approached by a roadway from the east, linked to the main access route south of the compound, and was made defensible by loopholes in its north east facing wall.

Set into the rear of the forward rampart, on the southern side of the parade, is a three roomed magazine block, flanked by casemates. The corridor in front of the chambers contains a shifting lobby, where magazine personnel changed into protective and non-spark producing clothes. Its outer wall is pierced by two issuing hatches, through which ammunition was passed for collection. Small chambers, located close to the entrances at each end of the magazine passage, were designed to store fuses and lamps. Concrete steps at each end of the parade led up to a forward parapet on top of the rampart, allowing the mobilisation centre some degree of self-defence in the event of an enemy bombardment. Steps were added to the outer face of the rampart during the early 20th century, giving access to the western portion of the ditch, and several buildings added to the compound, now mostly removed or replaced.

Associated with the main compound are the original semi-detached pair of caretakers cottages and the mobilisation tool store, situated on the approach

road, to the north east of the entrance. These are now occupied as private residences.

Condition

Good.

Images show that that the fort is generally well maintained, however recent visits indicate there are some localised issues (including with concrete/render) which require repairs outside of the current maintenance program. There has been addition of structures within the area of the fort such as a classroom building, which are part of the education centre.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on the North Downs to the south west of Guildford situated on the Hog's Back, a ridge of the North Downs, on the south western outskirts of Guildford. This location enjoyed panoramic views across the surrounding landscape. The fort is immediately surrounded by open fields, but the wider landscape surrounding it is densely populated.

Threats

Possible threat from use of the building (wear and tear) as an education centre and additions/development associated with new education facilities.

Ownership

Local Authority. Surrey County Council.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in-use

Current use(s)

Outdoor learning centre for children.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The fort is of considerable evidential value, it survives well, with all the fort's key components such as the caretaker's cottage and tool store extant although converted to residential accommodation. The fort is now used as an education centre and despite this conversion appears to survive in good condition, and the legibility of the fort is readily apparently including the earth embankments. Henley Fort also includes the unusual addition of a guards room, designed to provide further protection at the entrance of the compound.

Historically, the fort has strong group value with the remaining London mobilisation centres. It is of considerable communal value as an education centre which has been in use over a long period of time. It is not know if there is any interpretation of the site, which would further enhance the communal value of the fort.

The mobilisation centres are not of great architectural value but functional structures, however the scale and setting of the fort is impressive. Henley Grove sits on a ridge on the North Downs with panoramic views of the surrounding landscape. The significance of the fort is further enhanced by the survival of contemporary plans of the fort, and recent studies of the topic.

References

HE website

VF website

Smith, V 1975

Beanse, A and Gill, R 2011

HE pers comm (October 2016)

North Weald Redoubt (Mobilisation Centre) (OA109)

This fort is part of the Mobilisation Centres strategic group which is within the south-east region, however geographically it is within the HE East of England region. As a result, there is a duplication of this fort within the East of England region, although only one reference number has been allocated to it (OA109).

County Essex
District Epping Forest
Parish North Weald Bassett
NGR TL 5056 0396
Group London

PASTSCAPE#	372844
HER#	4208 (SMR number)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1018456: A London mobilisation centre known as the North Weald Redoubt
Recommendations	The redoubt is on the HAR Register, a Management Plan needs to be agreed to ensure the site's future preservation.

Type

Mobilisation Centre.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

North Weald Redoubt has strong group value with the 12 mobilisation centres around London. It was the first mobilisation centre to be completed, and the first one north of the Thames.

Brief History

Construction of the North Weald Redoubt began shortly after the land was purchased in 1889 and was largely completed by 1904. It was retained as a military base in the decade leading up to 1914, and it is then thought to have served as an arsenal for the duration of the Great War. In 1919 the site was sold at auction to the Marconi Wireless Telegraph Company, who established a radio station on the surrounding hillside (the last original radio mast from this period was taken down in 1982) and used the redoubt for storage. The Imperial and International Communication Company took over the site in 1929 and continued operations under the new name of Cable and Wireless after 1934.

The radio station came under direct government control during the Second World War and this use, plus the site's proximity to the Southern Fighter Command base at North Weald airfield, may explain the presence of an unusual form of Second World War gun emplacement, known as the `Allen-Williams' turret, situated on the south eastern terminal of the rampart above the eastern approach to the gorge.

After the war in 1950, the radio station came under the control of the Post Office and the redoubt was used and maintained by the GPO (and latterly British Telecom), until the site was decommissioned in the early 1990s.

Outline Description

The site is described in the Scheduling description, which is summarised below.

North Weald mobilisation centre includes the main compound, caretakers' cottages and external stores situated on rising ground to the east of North Weald Bassett (within the grounds of the former Ongar Radio Station), and known variously as the Essex or North Weald Redoubt.

The main compound is broadly `D'-shaped in plan. The rear channel (gorge) contains a sunken roadway and a row of reinforced concrete casemates which extend right along the northern side (used to accommodate 72 men). The gorge is approached by two vehicle ramps, one at the eastern end, the other descending the outer scarp from the bridge which carries the principal access road across the gorge and onto the reinforced roof of the casemates. The bridge, overlies a caponier.

The approach road continues along the length of the casemates' roof, joining two internal routes which lead northwards into the inner or `front' section of the installation. This section includes a sunken semi-circular marshalling yard. The northern side of the yard contains a curved row of concrete casemates which carries the loop of the internal road across its roof and is recessed behind a strong earthen rampart which matches the curvature of the outer ditch.

The North Weald Redoubt was not intended to be permanently garrisoned, but provision was made for caretakers. Two uninhabited single-storey cottages, brick-built with slate roofs, stand within the line of the original perimeter fence, immediately to the south of the bridge.

Condition

Poor.

The site is on the HAR Register 2015, the fort is described as having 'extensive significant problems'.

The register notes – 'Discussions with the owners and local authority currently centre on proposals to commission a Conservation Management Plan for beneficial re-use of the site as an outdoor activity centre in the context of local development proposals. The discussions have not agreed a scheme'.

Trend

Declining.

The HAR register states it is category C – 'Slow decay; no solution agreed'.

Setting

Located on a hill 500m east of the village of North Weald Bassett. The site is surrounded by a buffer of green fields, with the residential development of North Weald Bassettt to the north and west.

Threats

Vandalism – the site is easily accessed through holes in the fence. The site has suffered from serious damage and vandalism, including virtual demolition of caretakers cottage/ stores.

Flooding - photographs dated 2014 on the Derelict Places website also show that the site had flooded with rainwater which had filled the ground floor level and underground sections of the redoubt.

Decay of fabric – failure of concrete.

Deterioration/ in need of management

Ownership

Commercial owners (multiple)

Occupancy

Vacant/ not in use.

Current use(s)

Derelict and unused.

Development proposals

No agreed strategy as developer is looking for planning opportunities to support any action.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The redoubt is a Scheduled Monument.

The Scheduling description describes the significance of the mobilisation centre, stating it -

'...exhibits a remarkable level of survival, no doubt largely as a result of the sympathetic (or cost-effective) reuse of the site as a radio station after the First World War. Not only do the earthworks and casemates of the main compound remain substantially intact but, unusually for this type of monument, the contemporary caretakers' cottages and external stores also survive with few modifications when compared to the original War Office plans....

.....the operational use of the centre is poorly recorded; these plans, however, provide clear documentary evidence for the design and intended use of this, the most northerly of the mobilisation centres within the ring of the London Defence Positions'.

The well-preserved fort is therefore of considerable evidential value, which is enhanced by the survival of the care-taker's cottages and external stores. Fixtures and fittings within the fort are also thought to survive well. The survival of contemporary plans of the redoubt, and recent studies which enhanced understanding of mobilisation centres, enhanced the significance of North Weald Redoubt.

The site is of exceptional historic significance attributed to its use as a wireless station, and the Adam-Williams turret.. This is a well preserved example of a comparatively rare form of gun emplacement, a small number of which were produced in 1939-40 by a company specialising in pre-fabricated building components. Unusually, it still retains all the principal elements of its dual purpose design, and its use in this location illustrates the renewed military significance of the redoubt as a radio station during the Second World War.

The redoubt is of some communal value, as it has limited accessibility.

References

Derelictplaces website

HE website

VF website

Smith, V 1975

Beanse, A and Gill, R 2011

EH 2000 (92/2000)

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Halstead (Mobilisation Centre) (OA110)

County Kent
Parish Dunton Green
NGR TQ 49900 59148
Group London

PASTSCAPE#	407330
HER#	TQ 45 NE 11
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1004214: Fort Halstead
Recommendations	Fort Halstead is likely to be impacted by proposed developments and requires monitoring.

Type

Mobilisation Centre.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

One of 12 mobilisation centres, with strong group value with the surviving forts. Fort Halstead is one of four designed for artillery deployment. It was the largest and most costly of the mobilisation centres, and it is thought that it was situated to take an active part in defence if required as the provision for machine-guns (see below) further illustrates.

Brief History

Designed in 1894, Fort Halstead was probably constructed between 1895-7. Unusually for a site of this type it also had the provision to mount machine-guns in emplacements.

During the First World War the fort was used as a defendable ammunition store forming part of the London anti-invasion stop-line. An ammunition labatory was added to the fort in 1915 and a store in 1920. The site was sold in 1922.

In 1937, after sixteen years of private ownership, the War Office bought the site to accommodate the Projectile Development Establishment as it provided a remote and contained site for rocket development building on earlier work by the Ballistics Branch at the Royal Arsenal in Woolwich.

From the late 1930s the site expanded with a number of buildings constructed inside and outside the fort. After the end of the war, Fort Halstead became the top-secret High Explosives Research headquarters with the task of developing Britain's atomic bomb (developing the Mark 1 warhead which when assembled in its casing was known as 'Blue Danube'). Although few records exist it is known that Fort Halstead personnel were responsible for developing both high explosive and electronic detonators for the atomic bomb.

Atomic weapons research and development continued at Fort Halstead until 1955 when staff transferred to the Atomic Weapons Research Establishment at Aldermaston (Berkshire). Fort Halstead has since continued as a government defence research establishment concentrating on explosives and other research.

Outline Description

The following is taken from the Scheduling description –

The fort is polygonal in plan and is surrounded by an earth rampart and a deep external ditch with a sloping earth counterscarp and concrete revetted scarp. The ditch is extant for much of the circuit except at the north-west and west of the fort where is has been infilled although survives as a buried feature.

The original access to the interior parade is from the north-west where two of the eleven angles of the fort form a re-entrant. There is a later additional entrance to the south-west linking the fort interior with the wartime experimental rocket filling area to the south-west of the fort.

The rampart is a massively built earthwork, part revetted in concrete, with a parapet, banquette and terreplein. Along the crest of the rampart are surviving traces of the brick-revetted emplacements for machine-guns positions some with small expense magazines set into the rampart. At the north-east corner of the fort is an additional structure of Second World War date, possibly a fire watchers post.

There are three magazines cut into traverses to the north-east, south-east and south, these are concrete built and cellular providing chambers for the storage of ammunition (shells and cartridges).

There are also three sets of casemates, to the west, north and east, all the casemates are concrete built and cellular although with some discreet elements in brick. The northern building is cut into the northern end of the central traverse. In plan this has nine casemates running broadly north-south with a covered access corridor to the west. An associated ammo store is cut into the rampart to the north-west across the access passage. It is understood that these casemates have experienced some minor alterations for use from the mid-20th century onwards but that their 19th century form remains legible.

Condition

Good.

Part of the ditch has been filled in but survives as a buried feature. The magazines and casemates have been altered for later use.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Fort Halstead is located on the high ridge of the North Downs approximately 3km north west of Sevenoaks. It is immediately to the west of the M25, the large site is situated within a wooded area.

Threats

Development proposal (see below).

Ownership

Commercial. Armstrong (Kent) LLP

Occupancy

Unknown.

Current use(s)

Site leased to Ministry of Defence's Defence Science and Technology Laboratory (Dstl), but they are planning to relocate by 2018.

Development proposals

Planning ref SE/15/00628 - Armstrong (Kent) LLP were given permission in December 2015 to redevelop the site and create a mix use of residential (up to 450 houses), industrial, commercial and service infrastructure (Armstrong (Kent) LLP 2014). The fort area and bunkers will have an historic interpretation centre as part of the scheme.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Fort Halstead is of considerable evidential value; it survives well, although a section of late 19th century ditch has been infilled, this remains intact as a buried feature. The fort also includes evidence for the site's later research and development role with limited alteration of some of the casements and magazines for this later use; this modification adds to the fort's interest.

The fort is of group value as one of twelve purpose-built mobilisation centres, and includes listed buildings within and immediately outside the fort which represent the site's later role as a military research establishment. Fort Halstead was also the largest (and most expensive) built and is one of only four designed for artillery deployment.

The nationally important secondary use of the mobilisation centre adds to the Fort Halstead's exceptional historic value; it was modified from the late 1930s for rocketry research, and post-war for the top-secret development of Britain's atomic bomb. It is a highly significant site in terms of mid-late 20th century rocketry and atomic bomb research and development.

The site has the potential to significantly enhance our understanding of the development and operation of the late 19th century mobilisation centres constructed to defend the capital, also to aid our understanding of the nationally significant atomic bomb research and development undertaken here.

The fort is currently of limited communal value, the proposed development will enhanced its communal value through interpretation centre, but will also impact the setting of the monument.

References

EH 2010

Forthalstead website

HE website

Wikipedia

Smith, V 1975

Beanse, A and Gill, R 2011

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Farningham Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA111)

County Kent
District Sevenoaks
Parish Faringham
NGR TQ 53264 66865
Group London

PASTSCAPE#	1332369
HER#	
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1019246: Fort Farningham: a London mobilisation centre
Recommendations	None.

Type

Mobilisation Centre.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

One of a 12 mobilisation stores constructed in the locality. Farningham is similar in construction to other small stores within the group, such as Box Hill, but internally is much more spacious, although not significantly larger in overall plan.

Brief History

Fort Farningham is thought to have been constructed in 1900, and was sold off in 1909. The site includes in addition to the mobilisation centre, a later Royal Observer Corps underground Monitoring Post.

Buried within the north eastern section of the infilled ditch, is an underground bunker, constructed and used during the 1960s by the Royal Observer Corps. This Monitoring Post formed part of the UK Warning and Monitoring Organisation and belonged to a network of such posts, designed to record the location, height and power of a nuclear explosion and to monitor radioactive fallout.

Outline Description

The following is taken from the Scheduling description –

The north east-south west aligned, roughly semi-circular compound, is defined on its south eastern front by a large, crescent shaped earthen rampart. The surrounding ditch was infilled during the second half of the 20th century, and partly damaged on its south western side by construction of a house, but will survive for much of its length as a buried feature.

The north-west facing gorge contains a sunken roadway which is approached from the main access road by a vehicle ramp at its northern end, and was made defensible by a row of three, slightly projecting casemates, with the rear facing doors and windows still retaining their loopholed, metal shutters.

The surrounding ditch could also be accessed from each courtyard by way of a tunnel, which led out through the rampart from a casemate at the rear of each courtyard. The courtyards are linked by a covered passageway which runs

through the central casemates and the three roomed magazine block, which is partly covered by the earthen rampart, or blast-bank.

Many of the original fittings survive, including the lamp recess casements and some of the original notices labelling various components of the magazines. Associated with the main compound are the original, semi-detached pair of caretakers cottages and the mobilisation tool store, situated on either side of the north western approach road, outside the perimeter ditch.

The buried chamber of the 1960s monitoring post was designed to accommodate a crew of three, is likely to retain many of its original features.

Condition

Good.

The ditch has been filled in and tunnels blocked up but other features survive such as the casemates and the magazine block. Part of the ditch in the south west has been damaged by past modern construction of a house and associated landscaping.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on a ridge of high ground 1km west of Farningham. Today the site is surrounded by a golf course and a network of roads, including the M25 and M20 in close proximity.

Threats

Development threat (see below).

Ownership

Private.

Occupancy

Occupied/ in-use.

Current use(s)

The fort is owned by a farmer who rents it to a stunt driver for storing and servicing his vehicles. The cottages are lived in, the tool store is used by courier business.

Development proposals

Planning application - SE/16/00318 was granted in February 2016 for Pedham Place Farmhouse, and extensions and alterations to the fenestration including erection of terracing to the south and east elevations.

This application has the potential to impact the fort, and a condition is placed on the consent prior to works. This is for 'archaeological field evaluation works' and following on from this 'safeguarding measures to ensure preservation in situ of important archaeological remains and/or further archaeological investigation and recording'. (letter dated 7th April from Richard Morris).

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Fort Farningham is of clear evidential value, the mobilisation centre has remained largely free of alteration or renovation and, despite the infilling of the ditch, survives comparatively well and will retain evidence relating to the construction and use of mobilisation centres, including the tunnels beneath the rampart which are unique to Fort Farningham. As one of a group of surviving mobilisation centres built in the locality, Fort Farningham has strong group value.

The site is of added value because of the construction of an Royal Observer Corps nuclear Monitoring Post within the perimeter ditch, which illustrates the renewed significance of this location during the Cold War period. It also adds to the historic value of the site, which has remained in used over a long perid.

The site is of limited communal value, except to those that work and live in the space.

References

VF website

HE website

Smith, V 1975

Beanse, A and Gill, R 2011

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fosterdown Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA112)

County	Surrey
District	Tandridge
Parish	Caterham Valley
NGR	TQ 3441 5334
Group	London

PASTSCAPE#	403980
HER#	1238-MSE1238
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1019288: Fosterdown or Pilgrim Fort: a London mobilisation centre Grade II Listed (list entry number 1376083) Former tool store at Fosterdown Fort
Recommendations	None.

Type

Mobilisation Centre.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The fort is of high group value with the 12 mobilisation centres built around London.

Brief History

Fosterdown Fort is also known as Pilgrim Fort, it is thought to have been constructed in 1900/02.

After the London Defence Positions were abandoned, in around 1905, the centre was finally sold in 1920. This later date is probably attributed to the Fosterdown Fort being used to stored ammunition from other stores once the scheme folder in 1909. It was subsequently used, for much of the 20th century, as a field study centre for school groups, which entailed conversion of the fort.

Outline Description

The Scheduling Description describes the fort –

'The main, south facing compound, is roughly circular in plan and is defined by a large, earthen rampart. The shallow, surrounding ditch, which is in turn encircled by a low bank, contained spiked metal railings which completely enclosed the compound….. The entrance is approached by a track from the north, and opens onto an almost square, north west-south east aligned central parade. Its concrete walls, on the north eastern and western sides, extend to join the low gorge walls. The parade is defined on its south western side by a three roomed magazine, set into the rear of the forward rampart, just below the internal ground level. To minimise the risk of explosion, the magazine chambers were lit by lamps, set in recesses behind panes of glass, and accessed from the lamp passage which surrounds the magazine…The magazine retains many of its original features….At each end of the casemates, steps lead up from the parade onto the top of the rampart, which could function as a firing parapet, allowing the mobilisation centre some degree of self-defence in the event of enemy bombardment'.

Condition

Fair.

The casemates were converted into washrooms and drying rooms, and two brick chimney stacks were constructed on the flat roof, above the ventilation shafts. Associated with the main compound are the original, semi-detached pair of caretakers' cottages and the mobilisation tool store, situated on the eastern side of the approach road from the north. The cottages, situated around 80m north of the compound, have been converted into a private residence, and the mobilisation tool store, which is Grade II Listed, located just outside the entrance, is undergoing conversion for an alternative use.

Setting

Located 1km south of Caterham on the high ridge of the North Downs. Although in close proximity to the M25 the fort is set within a large area of woodland.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Ownership

Private ownership.

Occupancy

Unknown.

Current use(s)

Private use (unknown)

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Fosterdown Fort is of considerable value, because despite some alteration and renovation, it survives comparatively well. Buildings associated with the fort also survive including the tool store which is Grade II Listed, which enhance the value of the complex.

The fort is of group value with the surrounding forts which are part of a group of mobilisation centres around London. Fosterdown Mobilisation Centre is also of considerable communal value to those who lived there and visited it as a education centre. No original plans were identified on the fort, however a survey was completed by Roger Gill which adds to the understanding and value of the fort.

References

VF website

Smith, V 1975

HE website

Beanse, A and Gill, R 2011

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Pewley Hill Fort (Mobilisation Centre) (OA113)

County	Surrey
District	Guildford
Parish	Guildford
NGR	TQ 0027 4908
Group	London

PASTSCAPE#	393914
HER#	331-MSE331
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	None.

Type

Mobilisation Centre.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

One of 12 mobilisation centres built around London, with strong group value. Its position suggests that like Halstead it may have been situated to take an active part in fighting.

Brief History

The London mobilisation centres were constructed between 1889 and 1903, it is thought that Pewley Hill Fort may have been constructed between 1895/6.

The London Defence Positions were abandoned in around 1905, and in 1907 the sale of the land begun. Following the sale of Pewley Hill it was used for archive storage following substantial alterations, and was not sold off until 1920. It may have been used to store ammunition during the First World War and new buildings added at this point.

Outline Description

The VF website describes the remains of Pewley Hill Fort, with a number of photos showing the surviving remains. The summary description states: 'Rampart cut back, mostly built upon, one section of ditch, one magazine and one casemate block survive, all are private property. Cottages demolished'.

The photos (date unknown) show a casemates surviving beneath housing, but it is no longer accessible.

Two main magazines are thought to survive comprising a shell and cartridge store, separated by a passage that contained the shifting lobby for the cartridge store. The magazine in the southwest corner was blocked for structural reasons.

Between the two magazines is a surviving shallow 'V' shaped casemate. It contained six chambers thought to be gun casemates or shelters and three store rooms. This block has been incorporated in to a house with a single storied extension with the roof acting as a terrace. Two of the casemates are used as garages and the remainder bricked up and converted to rooms.

Most of the earthworks have been levelled for housing but a short section of ditch survives on the east side. Usually for a mobilisation centre it is deep and steep sided with both the scarp and counter scarp revetted in concrete.

Condition

Poor.

There are few surviving remains, those that do survive are fairly inaccessible but the photos suggest they survive in reasonable condition.

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

The limited surviving remains of the fort are situated to the south-east of Guildford, and is surrounded by modern housing.

Threats

None identified.

Ownership

Private ownership.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Private use (unknown)

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Little.

Pewley Hilll Fort is of little significance, as there are few surviving remains of the fort. The site has largely been demolished for housing, and is no longer legible as the site of a former fort. Aspects of the fort do survive including casemates and stores, but these are difficult to access and are no longer in the context of the surviving site.

The fort is of very limited communal and aesthetic value. The fort if not of particular historical significance, but the remains have group value with the surviving forts. No contemporary plans were identified on the site, but a plan has been produced of surviving remains, although there is an element of trajectory, as so little survives.

References

VF website

HE website

PastScapes website

Smith, V 1975

Beanse, A and Gill, R 2011

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Westerham Fort, Betsom's Hill (Mobilisation Centre) (OA114)

County	Kent
District	Sevenoaks
Parish	Westerham
NGR	TQ 43561 56334
Group	London

PASTSCAPE#	1440436
HER#	
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	None

Type

Mobilisation Centre

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

One of 12 mobilisation centres around London, with strong group value.

Brief History

The London mobilisation centres were constructed between 1889 and 1903, the probable date of construction of Westerham Fort is 1900.

The London Defence Positions were abandoned, in around 1905 and in 1907 the sale of the land begun.

Outline Description

The paper by Beanse and Gill describes the built fort in detail, PastScapes describes the surviving remains of the fort, which is detailed below.

> *'The east-west aligned, south facing compound originally consisted of an irregular, broadly semi-circular rampart and outer ditch, with a defensible rear, or gorge wall. The gorge consisted of the caretakers' accommodation with flanking concrete walls, each pierced by an entrance gateway, hung with loopholed steel doors. On the opposite side of the central parade are the three roomed magazine and casemate blocks, set into the rear of the forward rampart. An earthen traverse was constructed between the cottages and the magazine, to protect the accommodation in the event of an explosion. Associated with the main compound, an additional pair of standard caretakers' cottages and a toolstore are situated along the access track at the entrance from Betsom's Hill'.*

Condition

Fair.

The magazine remains largely unaltered, and retains many original features, including the lamp recesses and what appears to be original graffiti at the eastern end of the lamp passage. The casemates are relatively unaltered, but have been converted for use as a vehicle workshop.

The rest of the compound, however, has been substantially altered and partly built over by additional housing and other structures. The gorge walls and

central traverse have been removed; the forward rampart cut back, and both the integral and external caretakers' cottages altered and extended.

Setting

The site retains a rural setting to the north of the M25, the remains of the fort are within a small group of houses.

Threats

None identified.

Ownership

Private ownership

Current use(s)

Private use (unknown)

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Some.

The evidential value of the fort has been reduced by the loss of key elements of the site; the magazines and casemates survive but the remaining site has been significantly altered.

The remains are of group value with the 11 other surviving mobilisation centres. Westerham Fort is of limited communal and aesthetic value.

References

VF website

HE website

Smith, V 1975

Beanse, A and Gill, R 2011

Compiler

Jane Phimester

OA No.	Fort Name	Significance	Designation	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
*115	Coalhouse Fort	A	SM	1	3	C1	3, 4
*116	East Tilbury Battery	A	SM	4	3	x	2, 3
117	Cliffe Fort	A	SM	3 (RC)	4	C1	1, 2, 3, 4, 5
118	Slough Fort	B	SM. LB(II*)	3 (RC)	2	x	x
*119	Tilbury Fort (including mobilisation store)	A	SM. LB(II*)	1	1	x	1, 7
120	Shornmead Fort	B	x	3 (RC)	4	x	3, 4, 5
121	New Tavern Fort	A	SM	1	2	x	8

*Coalhouse Fort, East Tilbury Battery and Tilbury Fort (OA115, OA116 and OA119)

These forts are part of the Thames strategic group which is included in the south-east region, however geographically they are within the HE East of England region. As a result there is a duplication of this fort within the East of England region, although only one reference number has been allocated to each of the forts.

Coalhouse Fort (OA115), incl. Wing Battery

This fort is part of the Thames strategic group which is within the south-east region, however geographically it is within the HE East of England region. As a result, there is a duplication of this fort within the East of England region, although only one reference number has been allocated to it (OA115).

County Essex
District Thurrock
Parish East Tilbury
NGR TQ 6907 7657
Group Thames

PASTSCAPE#	413479 (Coalhouse Fort), 1375114 (Wing Battery)
HER#	1758,1759, 1761, 1760 (SMR numbers)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1013943: Coalhouse Fort battery and artillery defences
Recommendations	Coalhouse Fort is of exceptional significance and on the HAR register. It therefore requires management to ensure its future preservation.

Type

Coastal battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Coalhouse Fort is of group value with the other Thames fortifications, particularly Coalhouse Fort which was constructed alongside Shornemead and Cliffe. These were planned to work in unison and provide a first line of defence for the protection of the river approach to the Capital and Woolwich Arsenal. A second line was provided by upgrading the forts at Tilbury and Gravesend.

Brief History

The Scheduled Monument comprises the Victorian Coalhouse Fort at East Tilbury, with its associated railway link and jetty and its rifle range, as well as the foundations of an Henrician 'blockhouse' coastal battery, a late 19th century 'Quick-Firer' battery and a low-level radar tower dating from the Second World War.

The first phase of the fort, begun in 1799, was replaced in 1847-55 by a more complex structure which was in turn superseded by the RML guns, shell-firing guns in the open battery, and 11-inch RML guns in the casemates. The fort underwent the usual modifications to provide traverses and some of the casemates were filled with concrete.

The 1869 Royal Commission report suggested a change in armament, the initial plan was however soon changed, and 9, 11 and 12.5-inches RML were mounted.

In 1893 Wing Battery was constructed, for two 6-pdr QF guns, the battery was immediately adapted to take four guns. The rapid rate of fire of the guns meant that the battery provided defence against motor torpedo boats in the River Thames as well as providing minefield defence. The guns were removed in 1902 and two searchlights were erected on top of the battery to serve a QF battery on the roof of Coalhouse Fort.

By 1903 new concrete emplacements for four 6-inch BL guns and four 12-pdr QF guns were added on the roof. Some of the QF guns were removed and searchlights added, the ditch filled and the casemates partially earthed-up to disguise the fort's outline to some extent. A small battery for four 6-pdr QF with searchlights was built to the south of the fort, later reduced to two. Two 12.5-inch RML guns were, however, retained until 1908.

In the First World War Coalhouse Fort used as an examination battery in conjunction with Cliffe and Shornemead forts.

In the Second World War the fort also acted as a degaussing station to counter the threat of German magnetic mines.

In 1962 Thurrock Borough Council took over the responsibility for the fort.

Outline Description

The new fort consists of a semi-circular casemated battery with facings of granite. Beneath the gun casemates are the usual magazine arrangements, with shell and cartridge stores and an ammunition passage with lifts to the gun floor. A two storey barrack block of Kentish rag stone with bastion-like projections closes the rear of the fort. A central parade is divided by a single gun ramp. A six foot wide moat surrounded the fort.

A jetty serves Coalhouse Fort which is the same phase of construction as the Henrician blockhouse. It was improved and added to by a full- gauge railway line which survives almost intact but for the tracks themselves.

Near the waterfront a little distance from the fort are a 19th century battery for QF guns and searchlights, a rifle range and a Second World World War low-

level radar tower. Some remains relating to the fort as a degaussing station also survive.

Wing Battery has a pair of emplacements which have ready-use lockers and a shared magazine. The emplacements were located in an oval earthwork trace surrounded by a small water-filled ditch, the whole being immediately behind the sea wall.

Condition

Poor.

The HAR register define it as category C – 'Slow decay; no solution agreed'.

There has been improvements to the condition of the fort, including –

- Repair work to the gatehouse barrack block was completed in 2011 with grant aid. Further phased repairs anticipated;
- Heritage Lottery Fund scheme for conversion of generator house to cafe is underway;
- Storm damage to roof of north caponier has now been repaired;
- Discussions to remedy water ingress to casemates are on-going.

HE funding has resulted in a full suite of building and development surveys during 2017, including a Conservation Management Plan, coastal repairs and a uses options appraisal. These will form the basis of an approach to the Heritage Lottery Fund, providing a broad solution for the monument's removal from the HAR Register.

Trend

Improving.

Setting

Located on the north side of the River Thames Estuary, east of Tilbury. The fort is surrounded by open fields and largely retains its setting with the village of East Tilbury further inland.

Threats

Deterioration/in need of management - water ingress

Decay of fabric - deterioration of brickwork. The barrack block is in a severe state of disrepair.

Ownership

Local Authority. Thurrock Council leased to Coalhouse Fort Project, a group of volunteers who manage the fort.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ part in-use

Current use(s)

Opened to the public once a month by the Coalhouse Fort Project volunteers.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The monument comprises the fort, railway link and jetty and its rifle range, as well as the foundations of an Henrician 'blockhouse' coastal battery, a late 19th-century 'Quick-Firer' battery and a low-level radar tower dating from the Second World War. The scheduled monument is significant is demonstrating a broad range of defence systems, and how they evolved during over a long period.

It is one of the finest examples of an armoured casemate fort in England and is well documented historically. The jetty and railway line are an integral part of the fort. The QF battery, built in 1893, is the sole surviving purpose-built battery of its type in the Thames basin. The rifle range is an unusual survival which adds to the known range of earthwork monuments and is closely associated with the fort. Furthermore, the site has group value with East Tilbury Fort which is also of exceptional significance, and as part of a wider defence system designed to protect the Thames Estuary and the capital.

References

Hogg 1974

The Coalhouse Fort Project website

VF website

PF website

HE website

regs.thurrock website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

East Tilbury Battery (OA116)

This fort is part of the Thames strategic group which is within the south-east region, however geographically it is within the HE East of England region. As a result, there is a duplication of this fort within the East of England region, although only one reference number has been allocated to it (OA116).

County Essex
District Thurrock
Parish East Tilbury
NGR TQ 6868 7735
Group Thames

PASTSCAPE#	413501
HER#	1823, 1824 (SMR numbers)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1013880: East Tilbury Battery
Recommendations	The battery is of exceptional value but there is deterioration of fixtures and fittings that requires management.

Type

Coastal battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

East Tilbury Battery is of group value with the other Thames installations; it was built to defend the Thames and support nearby Coalhouse Fort. The battery at East Tilbury was built to support the guns at Coalhouse Fort.

Brief History

East Tilbury battery was built in 1889/90 to support Coalhouse Fort with long-range fire. The guns at the battery, two 10-inch and four 6-inch on disappearing carriages, extended the tactical doctrine of invisibility. There was a total of six guns in a line, all on disappearing carriages. The 6-inch guns were removed and the emplacements changed to standard 6-inch BL CP mountings by 1900. On the extreme right end is a position for a 3-pdr QF gun, which was possibly used for practice or local defence. Another 'D' mount for a QF gun can be found at the extreme left of the gun line.

Towards 1900 the 6-inch guns were remounted. Living casements were built beneath the 10-inch battery, and the usual cookhouse, stores, offices and so forth. were on the inland side of a sunken way running the length of the work.

The battery kept its 10-inch guns until they were declared obsolete and they were partially dismantled by 1903. By 1909 the 6-inch guns were declared superfluous and were partially dismantled

The battery was decommissioned before the First World War.

Outline Description

Its form rejected the stark outline of its predecessors, instead being blended into the landscape by means of a long and sloping earthen frontal area, so that from a distance it was invisible ('Twydall Profile'). Below the gun mountings were magazines and accommodation blocks, and to the rear of the battery were a

cookhouse and the battery office. Unclimbable 'Dacoit fencing', set in a steeply-sided ditch, surrounds the battery.

Either side of the two central HP pits are sets of chambers appropriated as war shelters. Between the two HP pits is the central magazine for the 10-inch guns. This consists of two cartridge stores and lamp passages with one central shell store connecting to an ammunition lift at each end. The walls are lined with bitumen and cork to prevent damp. The two ammunition lifts are still in place.

Condition

Poor.

The battery survives in near complete condition. Photographs of the site from 2009 show that a number of features are extant including several ammunition lifts and painted signs (Subterranean website). The emplacements are visible and ancillary structures survive, however the site has become overgrown.

The fortification is remarkably well-preserved. Many structural details are discernible and machinery used to raise shells and cartridges from the magazines to the emplacements is virtually intact.

There has however been recent significant vandalism to fixtures and fittings, and relocated of the remaining items is being reconsidered (HE, pers comm).

Trend

Declining.

Setting

The battery is located east of the linear settlement of East Tilbury and faces east towards the Thames Estuary. It is immediately surrounded by a buffer of woodland, in close proximity to Princess Margaret Road directly to the west of the battery.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation –heavily overgrown with vegetation.

Deterioration/in need of management and decay of fabric – there is some deterioration to fixtures and fittings including painted signs that requires management.

Ownership

Private.

Occupancy

Not in use.

Current use(s)

Derelict.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The battery is a Scheduled Monument.

The East Tilbury battery is a rare coastal example of the 'Twydall Profile' form of defensive installation, of which it is the best and most complete example in England. The unusual survival of the concrete sunken emplacements for disappearing guns, which add to the invisibility of the battery, adds greatly to its importance.

It has group value with nearby installations, such as Coalhouse Fort, in showing the complex evolutionary sequence of defensive installations both at East Tilbury itself and in the wider context.

References

Subterranean website

VF website

PF website

HE website

regs.thurrock website

Hogg 1974

HE pers comm (February 2018)

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Cliffe Fort (OA117)

County	Kent
District	Medway
Parish	Cliffe and Cliff Woods
NGR	TQ 70691 76703
Group	Thames

PASTSCAPE#	416701
HER#	TQ 77 NW 25
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1003403: Cliffe Fort
Recommendations	Cliffe Fort is of considerable significance, but is under threat and on the HAR register. In particular it is recommended that issues relating to flooding should be investigated, to resolve this threat. The fort requires management to secure its future preservation and setting. The scheduling description for Cliffe Fort urgently requires updating, and does not include the Brennan Torpedo evidence.

Type

Coastal battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Cliffe Fort is of group value with the other Thames installations. The purpose of Cliffe Fort was to form a triangle with Coalhouse and Shornmead for mutual support, and also to act as an anchor for a boom between it and Coalhouse Fort.

Brief History

Cliffe Fort was the only totally new work of the Thames defences being proposed by the 1859 Commission.

The 1860 Royal Commission plan was for 13 guns on the terreplein protected by shields, 3 guns en barbette and 2 for land defence, with casemated positions for 20 guns behind iron shields beneath.

The front, forming a quadrant, was to be flanked by three musketry caponiers and the gorge building formed two bastioned fronts. A main magazine, four shell filling rooms and

four expense magazines were provided. All of this was to rest on a bed of concrete but in 1865 reports of difficulties with foundations on the marshy ground, including subsidence and cracking, resulted in the original plan to mount guns on the fort's roof being abandoned.

Cliffe Fort became a Brennan torpedo station in 1885, but was only in active use for a few years.

In the 1890s it was equipped with four 12-pdr QF guns. By December 1902 two 12.5-inch and five 11-inch RML guns had been mounted.

During the First World War the four 12-pdr guns were replaced by a pair of 6-inch BL Mk VII guns, which in turn were replaced with four QF guns towards the end of the war. The fort was disarmed sometime after 1927.

The fort was used as the base for the Royal Navy Auxiliary Service during Second World War.

Outline Description

The stone and brick fort contained a moat and earthworks on the seaward side. After modifications due to its situation on marsh land and resulting subsidence (see above), the fort became a casemated fort very similar aspect to Coalhouse Fort on the other side of the river. A moat and earthworks provided further protection on the riverine side of the fort.

In 1885 when part of the fort was rebuilt as a Brennan Torpedo Station, one of the 9-inch magazines was converted for this use. Two of the launching rails survive as does part of the retractable observation post.

Condition

Very bad.

On the HAR Register, as category 'C' 'slow decay, no solution agreed'. The owners are currently discussing management works with Historic England.

Historic England has carried out a detailed survey.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

The fort stands on the south bank of the river at the entrance to Cliffe Creek in the Cliffe marshes on the Hoo Peninsula in North Kent. It is situated within a largely open and exposed landscape with creek and pools, there has however been aggregate extraction immediately to the east of fort (and a sailing club to the west) which has compromised its original setting.

Threats

Coastal erosion - decay of The Brennan Torpedo Rail, which is vulnerable to erosion.

In need of management – the site is deteriorating. The Scheduling description also urgently requires updating, as it does not include the Brennan Torpedo evidence.

Decay of fabric - much of the fort is unstable due to massive construction, but significant detail is vulnerable to decay or vandalism

Flooding

Vandalism

Uncontrolled vegetation

Ownership

Commercial company. Robert Brett and Sons Ltd.

Occupancy

Not in use.

Current use(s)

Vacant/ not in use.

The area to the south is used by Robert Brett and Sons Ltd as an aggregate works. The fort itself is derelict and not open to the public.

Development proposals

None identified on planning portal. There was a past proposal for disposal of the arisings from work on the Thames, but there has been no recent information about this.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The site is similar in construction to Coalhouse Fort although the survival of surrounding defence mechanisms at Coalhouse Fort over a long period further adds to Coalhouse Fort's historic value. The Brennan Torpedo Station is considered to be the best surviving example, which greatly enhances the significance of the fortification.

Cliffe Fort is of evidential value, although this is declining and the fort is on the HAR register. The fort is of historical interest as it was used during the First and Second World Wars, and as a Brennan torpedo station. The importance of the fort is added to by the EH survey carried out of the fort, which enhances understanding of its history and survival (Research report series 15-2011).

References

VF website

PF website

Wikipedia website

HE website

publicaccess.medway website

Hogg 1974

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Slough Fort (OA118), incl. wing batteries

County	Kent
District	Medway
Parish	Allhallows
NGR	TQ 83783 78507
Group	Thames

PASTSCAPE#	418721
HER#	TQ 87 NW 14, TQ 87 NW 94
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1021405: Slough Fort and wing batteries Grade II* Listed (list entry number 1393526)
Recommendations	Planning permission has been given for expansion of the holiday park and this involves a phased removal of caravan pitches away from the fort. This will enhance the historic setting of the fort.

Type

Coastal fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Slough Fort, although part of the Thames defences, was also intended to defend a possible approach to Chatham, to link the Medway defences, including Grain Fort, with other new forts in the Thames Estuary such as those at Cliffe and Shornemead on the north Kent coast. Slough Fort also provided protection at a local level against enemy landings on the neighbouring beaches as well as the approach to Yantlet Creek to its east. Slough Fort is of therefore of group value with the other Thames fortifications, including Chatham.

Brief History

Slough Fort was constructed in 1867, as a direct consequence of the 1859 Royal Commission on the Defences of the United Kingdom. It was constructed to prevent an enemy landing at the only accessible point of attack for Chatham Dockyard from the north.

In 1887 the fort was armed with 7-inch RBL guns. It was then recommended that the ditch be arched over to form a gun store for four 16-pdr RML field guns, three 3-pdr QF guns on field carriages and three machine guns. The front of the fort is now, as is usual, earthed up. A 12-pdr QF(?) was later mounted on the fort's roof as an anti-MTB defence.

Major redevelopment took place at Slough between October 1889 and December 1891 when two wing batteries were constructed. Each wing battery had two breech-loading 'pop-up' or 'disappearing' guns of a 6-inch and 9.2-inch calibre. Positioned in deep concrete emplacements these were on hydro-pneumatic mountings made by the Elswick Ordnance Company.

An underground magazine was also located between each pair of emplacements, and as a consequence of this redevelopment the seven casemates in the main body of the fort became obsolete. This change entailed further changes to the fort, which are described in detail in the HE scheduling description and not described further here.

At some point light QF guns were mounted on the roof of the fort as there is physical evidence for at least two emplacements, with ready-use ammunition lockers and structures to the rear that may have been gun-floor shelters for the crews. One 3-pdr QF gun was certainly in place by 1898 and two more followed by 1900. They were very short-lived as they had been removed by 1903.

The fort continued to be used during the First World War, a Battery Command post appears to have been added to the fort roof at this time. The fort was finally abandoned by the army and then sold in the 1920s.

Outline Description

The fort is a D-shaped casemated work of granite and Kentish ragstone, with a dry ditch and drawbridge. The fort is closed at the gorge by a defensible barracks. It is two-storey with brick and high quality granite dressings. It is probably one of the smallest of the Royal Commission forts.

The armament was intended to be mounted on the roof and in seven gun casemates for 7-inch 7-ton guns underneath, protected by iron shields 7ft sq. The terreplein was prepared for three guns with two expense magazines communicating with the basement magazines by lifts. This part of the armament was never supplied.

The fort is described in detail in the HE Scheduling description.

Condition

Fair.

There has been alterations to the fort through its conversion to stables. The owners Bourne Leisure have just implemented asphalt repairs to waterproof the casemates but much more needs to be done

Trend

Improving.

There is potential for the fort to further improve as Bourne Leisure alongside volunteers have plans to conserve the site, erect interpretation panels, clear the wings batteries, remove vegetation and forty caravans. The wing batteries and underground magazine are now cleared out by volunteers and the condition is steadily improving. The interpretation panels are in place and access by guided tours is now possible.

Setting

Located north west of All Hallows on the Sea facing north towards the coast. The fort is surrounded on two sides by the All Hallows Leisure Holiday Park. Bourne Leisure are considering moving 40 caravans to give the fort more of a historic setting. The primary setting of the fort is lost, due to the density and proximity of surrounding caravans.

Threats

None identified.

Ownership

Commercial. Bourne Leisure.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

The wider fort area is used as a farm and a stables (Slough Fort Farm and Stables), in 2012 the stables moved from the main fort building and the fort began to be conserved.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Slough Fort is a Scheduled Monument; the scheduling describes the significance of the fort –

> *'The monument survives in good condition and its significance is enhanced by the 1889-91 addition of two wing batteries for 'disappearing' guns. These gun emplacements are an unusual and nationally rare survival because of the very short time span in which their technology was deployed (less than twenty years). The monument is a physical manifestation of the very rapid changes in artillery and naval technologies in the late-C19 and early C20'*

The fort is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II* Listed, which includes Slough Fort and its wing batteries. The core of the fort is protected by its listed building status and is therefore not included in the scheduling.

Slough Fort is of group value with other surviving forts in the area including Grain Fort, Cliffe Fort and Battery and Shornemead Fort. The historical value of the fort is added to by the wing batteries, which were a short lived but significance technological advance for the period. The EH survey of the site, has enhanced the body of information about the site and understanding of its history and survivial.

References

Allhallows Parish Council website

PF website

VF website

publicaccess.medway.gov.uk website

Hogg 1974

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Tilbury Fort (including mobilisation store) (OA119)

This fort is part of the Thames strategic group which is within the south-east region, however geographically it is within the HE East of England region. As a result, there is a duplication of this fort within the East of England region, although only one reference number has been allocated to it (OA119).

County Essex
District Tilbury
Parish Tilbury
NGR TQ 6509 7551
Group Thames

PASTSCAPE#	413465
HER#	1679
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1021092: Tilbury Fort Grade II* Listed officers barracks Tilbury Fort (list entry number 1375568)
Recommendations	There is a possible threat to the setting of the fort through proposed surrounding development, which requires consideration.

Type

Coastal fort. Mobilisation Centre.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Tilbury Fort has group value with the 12 mobilisation centres around London. It is situated 10 miles from the line of the other centres, and was used as a store with Warley and Caterham. Tilbury Fort is also of group value with the other Thames military defences.

Brief History

The monument includes the buried remains of a Henrician blockhouse, the far larger and more complex fort and battery which succeeded the blockhouse in the late 17th century, the late 19th and early 20th century alterations to the fort and a Second World War pillbox.

The blockhouse, the first permanent defensive structure in this location, was constructed in 1539 as part of Henry VIII's campaign to improve the coastal defences.

Charles II began a complete reorganisation of the national defences which included Tilbury. The new Tilbury fort and battery, designed by Sir Bernard de Gomme, and built in 1670 and remain substantially unaltered to this day.

The fort remained at the forefront of the defence of the Thames and London through the 18th and early 19th centuries. The Royal Commission found the Thames defences inadequate and shortly afterwards larger forts were constructed at Coalhouse, Shornmead and Cliffe Creek. It was recommended that Tilbury be made more efficient, but as it was now relegated to a secondary position the alterations were far from radical, allowing the 17th century layout to survive.

A new magazine was built and an 18-pdr field gun battery was installed. In 1865 the effective armament was reported as five 68-pdr SB, five 32-pdr SB,

and four 10-inch SB guns. Embrasures and platforms for new heavy guns were added to cover the river from the north east and west bastions in 1868, the pivots and racers for which remain in position.

New earthworks were built, to take brick emplacements for guns firing through embrasures to command the river, it seems however that all the embrasures were not occupied.

Both bastions also have positions for 10-inch smooth bore howitzers mounted on the northern flanks to cover the landward approach. The 1868 gun positions on the east bastion and south eastern curtain wall are masked by later emplacements, built shortly before the First World War.

Prior to the Frist World War Tilbury Fort was used as a mobilisation centre. Two existing buildings were adapted and six new ones built for use as a mobilisation store. All buildings are now demolished except a former Artillery General Store which still exists behind the later QF gun emplacements.

The accommodation was controlled by the Army Ordnance Department, specifically for storing mobilisation equipment for the 4th and 5th Divisional Horse Artillery, and under the administration of an Ordnance Officer Mobilisation. The fort was issued with anti-aircraft protection from 1915, with complimentary searchlights as part of the London outer defences.

To accommodate the great numbers of draft finding units, hutted camps needed to be set up throughout the country. The continuing need to supply stores to these huge camps then fell on the Tilbury Fort Ordnance store, which was re-designated an Ordnance Depot on October 1st 1915.

In the early stages of the Second World War the site controlled the anti-aircraft defences of the Thames and Medway (North) Gun Zone.

Outline Description

The 1670 Tilbury Fort was designed by Sir Bernard de Gomme, based on principles pioneered in the Low Countries. It is pentagonal in plan, with arrowhead-shaped bastions projecting from four of the angles. A brick-built curtain wall encloses and links the bastions and the pentagonal area within the ramparts (The Parade), which contained the barracks and powder magazines. The outer defences surrounding the landward sides of the fort are elaborate and include a broad terrace, or berm, two moats and a number of defensive structures. A narrow strip of dry land separates this channel from an outer moat and contains a complex of defensive structures.

Condition

Good.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on the north side of the Thames Estuary at Tilbury. There is green open space immediately to the rear of the fort, but to the east and west

there is development with the immediate vicinity to the fort. This includes a distribution park and sewage works, and the urban development of Tilbury is further inland. Recent expansion along the Thames has therefore effected the setting of the fort.

Threats

Development (setting) - there is a possible threat to the setting of the fort through increasing number of industrial estates adjacent to the fort to the west, and the sewage treatment works to the east of the fort. There are planning proposals awaiting decision (detailed below) which are particularly relevant.

Visitor wear and tear.

Flooding.

Ownership

English Heritage (or HE). Managed by English Heritage (guardianship) under licence from Historic England until 2023.

Occupancy

Part-occupied/ in use – there are residential tenants in the Grade II* officers barracks.

Current use(s)

English Heritage Site open to visitors.

Development proposals

Planning application 16/00848/FUL at Tilbury B Power Station Fort Road, may impact the setting of the fort. The application is awaiting decision.

There is a development threat from the proposed ferry port facilities and other uses, including major transport links. HE are currently advising on application submitted to PINS (HE pers comm).

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument, and the officer's barracks are Grade II* Listed.

The HE Scheduling description describes the significance of the fort –

'Tilbury Fort is England's most spectacular surviving example of a late 17th century coastal fort, designed at a time when artillery had become the dominant feature of warfare and therefore built with massive low earthworks, resilient to the shock of bombardment, instead of stone fortifications.

The systems of bastions and complicated outworks defending the batteries from the rear is principally a Dutch design, extremely rare in England, and Tilbury is the best preserved and most complete example of the type.

The fort still retains many of its original internal features with most of the main buildings surviving as standing structures. The magazines are especially notable, as they are rare survivals of a very unusual building

type. The buried remains of further structures, associated both with the operation of the 17th century fort and the Tudor blockhouse, will also survive within the fort. The remains of the blockhouse, and of features related to its operation, are important as they represent one of the earliest types of structure built exclusively for the use of artillery in warfare'.

The site has strong group value with the 13 mobilisation centres constructed around London, although today only one building survives from this period of its use.

References

thurrock.gov. website

PF website

VF website

Hogg 1974

regs.thurrock website

HE pers comm (February 2018).

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Shornmead Fort (OA120)

County	Kent
District	Gravesham
Parish	Shorne
NGR	TQ 69248 74769
Group	Thames

PASTSCAPE#	413733
HER#	TQ 67 SE 63
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	Shornmead Fort should be considered for listing. Archaeological investigation would greatly enhance understanding of the fort, for example the cutting through of the casemates reveals the construction techniques. There is also potential buried evidence for an earlier polygonal fort at Shornmead, which benefit from further site and desk-based research.

Type

Coastal battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Shornmead Fort is of group value with the other Thames fortifications, in particular Coalhouse Fort and Cliffe Fort.

Brief History

Shornmead Fort first existed as an open battery but was demolished in 1874. The later Shornmead Fort, was proposed as a replacement by the 1859 Commission due to its position on the bend in the river and because it suffered structural problems. It was also to form the anchor for a line of forts overland to Chatham, which were never built. The first fort at Shornemead was of considerable importance as one of, if not the first use, of true polygonal design in the UK.

The original construction plan was altered in 1867 due to subsidence, and the revised plan allowed for twelve guns to be mounted in casemates looking down river and eight at the other end in gun pits.

In 1895 two 6-pdr QF guns were supplied in an open battery on the river bank. It was re-armed in about 1913 with two 12-pdr QF guns. Between 1895 and 1907 Shornmead was disarmed completely and used for accommodation as part of the submarine mining depot to the west of the fort.

During the Second World War two 5.5-inch guns were fitted in an external battery behind the sea wall to the east of the fort. The fort by now was used only for barrack accommodation. There are thought to be some D Day style concrete hards surviving at the river edge.

Outline Description

Eleven casemates were placed in an arc on one side of the D-shaped fort, pointing downriver towards Lower Hope Point. An open battery stood at the west end of the casemates, mounting three guns that pointed upriver toward Gravesend and Tilbury. This was to enable artillery support for the older forts at those two towns, which were now relegated to the second line of defence.

A single-storey defensible barracks built from Kentish ragstone stood at the rear of the fort. It was equipped with loopholes so that the garrison could fight off an attack from the landward side. Three caponiers protected the perimeter and an open parade ground occupied the centre of the fort. A ditch originally lay in front of the casemates and open battery but was filled in during the 1880s. The magazines underneath the casemates and open battery consisted of a line of storerooms for shells and cartridges, linked by a lighting passage at the rear and an ammunition passage at the front.

Shornmead Fort was on an army firing range and has largely been demolished by the Royal Engineers of the Army School of Demolition. Today only the fronts of the RML casemates remain,

Condition

Very bad.

Images on Google Earth show that the fort is mostly demolished apart from the northerly casemates. The fort was surveyed in 2007 by Nathalie Barrett (unpublished).

The magazines underneath are unsafe and flooded. The whole of the gorge rooms and barrack block has been demolished. In 2008 earth was piled against the rear of the fort closing off the magazine entrances.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located 4km east of Gravesend on the southern side of the River Thames.

Threats

Vandalism.

Deterioration/ in need of management.

Decay of fabric

Ownership

Royal Society for the Protection of Birds.

Current use(s)

Unused, derelict on open land part of the Shorne Marshes Nature Reserve

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The only surviving remains of the fort are the northerly casemates, which are in a declining condition due to vandalism. The value of Shornmead Fort is however enhanced by the potential survival of any early polygonal fort as buried archaeology, this is of considerable importance as one of, if not the first

use, of true polygonal design in the UK. There are surviving plans of the earlier for in The National Archives which greatly enhance its significance.

The historical significance of the fort is further enhanced by its continued use and adaption into the Second World War. There is surviving evidence of this later use and adaption including possible hard stands from the D-Day landings. Shornmead Fort is of group value with the surviving Royal Commission forts and those within the South-East and Thames area, with which it has a strong functional and geographical relationship.

The significance of the fort is of communal value to those that visit Shorne Marshes Nature Reserve, and are able to visit the site.

References

PF website

Google Earth website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

New Tavern Fort (OA121)

County	Kent
District	Gravesham
Parish	Gravesend
NGR	TQ 65284 74273
Group	Thames

PASTSCAPE#	413720
HER#	TQ 67 SE 37
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1013658: New Tavern Fort, Gravesend, including Milton Chantry Grade II* Listed (list entry number 1261173)
Recommendations	None.

Type

Coastal battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

New Tavern Fort is of group value with the other Thames fortifications, particularly Tilbury Fort.

Brief History

The monument includes the upstanding and below ground remains of New Tavern Fort which includes within its grounds the earlier chapel or chantry associated with the Leper Hospital of St Mary the Virgin at Milton by Gravesend.

New Tavern Fort was built as a result of the 1778 survey of the defensive requirements of the Thames. The fort is situated on the south bank of the River Thames and was intended to support the much older Tilbury Fort on the north bank.

In 1805 it was armed with two 32-pdr, fourteen 24-pdr and one 9-pdr SB guns. In the 1840s the fort was modernised to take a heavier armament, which involved the reconstruction of the older gun emplacements, but this did not alter the basic plan of the fort. A magazine designed to hold 250 barrels of powder was built close to the chantry building, and another smaller magazine, for 50 barrels, was established nearby. Other new buildings constructed at this time included a wash-house, coal store and a guardroom.

Between 1868 and 1872 new brick emplacements for 10 heavy guns were constructed, with magazines below. Again, however, the plan of the fort was not altered.

The fort had lost much of its importance by the turn of the 20th century. Advances in naval firepower meant that the principal line of defence for the Thames had been moved downriver to the batteries at Grain and Shoeburyness, where bigger guns with a longer range could control the entire estuary mouth. The old RML guns were now obsolete, while the emplacements provided little protection against modern naval artillery.

In 1905 concrete emplacements for two six-inch breech-loading guns were built, joined together by a walkway with a separate magazine underneath. A further two 6-inch guns were mounted from the late 1920s or early 1930s for the use of the Territorial Army. They remained at least as late as 1937.

Although the fort was garrisoned during the First World War, its strategic importance continued to decline. In 1930 it was purchased by the Gravesend Corporation who laid it out as a pleasure garden for the public.

During the Second World War the magazine built for the breech-loading guns was used for a time as an air raid shelter. The fort was abandoned and reverted to the local council in the 1930s to become a public garden.

Today the fort has been re-armed and interpreted as a fort and developed as a military museum by the New Tavern Fort Project.

Outline Description

The fort was constructed of unrevetted earth and was designed for an armament of heavy, smooth-bore cannon firing through embrasures. The rear of the fort was originally open and unprotected but before the end of the century a brick wall, with loopholes for musketry, was added. The structure consists of a broad earthen rampart constructed in a zig-zag pattern, with a broad ditch in front of it.

Eight emplacements, six of brick and two of concrete, are contained within the rampart with magazines underneath them. The interior of the fort - originally its parade ground - is occupied by a grass-covered lawn with flowerbeds, trees, ornamental bushes and a bandstand at the centre. The ramparts face the river and can be divided into three sectors. The northern sector, originally called the North Face, contains two concrete semi-circular emplacements in which two 6" breech-loading guns were installed in 1904.

The middle sector contains four brick emplacements built in 1868-72 to house rifled muzzle loader (RML) guns. One is protected by a thick iron shield with a gun-port in the middle, while the other three have unprotected open embrasures.

The southern sector of the rampart was known as the East Face, for its direction facing the river. It incorporates two small brick emplacements constructed in the 1860s. They originally housed a pair of traversing guns that fired en barbette.

Condition

Fair.

The fort was altered during the 1930s to become a recreational park with a bandstand and landscaped gardens. The fort is maintained by the New Tavern Fort Project volunteers.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The fort is located at the northern end of Gravesend, adjacent to the River Thames. It is situated within gardens, but is immediately surrounded by a densely developed area.

Threats

Possible wear and tear through visitor use.

Ownership

Local Authority. Gravesham Borough Council.

Occupancy

No applicable.

Current use(s)

Used as a park, Riverside Leisure Area, Gravesend. The fort is also being restored by the New Tavern Fort Project volunteers in partnership with Gravesham Borough Council.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II* Listed.

New Tavern Fort is an unusually complete example of 18th century fortifications which underwent development in the 19th and 20th centuries. The fort displays a complete sequence of mounted guns representing each stage in its development, and contains a number of unusual features which have been preserved in situ. These include, within the middle sector four brick emplacements, all are very well-preserved and retain the rails on which the guns traversed. Doors on either side give access to the ammunition shafts which brought shells and cartridges up from the magazine. The shielded embrasure has been re-armed with an RML gun, making it a rare example of an embrasure of this type that has retained its original appearance.

The fort is particularly well preserved and has been maintained over a number of years by the New Tavern Fort Project. The fort, along with Tilbury Fort, illustrates well the strategic importance of the Thames Estuary and the methods employed to defend it over a period of 170 years.

The fort is of historical significance as it is connection with General Charles Gordon who lived here from 1865-71 and was later killed at Khartoum. The foundations of his house still survive within the fort. In the north west corner of the fort is Milton Chantry, a 14th century building representing the chapel of a medieval hospital. The chantry is situated at the north west side of the fort. This adds a further element of interest to the fort, enhancing its historic and archaeological significance.

New Tavern Fort is of considerable communal value, as it is open to the public both as gardens and a museum.

References

VF website

Hogg 1974

Wikipedia website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

OA no.	Fort name	Significance	Designated	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
122	Queenborough Lines	B	SM	3 (RC)	3	x	1,2,5,6,7
123	Sherness Defences	A	SM	1, 3(RC), 5	4	C1	1,2,3,4, 6,7,8
124	Bartons Point Battery	C	x	4	3	x	8

Queenborough Lines (OA122)

County Kent
District Swale
Parish Queenborough
NGR TQ 9250 7415
Group Thames/ Sheerness

PASTSCAPE#	420376
HER#	TQ 97 SW 112
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1404499: Queenborough Lines
Recommendations	The lines require monitoring as they are in a fair condition but subject to threats, including development proposals.

Type

Defence Line.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Thames/ Sheerness group of defences, in particular Bartons Point Battery.

Brief History

The Queensborough Lines were constructed following the Royal Commission to protect the Royal Sheerness dockyard from land attack. They were built between 1863-1868, 1km south-east of the earlier bastion-trace defences of the Sheerness Lines. The Queenborough Lines is atypical of the Royal Commission fortifications since continuous earthwork defences were generally considered obsolete by this date.

Two magazines, positioned at either end of the central re-entrant (a withdrawn section of ramparts allowing fire to be directed along it from the flanks) were constructed by 1868. These were probably to provide a small reserve of ammunition for the infantry and mobile artillery, despatched from Sheerness or elsewhere, who would have manned the Lines only in time of emergency. By 1906 the eastern magazine was disused.

There is some evidence that the Lines was manned during the First World War as part of the coastal defences established along the coast of east and south-east England. During the Second World War the causeway through the Lines was protected by a defended position, and several air-raid shelters were built into the rampart.

Outline Description

In sum the Queensborough Lines consist of a simple earthen rampart with a wide ditch in front, a military road or covered way behind the rampart and two narrow catchwater ditches. The HE Scheduled Monument description describes the lines –

> *'The Queenborough Lines consists of a simple earthern rampart with a wide ditch in front (infilled at the south-western end), a military road or covered way behind the rampart, and two narrow catchwater ditches (inner and outer), the former behind the military road and the latter on the far side of the ditch. The Lines runs from south-west to north-east across the marshes south of Sheerness for approximately 3.5km, divided into five main sections, generally in a straight line but with a central re-entrant and small sections at either end at Queenborough and Barton's Point where it originally curved south around the proposed site of Barton's Point Battery. The rampart is constructed of earth and shingle and measures 15.5m to 17m wide and between 1.9m and 2.5m high.... Cut into the rear face of the rampart is a fire step for infantry, originally present along the length of the rampart but its profile has now been effaced in places. No permanent artillery batteries were ever constructed along the Lines but two intended positions are marked by magazines at the flanking positions which enfilade (allowing fire to be directed along the foot of the rampart) the central re-entrant section.... During World War II, several concrete air-raid shelters were inserted into the rampart, their roofs flush with the rampart top.... Other World War II additions include defensive structures around the causeway'.*

The inner face of the ditch follows the course of the rampart so that it is at its broadest in the central section.... The inner and outer catchwater ditches were used to define the boundaries of the Lines and help regulate the level of water in the main wet ditch to which they were linked by a series of sluices or weirs; brick manhole chambers with dressed stone cappings survive at several points along the Lines.

Condition

Fair.

In general, the alignment of the Queensborough Lines mostly survives in the form of a wide water-filled ditch and earthwork bank, but the two batteries are no longer extant.

There has been breaches in the rampart which are detailed in the Scheduled Monument description and not described in full here. Examples include infill in the western end by the insertion of a playing field, removing nearly 100m of the rampart. At Edenbridge Drive, the access road to a housing estate on the far side of the infilled ditch was built sometime between 1951 and 1973.

The ditch has been breached in places, as has the northern catchwater ditch to the rear of the covered way which only survives in sections. The covered way similarly survives intact in sections, especially east of the causeway, but has been metalled in places to create a road (Southview Gardens). In the summer of 2011 a cycle route was laid out along the length of the monument.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The setting of the Quennsborough Lines has largely been lost, as the expansion of Queensborough has extended up to the edge of the lines. It is noteworthy that little expansion appears to have taken place beyond the lines, which have acted as a boundary to development.

Threats

Deterioration/ in need of management.

Decay of fabric.

Vandalism.

Development threat (see below).

Ownership

Mixed multiple owners.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Various

Development proposals

A recent application SW/11/1597 was agreed in August 2016 for a new vehicle storage compound at land adjacent to Whiteway Road. The application is for new surfacing for car storage and includes the creation of a ramped vehicle access route through the sea wall to the existing Lappel Bank car storage area.

An archaeology report (RPS 2013) as part of the planning application, states that 'the most significant potential archaeology within the Proposal Site relates to the former dog-legged bank and ditch section of the western extent of the 'Queenborough Lines' defensive line'. The report demonstrates that levelling of the proposal site in the 1970's, for use as a depot, removed all above ground traces of the Queenborough Lines here, and that there would only be minor impacts to the upper levels (bank) of the Queenborough Lines. Monitoring work will be required during works.

A further application is awaiting approval (15/503464) for land at Brielle Way, the development will encompass a 3.7ha site; this has the potential to impact the lines directly and indirectly (setting). An HE letter dated 15th February states that 'We do not object to the development proposal but we recommend that the Council makes use of the Heritage Statement to inform discussion with the applicant about how the likely harm to heritage significance can be reduced through amendments to the design and/or mitigated by enhancing appreciation of heritage significance.'

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The Queensborough Lines are part of a Scheduled Monument.

The Queenborough Lines are historical significance as they are atypical of the Royal Commission fortifications since continuous earthwork defences were generally considered obsolete by this date. The Queenborough Lines represent the last example of this type of fortification in the country, and considerable engineering feat. The lines continues in use over a long period, from their construction through to the Second World, and retain evidence of use from this latter period further enhancing their significance. A full archaeological investigation of the lines was undertaken by English Heritage in 2001 thus creating a full record of their survival, construction and history (Simon Probert and Paul Pattison: The Queenborough Lines (English Heritage Archaeological Investigation Series 5/2001)).

The lines are of evidential value as a striking feature in the landscape, which interesting has largely provided a restraint to the development of Sheerness. The lines have been compromised in places, but remain in large sections. They are also of group value with other 19th century defence measures in Sheerness. The lines are accessible and now used as a cycle path, increasingly their communal value.

References

HE website

Fortifiedplaces website

RRPS 2013

pa.midkent.gov.uk

HE (Paul Roberts) letter dated 26th June 2015 relating to application 15/503464.

HE (Paul Roberts) letter dated 15th February 2016 relating to application 15/503464

Ramboll 2016

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Sheerness Defences (OA123)

County	Kent
District	Swale
Parish	Sheerness
NGR	TQ 91413 74985
	TQ 91066 75493
	TQ 91066 75493
Group	Thames/ Sheerness

PASTSCAPE#	924088, 924095, 924096, 924097, 924098, 924099, 924099
HER#	TQ 97 NW 109, TQ 97 NW 113, No.2: TQ 97 NW 115,
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1005145: Sheerness defences Grade II Listed 1259029: Garrison Point Fort Conservation Area - Sheerness : Royal Naval Dockyard and Bluetown
Recommendations	The Sheerness Defences are of exceptional significance and on the HAR register. The defences are under several threats, including major development threats and require a management strategy to ensure their preservation.

Type

Defence Line. Fort. Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The Sheerness Defences include a range of defences measures including the Sheerness Lines, Indented Lines, Centre Bastion, Curtain Battery, Garrison Point Fort, Nos.1-3 Bastion and The Ravelin. Together these have strong group value, and are associated with the wider defences of the Thames area.

Brief History

The Sheerness Defences were constructed for the Thames and Medway Estuaries and the town and dockyard at Sheerness and are moated artillery fortifications.

The defensive potential of Sheerness to command the Thames estuary and the entrance to the Medway had been recognised from an early date, bulwarks had existed in the area since 1551. Further expansions took place during the 17th and 19th centuries. Many of the extant structures and features date to the 19th century.

The **Sheerness Lines** are fortifications constructed between *c* 1780 and 1870; the full Sheerness Lines comprising the four bastions linked by ramparts and an external moat was completed by 1816. The 1780s origins of the lines include Sheerness Fort (see Garrison Point Fort), Fort Townshend and the King's Lines. The latter two were begun but not completed, and the King's Lines were replaced by Bastions No.1 and 2, and Fort Townshend was incorporated into No.3 and No.4 Bastions (see below).

There was a series of redesigns and expansions in the 1820s and 1840s. The 1820s expansion of the dockyard, resulted in the demolition and levelling of the western half of the Sheerness Fort. The remaining north-eastern side, including the Indented Lines, was redesigned and extended south-eastwards along the Thames to link with No. Bastion of the existing Sheerness Lines. Between 1842

and 1848 a ravelin with a musketry wall was added to the Sheerness Lines in the moat between No.1 and 2 bastions.

The defences were also upgraded, to take breech loading and quick firing guns, at the end of the 19th century. Ravelin Battery was added in 1905, which had two 9.2-inch guns until at least 1927 and during the Second World War it held a 2-pdr 'Pom Pom' light anti-aircraft battery. To the south-west of Ravelin Battery a bomb-proof building was added which was in existence by 1898.

The fortifications were also upgraded for use during the First and Second World Wars. They eventually comprised a continuous linear work with bastions from the tip of the peninsula, south eastward along the Thames then westward across the peninsula to the Medway, with the dockyard and protected inside. They formed the defences for the dockyard and town throughout the later 19th and 20th centuries, altered and refined as armaments changed.

Centre Bastion is part of the Sheerness Lines, it is a linear bastion, constructed probably by 1823. A practice battery was added in 1899. By December 1902 it was equipped with two 12-pdr guns and two 10-inch BL weapons. During the First World War its 12-pdr guns were replaced with 4.7-inch guns. A radar station was located at TQ 9139 7535.

The **Indented Lines** were originally called Gunners Battery, Dial Line and Long Line but changed to the Indented Lines after 1838, and numbered 1-3. They were linked to the Sheerness Lines from 1827 by the construction of a sea wall between Minster Bastion on the Indented Lines and No.1 Bastion on the Sheerness Lines, and were moated by 1848. Gun emplacements were added in 1897-8, and a battery added in 1899.

Towards the end of the 19th century the Sheerness defences were upgraded to take BL guns and QF guns. By 1899 the Indented Lines had two 6-pdr and two 12-pdr QF guns. The QF emplacements were built between 1897 and 1898, the date of 1897 appears in concrete next to a surviving concrete recess.

Albemarle Battery was constructed in 1899, situated at the eastern end of Indented Line No.2. It comprises four 12-pdr QF gun emplacements, two of which with brick gun houses and shelters were in use again after 1940. During the First World War the battery mounted two 6-pdr Hotchkiss heavy anti-aircraft guns. On 1923 plans the rooms beneath the gun emplacements are marked as war shelters and stores.

Curtain Battery was built between *c* 1780 – 1870, between No.1 Bastion and Central Bastion. In 1895 40-pdr BL guns were in place, a concrete searchlight was in place during the Second World War.

Garrison Point Fort is on the site of three earlier forts. Following the Royal Commission of 1860 the present structure was built, which is a casemated fort for 36 heavy guns. All the casemates were converted to barracks and stores by 1896. It was completed in 1872.

A Brennan torpedo station was added in 1887 and new batteries added in 1900. The torpedo testing station became the practice site for the training of

officers and men in the use of torpedos for the school of Military Engineering at Chatham, by 1901 all aspects of instruction were moved to the fort and the Brennan School established. It closed in 1906.

During the First World War a coastal artillery searchlight emplacement and a concrete magazine were constructed to the east of the fort. Aerial photographs also show a First World War machine gun pill box, which no longer survives. During the Second World War guns were installed on the roof and remained in use until 1956. The condition of the fort in 1959 was fair and almost complete.

By December 1902 the fort was fitted with two 11-inch, nine 10-inch, three 6-inch, three 12.5-inch and five 9-inch RML guns and four 12-pdr QF weapons.

By the First World War the battery mounted three 6-inch BL Mk VII guns and two 12-pdr QF guns. During the Second World War the battery was equipped with twin 6-pdr anti-motor torpedo boat guns. The battery was used for close defence in 1943 until it was reduced to care and maintenance in 1944.

No.1 Bastion is on the Sheerness Lines which opened in 1780. By December 1902 it was armed with a 6-inch breech-loading Mk IV gun. During the Second World War the battery was equipped with close defence guns.

No.2 Bastion on the Sheerness Lines, constructed by 1794. It is very similar to No.1 Bastion, but was more lightly armed.

No.3 Bastion formed part of the Sheerness Lines defences, and was constructed between 1797 and 1804, incorporating the earthworks of Fort Townshend. It was destroyed in 1973 by the construction of the steel works.

No.4 Bastion is a demi bastion, forming a corner between the end of the moat and the sea, on the Sheerness Line defences. It was constructed during 1797-1804 and incorporated the earthworks of Fort Townshend.

The **Ravelin** is a detached work of the Sheerness Lines constructed in 1816. It was the middle of three concentric defences around the town, built between 1780 and 1820.

Outline Description

The **Sheerness Lines** comprise a continuous linear work with bastions from the tip of the peninsula, southeast along the Thames, then west across the peninsula to the Medway, with Sheerness and the dockyard protected inside.

Centre Bastion is revetted in brick with a moat on its seaward side and had gun emplacements in place by 1895, and at the turn of the century. The most prominent features, are two circular concrete towers and an elevated fire control building were possibly constructed *c* 1913. Each of the towers had a gun emplacement, one also has a Second World War observation post. The bastion was in use during the First World War, features include a concrete battery observation post which also had one phase of use associated with minefield control.

Alterations carried out during the Second World War removed many of the original features. New features included an octagonal anti-aircraft

emplacement, now largely buried, and gun batteries. The bastion still has the moat to the north and also has two concrete towers and a fire control building to the south, that may have been constructed during the First World War.

The **Indented Lines** are constructed of stone rubble, brick faced in Kentish Rag ashlar. It also has a heavy cordon, and at the angles of the lines, two moulded corbels in Portland Stone. The earth capping on the main wall has a low brick revetment which is late 18th-century or early 19th-century in date.

The Indented Lines No.1 (Dial Line/ Craigs Battery) have a rear face constructed of brick and incorporating four embrasures, blocked with concrete, shown disused on a plan of 1899. There are also traces of gun emplacements at the eastern end and to the north of the line. One of the gun emplacements was found to be in good condition in 1993. A musketry banquette provided infantry enfilading fire eastwards, parallel to it is the ramp of a searchlight emplacement, extant in 1899. Second World War features include a coastal artillery searchlight. Remains of a wireless station are visible at the western end of the line, the buildings are shown on map of 1880, also present is a possible magazine and 1890 gun cotton stores.

The Intended Lines No.2 (the Long Lines/ Saluting Battery) are damaged by modern buildings. A brick cartridge store is present at the western end, a room dug into the rampart beneath it is thought to have been built in the 1880s, it is labelled on a 1899 plan as the north test room, a control centre for a submarine minefield.

The Indented Lines No.3 has been largely demolished including the gun emplacements which were abandoned in 1899, and stores. Fragments of a 1899 gun battery survive.

Albemarle Battery comprises four 12-pdr QF gun emplacements, two of which have brick gun houses, and shelters were in use again after 1940.

Curtain Battery is a winged battery with a steep scarp on its seaward side which slopes to the water-edge revetment leaving no berm. A sandstone slab is sited near the western end of the battery and three more can be detected next to it; these supported 40-pdr BL guns in 1895. Platforms for three 40-pdr muzzle loading guns have been destroyed, as have others visible on 1947 aerial photographs. A concrete searchlight thought to date from the Second World War, is well preserved with semi-circular metal shutters around the seaward side.

Garrison Point Fort is a semi-circular structure, one of only two built in the 1860s fortification programme (the other being Picklecombe Fort in Cornwall). It is essentially of single phase construction, with some additions to the original plan and considerable changes of use to most of the rooms.

The rear face was found to be constructed of brick and incorporates four embrasures, blocked with concrete, shown disused on a plan of 1899. There are also traces of gun emplacements at the eastern end and to the north of the line. One of the gun emplacements was found to be in good condition in 1993. A musketry banquette provided infantry enfilading fire eastwards, parallel to it is the ramp of a searchlight emplacement, extant in 1899. Second World War

features include a coastal artillery searchlight. Remains of a wireless station are visible at the western end of the line, the buildings are shown on map of 1880, also present is a possible magazine and 1890 gun cotton stores.

In the Torpedo Station a steam winding engine was installed in an upper casemate. By 1896 the fort may have had two slipways and a torpedo store. An observation station was also established, but replaced in 1901/2. The torpedo workshop was constructed on the ground level against the southeast wall of the fort. Field investigations carried out by RCHME survey staff in April 1993, found the workshop to be well preserved, containing remains of the turntable. The torpedo rooms in the casemates had been stripped out. Traces of the launching rails can be seen on the beach.

After the war, the fort was used by the Royal Navy Auxiliary Service as an emergency port control centre in the event of a nuclear war. Part of the fort's disused magazine was converted into a bunker housing nuclear defence officials. The fort was decommissioned in 1956 when the UK discontinued its coastal defence programme, and the structure was sold off to the owners of the adjacent Sheerness Docks.

No.1 Bastion was included in the field investigations carried out by RCHME survey staff in April 1993 found it to comprise gun emplacements of several periods present along the northern and western sides. A brick revetment wall originally ran round the perimeter with gun emplacements situated within it. A mound in the southern corner was built for a direction finder, and is surmounted by a weapons pit for an anti-aircraft light machine gun. Other Second World War features include two gun houses and gun emplacements. A First World War feature includes a minefield control post, which may have replaced an earlier post. The bastion also contained the grand magazine, which was constructed in 1801, converted into troop accommodation in 1804, but destroyed by 1955.

No.2 Bastion was included in the field survey carried out by RCHME staff in April 1993; it was found that the moat was infilled south of the bastion. Where the moat survives the rampart slopes steeply to a berm above the water-edge revetment. The revetment comprises stones covered with concrete. Former hospital buildings in the centre of the bastion are now in use as offices for the steel works.

No.3 Bastion comprised gun emplacements at three angles and two on each flank. It was destroyed by construction of steel works in 1973. A survey carried out by RCHME field staff in April 1993 found the moat to be partly preserved as cooling ponds.

No.4 Bastion was a demi bastion, with only one emplacement at an angle and one set of flanking emplacements. Each had a small magazine to supply guns. No.4 Bastion was surveyed in 1993 by RCHME staff.

The **Ravelin** is mostly destroyed, the main surviving feature is a musketry wall, which is brick construction, pierced by gun loops covering the approaches to the ravelin. In addition to the wall a small concrete and brick building of

uncertain function, possibly an accommodation block, and shown on the O.S. map of 1828 was also recorded by the RCHME (1993).

Condition

Very Bad.

On the HAR Register, categorised at level 'C' on the buildings and structures list as 'Slow decay; no solution agreed'.

A summary of the surviving features and condition of the Sheerness Defences –

The Sheerness Lines retains only the two half-bastions either side of the entrance road and part of the brick loopholed wall in the demi-lune.

Centre Bastion is in poor condition, it was mostly demolished apart from the magazines, the later structures are in fair condition. A detailed account of the surviving remains of the battery is given in the RCHME survey of the Sheerness Defences dated March 1995.

The Indented Lines along the eastern side remain, although in poor condition. The portland stone has been patched up with brick and most of the walls are buried beneath the shingle that has built up on the beach. The bases of two sentry posts have survived along the lines - the only surviving examples of this design, which was also used at Plymouth citadel. Seventeen-century fabric is visible in the lower part of the seaward face.

The 1993 RCHME shows that Indented Line No.1 survives in reasonable condition, much of Indented Line No.2 is damaged by modern buildings and Indented Line No.3 has no surviving remains.

Albemarle Battery survives is thought to survive in complete condition, although the area is currently inaccessible. The emplacements and battery observation post are believed to be in very good condition and over four ancillary buildings and structures remain. Coastal artillery searchlights survive to the east and west.

The RCHME report in 1993 found that Curtain Battery had surviving gun emplacements near the western end, and additional platforms for muzzle loading guns were visible on 1947 aerial photographs, but are now destroyed. A possible Second World War searchlight position was found to be well preserved.

Garrison Point Fort survives in complete condition and believed to be in fair condition. Aerial photography from 1979 shows that all four gun emplacements retain their anti-strafing measures. The battery observation post is visible and coast artillery searchlights remain below and directly east of the fort. Although the interior has been largely stripped out, traces remain of the original fittings. While the fort's structure is still basically intact its roof and much of its interior are derelict and decaying. Some reports state that the Brennan Torpedo station no longer survives, whilst other accounts state that there are remains of the Brennan Torpedo station including its launching rails, though it is corroding badly.

No.1 and No.3 Bastions have been destroyed, but Bastions No.2 and No.3 survive in part.

The main surviving feature of the Ravelin is a musketry wall.

Trend

Declining.

The HAR Register states it is category C – 'Slow decay; no solution agreed'.

Setting

The Sheerness Defences are situated along the north-east coastline from Garrision Point Fort at the northern point. Centre Bastion is located 600m south east of Garrison Point. The setting is compromised by development and use of the area as a shipping port, including large containers.

Threats

Erosion - the moat to the east of the Sheerness Lines appears to be silting up and starting to overgrow with vegetation.

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Decay of fabric – contemporary photos show the deterioration and part of collapse of structures.

Deterioration/in need of management.

Development threat (see below).

Ownership

Commercial company. Peel Logistics (Peel Ports).

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

To the south and west of the lines the site is being used for hardstanding for commercial shipping containers. The area just to the south of Centre Bastion is being used by Sheppey Taxis. Garrison Point Fort may be used for storage.

Development proposals

In Sheerness there are general Dockyard masterplans for various schemes that affect the Garrison Point Fort and also site allocations in the local plan for regeneration.

A major application for Sheerness Steelworks (16/501726) affects Fort Townsend and the Sheerness lines.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional

The Sheerness Defences are Scheduled, and Garrison Point is Grade II Listed.

The Sheerness Defences include a complexity of surviving remains dating from the Sheerness Lines in the 1780s through to the Second World War. The

surviving archaeology is of a broad typology and date range, which clearly illustrates within a focused area the necessary defence systems required to defend the strategically important dockyard and ensure the landward approach to Sheerness was adequately defended. Although elements of the defences have been lost, there remains a broad range of surviving structures and archaeology which are of clear evidential value.

The Garrison Point Fort is of particular hisotoric interest, as it survives in complete condition. It is a rare example of a two-tiered casemated fort – one of only two of that era in the country (the other being Picklecombe Fort in Cornwall). It had a long period of use, remaining operational until 1956. The fort is of communal value as it is a landmark for views from the coast, and from the estuary to the coast. Likewise the torpedo station is also significant, as only one of two with Cliffe Fort, although the example at Cliffe Fort is a better example than the fort at Garrision Point.

The RCHME surveyed and reported on the Sheerness Defences in 1993 which greatly enhances the value and understanding of the defences.

References

Pastscape

Hogg 1974

HE website

Fortified-places website

RCHME 1995

RCHME 1993

EH and Kent Conunty Council 2004

Ramboll 2016

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Bartons Point Battery (OA124)

County	Kent
District	Swale
Parish	Sheerness
NGR	TQ 93901 74868
Group	Thames/ Sheerness

PASTSCAPE#	1342830
HER#	TQ 97 SW 13
Heritage status	
Recommendations	None

Type

Coastal battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Barton's Point Battery, is situated at the northern end of the Queensborough Lines, housed heavy coastal artillery ranged seaward rather than for the protection of the Sheerness Lines.

Brief History

Barton's Point Battery was built as part of the River Medway's coastal defences. Constructed between 1889 to 1891, it was equipped with two 9.2-inch Mk VI and two 6-inch Mk IV breech-loading guns by 1902. As part of the fixed coast defences at the Medway estuary, protecting the naval dockyards at Sheerness and Chatham, it was operational until around 1906 when its role was taken by a new battery, the Ravelin Battery, in the heart of Sheerness itself.

During the First World War it operated as a heavy anti aircraft battery armed with two 6-pdr Hotchkiss in 1916 and one 3-inch gun in 1917. It was the site for two artillery searchlights from 1932-45. However, from around 1938, most of the battery area was taken over by the Admiralty and developed as a training school for naval anti-aircraft gunnery, fulfilling this role until the late 1950s:

All of the guns were removed by the 1920s, when it was used as a training battery.

Outline Description

The battery was constructed in brick and concrete. One emplacement remains and some underground facilities, the battery observation post is extant and as is one curviform building to the rear of the fort.

Only two of the gun pits remain but converted to stores. The others have been filled in with concrete or earth. The magazines between the gun pits remain with two ammunition lifts and original lettering An observation post remains on two of the gun emplacements from the 6-inch training battery. The site is now surrounded by wooden holiday chalets.

Condition

Poor.

Aerial photograph indicates that the battery has been mostly demolished and converted to hardstanding for cars and static caravans. One of the gun emplacements appears to be extant.

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

Barton Point Battery is situated to the east of the Sheerness Defences, along the coastline. The remains of the battery are surrounded by a caravan park.

Threats

Visitor wear and tear - possible threat to surviving remains from continued use of area by Seabreeze Caravan Park.

Ownership

Seabreeze Caravan Park.

Current use(s)

Used as hardstanding for Seabreeze Caravan Park.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Some.

There are limited surviving remains of Barton Point Battery, and its setting has been impacted by the surrounding caravan park. Although of limited evidential value the site is of interest in its association with the Sheerness Defences to the west of the battery. The remains are easily accessible within the caravan park which enhance the communal value of the site. A report on the battery by EH in 2001 has improved understanding of the coast artillery battery, and adds to its value.

References

PastScapes website

EH 2001

Ramboll 2016

Compiler

Jane Phimester

OA No.	Fort Name	Signif.	Designation	Group	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
125	Fort Borstal	B	SM	2	3 (RC)	2	x	2, 4, 5, 7
126	Fort Horsted	B	SM	2	4 (RC)	2	x	x
127	Fort Luton	B	SM	2	3 (RC)	3	x	2, 7
128	Grange and Woodlands Redoubt	D	x	3	4	4	x	2, 4
129	Hoo Fort	B	SM	1	3 (RC)	3	C1	4
130	Darnet Fort	B	SM	1	3 (RC)	4	A1	1, 4
131	Grain Tower	B	SM. LB(II)	4	2	4	C1	3
132	Grain Fort and Wing Battery	B	SM	4	3 (RC)	2	x	2

Fort Borstal (OA125)

County Kent
District Medway
Parish Rochester
NGR TQ 73325 66413
Group Chatham

PASTSCAPE#	416244
HER#	TQ 76 NW 67
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1003402: Fort Borstal
Recommendations	There are several threats to the fort which need to be monitored to ensure its preservation. It is important to ensure that all works are authorised in accordance with the preservation of the Scheduled Monument.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Fort Borstal was part of the first line of Chatham forts to the south of the town, also including Bridgewoods, Horsted and Luton. These forts were much more inconspicuous than previously, with little, if any, visible masonry or concrete structure even in the gorge. Their shapes were designed to blend into the natural contours of the landscape.

Brief History

Fort Borstal was not in the original plans of the 1860 Commission but was needed to defend the high ground overlooking the Medway at Borstal. This was due to plans to construct forts from Temple Marsh in Strood to Shornemead Fort, and the re-use of the fortifications between Fort Pitt and Fort Clarence being dropped.

Work began in December 1875 and the fort was completed in 1883. When the fort was complete no formal gun emplacements were added as the armament was to be guns in field carriages, however there were many additions to the fort during it's working life and gun emplacements were added at a later date.

During the First World War Fort Borstal was used as a stop off point for troops and stores travelling to France, as was Fort Amherst nearby. After this the fort was used by a TA unit, the 166 City of Rochester Battery Royal Artillery, for training. The fort was also occupied by a detachment of the Royal Marines from nearby Chatham.

In the Second World War four 4.5-inch anti-aircraft guns were installed above the front casemates in preparation of the hostilities, each gun was set into a permanent concrete emplacement.

The fort was taken over by the Home Office in 1961 and into the care of the Borstal Institution where it was used as a pigsty and store. A portion of the ditch was filled in at this time.

Outline Description

An irregular pentagon in plan, it is a largely earthen battery, but with concrete used extensively inside, with little flank defence. These forts were out of date, due to improved gunnery, almost as soon as they were built. The were th last major works of traditional fortifications in the country.

The fort has a continuous rear gorge wall defended by a loopholes and a single caponier over which it was intended to build the access road. It is surrounded by a dry ditch defended by counterscarp galleries at the angles. The fort has two rows of casemates, the front two serving as a command area and the rear nine, providing barrack accommodation. The rear casemates were split into two in later years to provide an access road through to the front casemates. The gun positions on the ramparts were intended for movable armament served by handling rooms with expense magazines beneath.

Fort Borstal was partly surveyed and investigated by English Heritage, as opportunity arose during small-scale renovation work by owners between January 2001 and April 2004.

Condition

Fair.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on top of a high ridge of land orientated north to south. The fort faces westwards, originally to protect Chatham/Rochester (to the north east) from land attack. The fort is situated in close proximity to the M2, and is largely surrounded by urban development including Cookham Wood Prison (which existed on the site from 1875).

Threats

Possible threat from secondary use of the fort, however the continued use of the fort will also help ensure its maintenance.

Vandalism – graffiti is visible on some elevations of the fort.

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Decay of fabric – decay of concrete is visible in photos of the fort. A section of the ditch has been infilled.

Ownership

Private residence.

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Commercial. Used as a residence, Film and TV commercial production site, for data storage and as a stables

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The surviving Chatham ring forts (Hosted, Luton and Borstal) are Scheduled due to their importance as the last major work of traditional fortifications in the country, and together they have group value.

Borstal Fort survives well and is of clear evidential and aesthetic value. Today it is used commercially and its continued use has enabled its preservation. The fort has a long period of use through the First and Second World Wars and is of historical value. The investigation of the fort by EH in 2001 and 2004 has increased understanding of the fort, and enhanced its significance by adding to the body of information about the fort. The fort is of some communal value to those that use it, which would be increased by allowing wider access to the fort, for example through annual open days.

References

Fortborstal website

VF website

Saunders 1989

publicaccess.medway website

PastScapes website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Horsted (OA126)

County	Kent
District	Medway
Parish	Chatham
NGR	TQ 75100 65093
Group	Chatham

PASTSCAPE#	416040
HER#	TQ 76 NE 57
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1003401: Fort Horstead
Recommendations	None

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Fort Horsted was part of the first line of Chatham forts, to the south of the town, also including Bridgewoods, Borstal and Luton. These forts were much more inconspicuous than previously, with little, if any, visible masonry or concrete structure even in the gorge. Their shapes were designed to blend into the natural contours of the landscape.

Brief History

Construction of Fort Horsted commenced in 1880 and completed after some delay in 1889. It was intended to be the strong point of the line, defending the London Road.

The fort was never provided with fixed armament. In 1902, only 7 machine guns were installed. The fort was officially abandoned as a defensive site in around 1906-7, although it remained garrisoned.

During the Second World War the fort mounted 3.7-inch and Bofors AA guns and acted as an ammunition store, and it remained in care and maintenance until being sold in 1961.

Outline Description

Fort Horsted is polygonal land fort, and is the largest of the Chatham land forts (the 'Chatham ring').

It is built to a trace resembling a large arrowhead pointing out from the front. Like Fort Borstal it has two rows of casemates, and the two rows are connected by a broad tunnel. The forward casemates provided living accommodation for the gun crews, together with an artillery store. To their right was a laboratory.

The main rear casemates have six rooms on the left of the tunnel and seven on the right, probably for barrack accommodation. The main magazines are off to the left of the main tunnel. Ten expense magazines connected by a tunnel run round in a half circle. Lifts connect each with six serving rooms on the ramparts above. The ramparts are plain with no prepared emplacements. The ditch, revetted in concrete, has three counterscarp galleries whilst the entrance

and bridge is flanked by gun rooms on either side. The fort had large reservoirs which also supplied Forts Bridgewoods and Luton via pipelines.

The deep dry moat completely encircles the Fort Horsted. The chalk and flint from this major excavation was piled on top of the concrete to provide further protection from bombardment.

Fort Horsted was designed to be concealed in the landscape, and the only exposed structure was the entrance at the rear which was protected by a drawbridge, and flanked by demi-bastion form from rifle slits and ditch flanking positions.

Condition

Fair.

The current owner has alterted the fort to convert it into six business units, but has also restored the main entrance tunnel and some of the casemates.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located south of Chatham on a high ridge facing south.

Threats

Possible threat from secondary use of the fort, however the continued use of the fort will also help ensure its maintenance.

Ownership

Commerical. Avondale Environmental Services Ltd

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Used as a light industrial area with six business units and conference centre

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The surviving Chatham ring forts (Hosted, Luton and Borstal) are Scheduled due to their importance as the last major work of traditional fortifications in the country, and together they have group value.

Fort Horsted is the largest of the Chatham ring land forts. It is unusual in being divided into two halves by a massive earthwork traverse containing a tunnel access from the entrance in the gorge to a position behind the front casesmates, as well as protecting the main magazine. The fort survives well, but its evidential and aesthetic value has been compromised by the alteration of

the fort into a business park. This has also compromised the setting of the fort, which is situated in a well developed area surrounded largely by major roads, housing and an extraction site. To the rear of the fort remains (in part) open fields. The fort is of communal value to those who work there and visit the site.

References

Fort Horsted website

PF website

PastScapes website

Saunders 1989

Publicaccess.Medway website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Fort Luton (OA127)

County	Kent
District	Medway
Parish	Chatham
NGR	TQ 76251 66024
Group	Chatham

PASTSCAPE#	416042
HER#	TQ 76 NE 59
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1003400: Fort Luton
Recommendations	There has been some low key development threats which require monitoring to ensure these fall within the Scheduled Monument consent. There is a potential threat from the secondary use of the fort, although conversely the use of the fort may also have a positive impact. The fort is being restored by a group of volunteers.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Fort Luton was part of the first line of Chatham forts, to the south of the town, also including Bridgewoods, Borstal and Horsted These forts were much more inconspicuous than previously, with little, if any, visible masonry or concrete structure even in the gorge. Their shapes were designed to blend into the natural contours of the landscape.

Brief History

Luton Fort was the smallest of the Chatham Ring Fortresses which were built in a half-ring two miles outside Chatham. Begun in 1876, the fort was not completed until 1892, work halting in the early 1880s until 1886 due to a lack of funds. During this time, advances in armaments had rendered some of the design obsolete and ongoing improvements in weaponry resulted in several alterations to the design during construction.

By the time the fort was complete, it was obsolete and was never armed. It was used as a training ground, then as barracks and storage in the First World War.

In the Second World War, the fort was converted to a Gun Operations Room and blast walls were constructed. The casemates were converted to operations rooms, dining rooms, kitchens and stores and further buildings constructed.

Following the Second World War, the fort was used by the Army Cadet Force and TA until the late 1950s when the land was sold to Kent County Council in order to build the school to the north. The fort became derelict. The land was sold on in 1988 and again in 1990 when it became a model museum, but again was derelict for over a decade until 2012 when the new owner began to repair the fort with a team of volunteers and is now a venue and community facility.

Outline Description

An irregular polygon in plan with a narrow deep dry ditch, faced with concrete. The eight casemates are of poured concrete, concealed by the chalk spoil created by the digging of the ditch. To either end of the casemates is a tunnel

leading to the ammunition stores below four of the gun emplacements. Six gun emplacements were constructed, but remained as bases for field guns to be wheeled in when necessary, rather than for fixed guns. In 1892, a rolling bridge was constructed which enables the bridge to be retracted, leaving the moat impossible to cross.

Further structures were built in and around the fort in the Second World War, although none appear to survive.

Condition

Poor. The fort however is being actively repaired and maintained.

The exterior defences appear to be very overgrown and the interior of the fort appears to have suffered erosion from people using vehicles and areas of waste spoil (Google Earth).

Trend

Improving.

Setting

The fort is located on a ridge of high ground to the south of Chatham and faces south, overlooking Luton valley.

Threats

Uncontrolled plant growth - following decades of neglect, the fort is heavily overgrown. It is now being maintained and restored by a group of volunteers, however, photographs on their website and images available from websites such as Google Maps show that there is a considerable amount of vegetation affecting the monument.

Development – there has been some low-key development proposals (HE pers comm), and some works completed outside Scheduled Monument consent.

Deterioration/ in need of management – the secondary use of the fort has the potential to impact its' historic fabric, although conversely this can also have a positive impact in helping to maintain the fort.

Ownership

Private ownership.

Occupancy

Occupied/in use.

Current use(s)

The fort is hired out for events but is also used for community projects and a volunteer team is restoring the fort.

Development proposals

Development – there has been some low-key development proposals (HE pers comm).

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The surviving Chatham ring forts (Hosted, Luton and Borstal) are Scheduled due to their importance as the last major work of traditional fortifications in the country, and together they have group value.

The historical significance is considerable as one of the few surviving forts of the original 'ring' of Palmerstone forts defending Chatham and the Medway. Although never armed as intended, the ongoing use and adaptations also indicate considerable evidential value as, although survival of fittings does not appear to be high, the earthworks and casemates survive, albeit altered. The fort is of clear evidential value, and overall remains intact and is aesthetically impressive.

The communal value of the fort is currently little: the fort was designed to be hidden from view and over a decade of being inaccessible has led to the local awareness of the fort being diminished. A volunteer project, however, to create a community space will significantly enhance the fort's communal value.

References

VF website

Fort Luton website

Kent Government website

HE pers comm – September 2016.

Compiler

Angela Warner

Grange and Woodlands Redoubt (OA128)

County	Kent
District	Medway
Parish	Isle of Grain
NGR	TQ 79796 68499
Group	Chatham

PASTSCAPE#	416064
HER#	TQ 76 NE 83
Heritage status	Unlisted
Recommendations	It is recommended that any surviving archaeology from the redoubt should be archaeological recorded.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Grange and Woodland Redoubt are of group value as part of the Chatham group of fortifications. Fort Darland (now demolished), which was started in 1893, was built to fill the gap between Grange and Woodland Redoubt, and the southern group of forts.

Brief History

Constructed between 1885 and 1890, depending upon source, along with Woodlands Redoubt . Known collectively as 'Twydall Redoubts', they were intended as semi-permanent infantry redoubts and were an experimental project by the Royal Engineers.

They were still in active use during the First World War.

Outline Description

The earthworks and buildings are shown in most detail on the OS 1:1250 plan produced between 1956-1966; the sub-oval earthworks align approximately north east to southwest, with the entrance to the north west. The parapets were unusually flat rendering them difficult to see and to hit.

Grange Redoubt was surrounded by a dry ditch and was accessed via a drawbridge. A line of casemates faced the parade yard, 15 at Grange Redoubt and 14 at Woodlands Redoubt. The redoubts have central bomb-proof shelters, open at the rear, with the terreplein and a parapet and firing step to the front of them. The ditch is shallow with an unclimbable fence at its bottom. The entrance is through a gateway open at the top. The ditch is crossed by a simple drawbridge which was raised to form a gate preventingentry. The ditch at Woodlands Redoubt has been filled on three sides, the bridge has gone but parts of the terreplein and shelters survive. Grange Redoubt is in a very ruinous state containing farm buildings

Condition

Very bad.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Both redoubts are to the south east of Grange, close to the Cinque Port Marshes.

Threats

Decay of Fabric.

Uncontrolled vegetation.

The redoubts have both been reused for agricultural purposes and little remains. Further damage appears to be likely from this reuse and uncontrolled plant growth.

Ownership

Private ownership.

Occupancy

Occupied.

Current use(s)

The redoubts are used for agricultural storage and stabling.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Little.

The redoubts were considered for Scheduling in 2013, but decided against as: 'the importance of the physical remains of the redoubts is considerably diminished by substantial alteration and loss of fabric and form'.

The damage and dereliction of the redoubts had rendered all of the physical significances as 'little', although there is some historical significance in the experimental nature of the defences.

References

PF website

VF website

webapps.kent website

Compiler

Angela Warner

Hoo Fort (OA129)

County	Kent
District	Medway
Parish	Hoo, St Werburgh
NGR	TQ 79645 70298
Group	Chatham

PASTSCAPE#	416812
HER#	TQ 77 SE 23
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1019643: Hoo Fort
Recommendations	None.

Type

Artillery Fort (Sea Fort).

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Chatham group of fortifications, with a particular relationship to Darnet Fort, 1km to the north east.

Brief History

Built between 1861 and 1871 as a sister fort to Darnet Fort, both the marshy ground and later changes to the design caused structural problems to both forts. The forts were built either side of the main channel of the River Medway to defend the Medway and Chatham Docks. The fort was armed with eleven 9-inch RML guns, although disarmed before the First World War.

In 1930 the fort was subjected to experiments which caused some damage, although the fort was repaired and brick structures added to the top in order for the fort to serve as an observation post in the Second World War (PF website).

Outline Description

The HE scheduling details describes the fort in detail, the following is a summary.

The monument includes a circular, casemated battery, set within an unrevetted ditch and outer glacis, with associated groynes, jetty and the remains of later, Second World War structures. The substantial, two-tiered battery, measures around 56m in diameter externally, and stands to its original height of about 10m. The brick-built structure is faced in granite ashlar, with lower courses dressed in Kentish ragstone. The upper level, smaller in diameter than the tier below, protrudes above the lip of the encircling ditch, beyond which, a sloping bank, or glacis, extends for a distance of up to 30m. The magazine and accommodation casemates of the lower tier are arranged in concentric rings around a solid concrete drum at the centre of the fort.

The outer ring of magazine chambers represent the shell and cartridge stores, and are entered from the magazine passage in front. Lift shafts rise from the passage, enabling the rapid deployment of ammunition to the gun floors above. A sophisticated lighting system formed part of the safety features of the magazine and consisted of a lantern window, set into the wall above the door to each chamber, and separated from the chamber by a pane of glass.

The gun level contains an outer ring of 11 interconnecting, vaulted casemates, arranged around the parade and reached by narrow bridges across the light well. The chamber behind the gun room was intended to provide wartime accommodation for the gunners, and was enclosed at the rear by a glazed screen, designed to be removed before the guns were fired.

Condition

Poor.

On the Heritage at Risk Register which states that the priority category is C – 'slow decay; no solution agreed'.

In 2007 Subterranea Britannica made a visit to the site and photographs show a number of fixtures and fittings were extant at this date including the counterbalance weight for the drawbridge.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

The fort is located at the eastern end of an island within the Hoo Salt Marsh in the River Medway approximately 2.5km north east of Gillingham. Hoo Fort retains its primary isolated setting.

Threats

Decay of Fabric.

Development proposals.

The Thames Water expansion of the island to the west is altering the character of the setting of the fort.

Ownership

Jointly owned by Peel Ports Sheerness and Thames Water.

Occupancy

Vacant/ not in use.

Current use(s)

The fort itself is vacant but the island is being expanded to the west by Thames Water depositing waste soil from London.

Development proposals

None identified other than the ongoing expansion by Thames Water.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is part of a Scheduled Monument.

The Scheduling description describes the forts significance: 'Hoo Fort survives well and retains many of its original components, including its associated glacis bank. When viewed as one of a pair of contemporary batteries, the fort provides a valuable insight into the wider, strategic defence of the Medway

during the late 19th century, and its later reuse demonstrates the continued importance of its location in the defence of Britain during World War II.'

The fort is in an isolated location and of limited communal value, but is a striking feature on the seascape, and is of clear evidential, aesthetic and historic value with a long period of use. It is a remarkably feat of Victorian engineering, and of group value with the other Chatham forts, particularly its sister fort – Darnet Fort.

References

PF website

Thameswater website

Subterranea Britannica website

VF website

HE website

Compiler

Angela Warner

Darnet Fort (OA130)

County	Kent
District	Medway
Parish	Gillingham
NGR	TQ 80679 70727
Group	Chatham

PASTSCAPE#	418885
HER#	TQ 87 SW 8
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1019642: Fort Darnet, Darnet Ness
Recommendations	Priority A on the Heritage at Risk Register. If a solution to the flooding/vandalism cannot be found, archaeological recording of the fort should be carried out urgently.

Type

Artillery Fort (Sea Fort).

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Darnet Fort is of group value with the other Chatham forts, and is particularly associated with Hoo Fort, which is located 1km to the south west.

Brief History

Darnet Fort was built between 1861 and 1875 as a sister fort to Hoo Fort, both the marshy ground and later changes to the design caused structural problems to both forts. The forts were built either side of the main channel of the River Medway to defend the Medway and Chatham Docks.

The fort was armed with eight 9-inch plus three 7-inch RML guns, although disarmed before the First World War. In 1930 the fort was subjected to experiments which caused some damage, although the fort was repaired and brick structures added to the top in order for the fort to serve as an observation post in the Second World War (PF website).

Outline Description

The Scheduling details describe the fort in detail, these are summarised below.

The monument includes a circular, casemated battery, set within an unrevetted ditch and outer glacis, with associated groynes, jetty and the remains of later, World War II structures. The substantial, two-tiered battery, measures around 56m in diameter externally, and stands to its original height of about 10m. The brick-built structure is faced in granite ashlar, with lower courses dressed in Kentish ragstone. The upper level, smaller in diameter than the tier below, protrudes above the lip of the encircling ditch, beyond which, a sloping bank, or glacis, extends for a distance of up to 50m.

The lower tier contains the magazine and accommodation casemates, arranged in concentric rings around a solid concrete drum at the centre of the fort. The gun level contains an outer ring of 11 interconnecting, vaulted casemates, arranged around the parade and reached by narrow bridges across the light well.

Reuse of the fort during the Second World War is represented by a mine watching post, situated on the roof, overlooking the Medway to the north and

west, and an observation post constructed within the embrasure of a southern casemate, with views towards South Yantlet Creek.

Condition

Very Bad.

Darnet Fort is classified on the HAR register 2015 as' Very Bad'. The site is partly flooded and is category A risk, 'at further threat of deterioration and no solution has been agreed'.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located within the River Medway approximately 2.5km north east of Gillingham. It lies to the east of Hoo Fort, surrounded by the sea. Kingswood Power Station is immediately to the north.

Threats

Flooding.

Decay of Fabric.

Ownership

Private ownership.

Owned by Medway Ports Authority who have flooded the fort to prevent vandalism.

Occupancy

Vacant/not in use.

Current use(s)

Vacant/derelict.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is part of a Scheduled Monument.

The scheduling details describes the fort's significance: 'Fort Darnet survives well, and retains many of its original components, including its associated glacis bank. When viewed as one of a pair of contemporary batteries, the fort provides a valuable insight into the wider, strategic defence of the Medway during the late 19th century, and its later reuse demonstrates the continued importance of its location in the defence of Britain during World War II.'

Darnet Fort has group value with Hoo Fort to the west, which were constructed as a part of sea forts at the same time. The fort is of clear evidential value and an impressive feat of Victorian engineering within the seascape and is of clear evidential, aesthetic and historical value. It also had a long period of

use until the Second World War. The remote location of the fort means that it is of limited communal value.

References

PF website

VF website

HE website

Compiler

Angela Warner

Grain Tower (OA131)

County	Kent
District	Medway
Parish	Isle of Grain
NGR	TQ 89869 76037
Group	Chatham

PASTSCAPE#	418676
HER#	TQ 87 NE 1079
Heritage status	Grade II Listed (list entry number 1204520) Part of Scheduled Monument 1019955: Coastal artillery defences on the Isle of Grain, immediately east and south east of Grain village
Recommendations	On the HAR Register, classified as 'very bad'. Ensure that any purchaser has applied for LBC as newspaper reports refer to this but no application is listed on the Medway Council website.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Grain Tower has group value with the other Chatham defences and those of the Thames; it was built to supplement Garrison Point. Also associated with Grain Fort and Grain Wing Battery (OA132).

Brief History

The foundations were begun in 1847 and construction completed in November 1855. It was almost obsolete by completion and, although initially armed with one 56-pdr and two 32-pdr SB guns, it was not armed by 1895.

In 1915 it was re-armed with two 4.7-inch QF guns taken from Grain Wing Battery and numerous buildings added to the tower. Between the wars, the tower was returned to communications use. In the Second World War, a twin 6-pdr was mounted on the roof.

In 1946, the tower reverted to a signal station and was decommissioned in 1956. It has been in private ownership for some time and was recently offered for sale with suggestions of conversion to residential or nightclub accommodation.

Outline Description

The listing details succinctly describe Grain Tower:

> *'Artillery tower... dated 1855 on door to west, the upper part partially cut away on north-east quarter during 1939-45 war to become anti-aircraft tower, with various internal and external concrete additions. Coursed stone. 2 storeys, divided by projecting band with various openings on lower stage. Lower stage divided internally between accommodation and magazines... Follows Martello tower constructional practice, but anticipatory of the Solent/Spithead off-shore forts in siting (around 500 yards off-shore at the edge of the Medway deep channel).'*

Condition

Very bad.

On the Heritage at Risk Register as Category C – 'Slow decay; no solution agreed.'

Photographs taken by the Subterranea Britannica group in 1996 show that at this date a number of features were extant including the ammunition lift.

Photographs on estate agents' and newspaper websites from 2014-15 show the building to be fairly sound, although with some damage

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located at the confluence between the River Medway and the River Thames between Isle of Grain to the west and Garrison Point to the east. The fort is off shore and surrounded by the sea.

Threats

Deterioration/in need of management.

Ownership

Private ownership.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

The tower was for sale in 2015, although at the time of writing the status of the tower is unknown. The fort has been given the address of No.1 The Thames.

Development proposals

None identified, although news reports refer to the conversion of the fort to residential use.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The tower is Grade II Listed and part of a Scheduled Monument.

Grain Tower is of historic and evidential value as a defensive structure adapted to the requirements of each war, with a long period of us. It was built along the same lines as the Martello towers that were constructed along the British and Irish coastlines in the early 19th century, and is the last-built example of a gun tower of this type.

Its aesthetic value lies within its prominent position as a landmark within the seascape. Its remote location means that it is difficult to access reducing its communal value.

References

PF website

Subterranea Britannica website

The Independent website

Compiler

Angela Warner

Grain Fort and Grain Wing Battery (OA132)

County	Kent
District	Medway
Parish	Isle of Grain
NGR	TQ 89049 76648
Group	Chatham

PASTSCAPE#	418677, 418678
HER#	TQ 87 NE 8, TQ 87 NE 9
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1019955: Coastal artillery defences on the Isle of Grain, immediately east and south east of Grain village
Recommendations	The Grain Tower (OA 131) is on the HAR Register, but it does not include these defences. It is recommended that the fort and battery are surveyed and recorded.

Type

Artillery Fort. Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Grain Fort and Grain Wing Battery is of group value with the other Chatham defences, it is part of the same group, and Scheduled Monument, as Grain Tower (OA131).

Brief History

The monument, which falls into six separate areas of protection, includes five 19th century coastal artillery fortifications, including a gun tower, a fort and three batteries, and later 20th century additions, including two searchlight emplacements, constructed on low-lying ground on the eastern reaches of the Isle of Grain, commanding the entrance to the River Medway.

Grain Fort

Commenced in 1860 and completed in 1867, in 1864 it was armed with sixteen heavy guns facing seaward and twelve lighter guns facing landward. The armament underwent a series of upgrades before the final allocation of two 6.2-inch guns in the Second World War for close defence, and a spigot mortar at each end of the terreplein, traces of which survive.

Grain Fort was decommissioned in 1956 and its appearance subsequently altered by the demolition of its keep and the partial infilling of the surrounding ditch.

Grain Wing Battery

Built circa 1890, the battery was situated to the south of Grain Fort. Its armament consisted of two 4.7-inch QF and a pair of 11-inch RML guns. These emplacements formed a line along the east facing seaward side of the battery. In 1911/12 the QF guns were removed and remounted on Grain Tower, the RMLs had already been removed. In the First World War the battery was occupied by troops in temporary accommodation.

In 1960 the battery was still in good condition and a tall observation tower stood on the right flank, which might indicate that the battery was re-armed in some way during the Second World War. The gun emplacements and

magazines were infilled post-1961, and the battery is still discernible amongst the scrub.

Outline Description

Grain Fort

The fort consisted of a north-south aligned, semi-circular brick keep, enclosed on its eastern front by a ditch, and a large, heptagonal earthwork beyond, designed to support the armament. The western gorge wall of the keep extended to meet the ends of the rampart, and the compound was completely enclosed by a substantial outer ditch. The keep provided accommodation on two levels, for at least 250 men, and was arranged around a central parade. The main magazine survives within the north eastern passage, and was surveyed in 1999. Many of its original fittings survive, including the remains of the ammunition lift and some of the notices labelling various components of the magazine. Subsidiary magazines, and ancillary chambers, were located beneath the terreplein, which was designed to support 13 heavy, rifled muzzle-loaders (RMLs) and was accessed, via a covered way, from the inner ditch.

Grain Wing Battery

Both pairs of emplacements had the usual magazine arrangements for their type beneath. The battery had an outer defensive enceinte and a central linear hollow dug into the hillside for the gun emplacements, magazines and crew shelters. The outer defence consisted of an elongated irregular hexagonal earthwork with a ditch and unclimbable fence. On the western side was the military road connecting Grain Fort with Dummy Battery to the South. The main entrance was to the south-west with a second one at the north-west angle. To the east and south-east the ditch formed a counterscarp. The BC post incorporating one of two DRF positions was on a bank running along the inside of the western ditch. The second DRF was on the northern corner of the battery.

There is now little trace of the associated complex system of anti-invasion defences.

Condition

Poor.

The fort is mostly demolished. The foundations of the gun emplacements can be seen on Google Earth and the site appears overgrown. The PF Society noted that in 2006 the ramparts and the ditch survive as do some underground components such as the caponiers and the magazines but cannot be accessed.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on the eastern edge of the Isle of Grain peninsula facing north east to the confluence of the River Thames and the River Medway. The fort is situated within a wooded area with development of the Isle of Grain further inland.

Threats

Uncontrolled plant growth.

Ownership

St James Parish Council.

Occupancy

Occupied/in use.

Current use(s)

Open site. Part of the Isle of Grain Coastal Park and managed by the Friends of Grain Coastal Park.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Grain Fort and Grain Wing Battery are part of a Scheduled Monument consisting of six separate areas.

The Scheduled Monument details clarifies the significance: 'Despite later modifications, the 19th century coastal defences on the Isle of Grain retain a significant proportion of their original features, providing information related to their construction and use. The subsequent remodelling of earlier features, and the additions made to the coastline during both World Wars, provide a rare insight into how military engineering and design was forced to adapt to meet the radical improvements to artillery and the changing character of naval warfare. The fortifications at Grain represent a major landscape feature which developed over a century of continuous military occupation, and the significance of the monument is further enhanced by its potential amenity value as an educational resource'.

References

Friends of grain coastal park website

PF website

Compiler

Angela Warner

AREA 13: COASTAL REDOUBTS

OA no.	Fort name	Significance	Designated	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
133	Dymchurch Redoubt	B	SM.LB (II*)	1	3	E1	1, 3,4
134	Eastborne Redoubt	B	SM.LB (II)	1	1	x	1, 8
135	Harwich Redoubt	A	SM.LB (II*)	1	1	x	1, 8

Dymchurch Redoubt (OA133)

County Kent
District Shepway
Parish Hythe
NGR TR 12930 32119
Group Kent

PASTSCAPE#	464040
HER#	TR 13 SW 20
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1017352: Dymchurch Redoubt
Recommendations	The redoubt is on the HAR register and repairs are in progress, this requires monitoring to ensure the future preservation of the fort.

Type

Redoubt.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Three redoubts, or large coastal artillery forts, were built between 1804 and 1812, at Harwich (OA157), Dymchurch and Eastbourne (OA?), to provide garrisons of up to 350 men to supplement the contemporary Martello towers, built as a systematic chain of defence along the coast between East Sussex and Suffolk.

Brief History

The redoubt was constructed between 1804 and 1812, to support a defensive chain of 21 martello towers, guarding the coastline of Romney Marsh between Hythe in Kent and Rye in Sussex. It was specifically designed to help protect the Marshland sluices which emptied into the sea at Dymchurch, then the administrative centre for the Marsh.

During the First World War, Dymchurch Redoubt was used for troop accommodation. In the Second World War, the south coast was again at risk of invasion, and two 6-inch BL guns were mounted in casemates built over the original gun emplacements. A prominent battery observation post was built and pillboxes were sited on the parapet in order to repel an infantry attack. It was fully operational by 1942 as an Emergency Coastal Battery. After the war, the observation post was used as a Coastguard lookout and radar was installed to monitor shipping in the English Channel.

Outline Description

The following is taking from the Scheduling description –

'The redoubts are circular, brick built structures up to around 68m in diameter, and stand to a height of around 12m. They comprise 24 casemates

(bomb proof vaulted chambers), built around a central, circular parade ground. These provided accommodation for the officers and men, as well as stores and a cook house. Above the casemates was an open gun platform with emplacements for ten 24-pdr cannons, each with its own adjacent expense magazine, which held shot and charges for immediate use. The redoubts were enclosed by dry moats, with an encircling glacis slope, designed to protect the fort in time of attack.

The gun platform was designed to accommodate ten 24-pdr cannons, with firing ranges of around 1.5km, mounted on wooden traversing carriages and positioned behind granite-dressed embrasures.

Second World War fortifications, including gun emplacements and observation posts survive, as do structures associated with the later 20th century use of the redoubt as a military training facility'.

Condition

Poor.

Dymchurch Redoubt is on the HAR Register 2015, category E – 'under repair or in fair to good repair, but no user identified; or under threat of vacancy with no obvious new user (applicable only to buildings capable of beneficial use)'.

Trend

Improving.

A Conservation Plan was prepared in 2005, the HAR register states that phased repairs are in progress.

Setting

Located 3km north east of Dymchurch, adjacent to the coastline to the south. It is situated at the head of the shingle beach on the western edge of the Hythe Ranges. The redoubt is situated on the coastline, the setting of the redoubt is affected by 'Sandy Bay' caravan park and residential housing to the west side of the redoubt.

Threats

Decay of fabric - deterioration to the original fort and the later additions. For example, there is decay to the brickwork, and concrete covers to the gun emplacements.

Deterioration/ in need of management – however management and repairs are underway, and phased repairs are in progress.

Coastal Erosion.

Ownership

Government Agency. MOD.

Occupancy

Part-occupied/ part in-use.

Current use(s)

Part of an MOD rifle range and training area. PastScapes states that it is used as a store.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Dymchurch Redoubt is of considerable evidential and historical value, as despite extensive additions, particularly during the 20th century, the site survives well and displays a diversity of original components. The casemates retain many of their original features, including hearths and ventilation shafts, and are largely unaffected by later alterations, although brick partitions were added to the casemates during the 20th century. More significant modifications were made to the outer wall of the parade ground during the later 20th century, to accommodate a military training facility.

Although impacting the fabric of the redoubt, the continued use of the fortification is of interest, and the long period of its use through both World Wars as historical value to the site. Elements of its Second World War and later 20th century use remain including as a coastguard lookout and radar.

Furthermore, when viewed as part of a wider defence network along this part of the coastline, the monument provides a significant insight into the strategic integration of the Martello tower system in the defence of Britain during the 19th century. Dymchurch Redoubt is also of group value with the surviving redoubts and Eastbourne and Harwich. It is of little communal value, as access is not possible although it is possible to view the site by walking along the sea wall which allows a close approach on the south side.

References

Subterranean History website (2007)

Wikipedia website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Eastbourne Redoubt (OA134)

County	East Sussex
District	Eastborne
Parish	Eastborne
NGR	TV 6229 9968
Group	Sussex

PASTSCAPE#	470263
HER#	MES637
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1017358: Eastbourne Redoubt, Listed Building (II) 1043662: The Redoubt Fort Conservation Area: Town Centre & Seafront Conservation Area
Recommendations	Visitor wear and tear, and coastal erosion should be monitored to ensure this does not impact the historic monument.

Type

Redoubt.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Three redoubts, or large coastal artillery forts, were built between 1804 and 1812, at Harwich (OA157), Dymchurch and Eastbourne, to provide garrisons of up to 350 men to supplement the contemporary martello towers, built as a systematic chain of defence along the coast between East Sussex and Suffolk.

Brief History

The redoubt was constructed between 1804 and 1812, to support the defensive chain of martello towers, guarding the coastline at Pevensey Bay and Eastbourne.

In 1959 Eastbourne Redoubt fell into disuse. During the First World War, the Redoubt was used as an Army Provost Corps (Military Police) headquarters and town guardroom. The cells that formed part of this can still be visited.

In 1926 Eastbourne Borough Council bought the building from the War Department and plans were made to turn it into a venue for leisure activities.

During 1939 - 1945, the building was requisitioned again and was used briefly as an air raid shelter for a local school, for storage and was said to have housed Canadian troops before D-Day and the start of the liberation of France on 6th June 1944.

Outline Description

The following is taking from the Scheduling description –

'The redoubts are circular, brick built structures up to around 68m in diameter, and stand to a height of around 12m. They comprise 24 casemates (bomb proof vaulted chambers), built around a central, circular parade ground. These provided accommodation for the officers and men, as well as stores and a cook house. Above the casemates was an open gun platform with emplacements for ten 24-pdr cannons, each with its own adjacent expense magazine, which held shot and charges for immediate use. The

redoubts were enclosed by dry moats, with an encircling glacis slope, designed to protect the fort in time of attack.

The gun platform was designed to accommodate ten 24-pdr cannons, with firing ranges of around 1.5km, mounted on wooden traversing carriages and positioned behind granite-dressed embrasures.

The glacis has been mostly levelled by past modern construction of buildings and access tracks, although a section of the glacis survives on the north western side of the redoubt. A. section of the glacis has been disturbed by various phases in the construction of the promenade, although traces of its retaining wall may survive beneath the shingle beach.

Condition

Good.

The redoubt is open as a museum and visitor centre, and is well maintained, but has problems in some areas.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The fort is situated on the coast to the east of Eastbourne, surrounded by predominantly residential development. It is situated at the head of a shingle beach to the north east of Eastbourne Pier.

Threats

Visitor wear and tear.

Coastal Erosion.

Ownership

Local Authority. Eastbourne Borough Council. Heritage Eastbourne manages the Redoubt Fortress building, visitor experience and its three military collections

Occupancy

Part-occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Museum and Heritage Centre.

Development proposals

There are proposals and a grant application to move the collections from the museum, into a museum to be constructed adjacent to the redoubt. The redoubt will be used for interpretation and events, rather than a museum collection.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The redoubt is a Scheduled Monument, and Grade II Listed Building.

The Eastbourne Redoubt is of considerable evidential value; it survives well, and displays a wide range of original components and associated features. Its use as a museum and heritage centre means that it is of high communal value.

Historically, the fort had a long period of use during both World Wars. It is significance when viewed as part of a wider defence network along this part of the coastline, and the monument provides a significant insight into the strategic integration of the Martello tower system in the defence of Britain during the 19th century. It is also of group value with the surviving redoubts at Harwich and Dymchurch.

References

Wikipedia website

HE website

PastScapes website

Eastbourne Museums website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Harwich Redoubt (OA135)

This fort is part of the Coastal Redoubt strategic group which is within the south-east region, however geographically it is within the HE East of England region. As a result, there is a duplication of this fort within the East of England region, although only one reference number has been allocated to it (OA135).

County Essex
District Tendring
Parish Harwich
NGR TM 2615 3215
Group Harwich

PASTSCAPE#	618941
HER#	53 (SMR number)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1017205: The Harwich Redoubt Grade II* Listed (list entry number 1187916)
Recommendations	Visitor wear and tear, and coastal erosion should be monitored to ensure this does not impact the historic monument. The recovery of the two RML guns from the moat would improve its interpretation.

Type

Redoubt.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Harwich Redoubts is one of three redoubts in England, the other two are on the south coast, at Dymchurch and Eastbourne. Harwich Redoubt provided with Languard Fort (in Sussex), cross fire over the harbour approach.

Brief History

The Harwich Redoubt was built between 1807 and 1809 to protect the important deep water harbour in the event of invasion or attack by Napoleon's forces. The location, just outside the town gate, presented a wide field of fire across the peninsula and, combined with Languard Fort in Suffolk, allowed for cross fire over the harbour approach.

The platform is equipped with ten embrasures, each was originally designed for a 24-pdr SB cannons, which were slide mounted on traversing carriages secured to central pivots. None of the embrasures survive unaltered.

In 1861 the embrasure openings were narrowed with granite blocks to protect the gun crews from rifle fire. The deflective parapet and exterior walls, originally clad in limestone, were refitted with granite to withstand heavier bombardment from improved artillery. In 1862 the ten guns were replaced with more powerful armament, seven 68-pdr cannons and three 8-inch SB guns.

In 1871 three of the positions facing the harbour approach were modified to take 9-inch RML guns.

In 1903 the two emplacements facing the harbour were modified to take 12-pdr QF guns and a sally port was added to the rear of the ground floor guard room to provide access into the north side of the moat.

In 1910 the QF guns were removed, and the redoubt became barrack accommodation.

The redoubt had little active use in the First World War, and was sold to the Town Council in the 1920s and housing developments soon encroached around the foot of the hill.

The redoubt was recommissioned for military use in the Second World War and served a range of support roles, including a period as a detention room for British servicemen. A Bofors anti-aircraft gun was stationed on the forward gun platform as part of the air defences for the harbour.

In the Cold War, Harwich Redoubt was retained as a civil defence centre for co-ordinating emergency services in the event of nuclear war. These operations were transferred to other more suitable buildings in the late 1950s, and the redoubt was abandoned until restoration work was initiated by the Harwich Society in 1969.

Outline Description

Harwich Redoubt is brick built with masonry details and exterior facings. The tower is circular in plan, encircled by a dry moat and enclosing an open central parade ground. The ground floor has 18 rooms or casemates radiating from the Parade which served as stores for ammunition and general supplies, a cookhouse, ablution room, latrines and accommodation, once the garrison of 250 men and six officers became operational in 1810.

The upper edge of the moat's brick retaining wall is set slightly below the level of the gun platform so as to conceal the bulk of the building while allowing an uninterrupted field of fire across the modified slope of the hill. A generator house and oil store was constructed in the moat in 1903 in order to supply electricity to searchlights located on the slope below the fort. Access to the redoubt was originally provided by a fixed bridge, with a drawbridge section, leading to the gun platform. This was replaced with the present permanent bridge, capable of supporting heavy vehicles, after the Second World War.

Of the various guns located on the upper platform the only original piece of ordnance is the 1872 RML gun raised from the moat, which is included in the scheduling.

Condition

Good.

The redoubt is activity conserved by the Harwich Society, and well managed/

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on the eastern side of Harwich peninsula, situated on a slight hill, flanked by Harbour Crescent to the north and east, Main Road to the west, and Mayflower Avenue to the south. The primary setting of the fort has been lost to housing development and allotments.

Threats

None identified.

Ownership

Managed by the Harwich Society.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Managed and opened to the public by the Harwich Society

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

Harwich Redoubt is a Scheduled Monument and Grade II* Listed.

Harwich Redoubt is of clear evidential value, it has undergone comparatively few later alterations, and it remains the most complete example of the three ten-gun fortifications (redoubts). The tower is substantially unaltered since its completion in 1810.

The redoubt is historical significant and has group value particularly when considered together with the surviving Martello towers and other batteries along the east coast. It is situated in close proximity to Beacon Hill Fort, which is also considered to be of exceptional significance.

The redoubt retains a range of modifications which demonstrate both the provisions made for improved ordnance in the latter part of the 19th century, and the continued military importance of the harbour. The redoubt's use in the First and Second World War adds to is value, as does its role during the Cold War as a civil defence centre for co-ordinating emergency services. This is a uncommon secondary use of 19th century fortifications.

The fort also has potential for two original RML guns to be recovered from the moat, which have been identified by geophysical survey. Harwich Redoubt is currently being restored by the Harwich Society, and is open to the public, it is therefore of considerable communal value.

References

The Harwich Society website 2016

VF website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

AREA 14: DOVER

OA no	Fort/ Site Name	Signif.	Designation	Group*	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
136	Langdon Battery	C	x	4	5	2	x	1, 2, 8
137	Pier Extension Battery	B	LB	2	5	3	x	1, 4
138	Shotyard Battery, Dover Castle	A	SM	1	3 (RC)	2	x	2, 8
139	East Demi Battery, Dover Castle	B	SM	1	3 (RC)	1	x	2
140	Shoulder of Mutton Battery, Dover Castle	B	SM	1	3 (RC)	2	x	2
141	Archcliffe Fort	B	SM	4	3 (RC)	3	x	6
142	South Breakwater Battery	B	LB	2	5	2	x	1
143	Knuckle Battery	B	LB	2	6	3	x	1
144	Western Heights including Citadel, Drop Redoubt, North Centre Bastion, North Centre Detached Bastion, North Entrance, Western Outwork, Grand Shaft, St.Martin's Battery	A	SM. LB	3	1	3	C1	2, 5, 6, 7, 8
145	Citadel Battery	B	x	4	5	3	x	2, 4, 5, 7
146	Fort Burgoyne	B	SM	4	3	2	C1	2, 4, 6, 7
147	Admiralty Pier Turret Battery	A	SM. LB	2	3 (RC)	2	x	1, 4
148	Eastern Arm Battery	B	LB	2	5	3	x	1,4

* Groups:

Group 1 – Dover Castle

Group 2 – Coastal Batteries

Group 3 – Western Heights

Group 4 – Hilltop Defences

Langdon Battery (OA136)

County	Kent
District	Dover
Parish	St Margaret's at Cliffe
NGR	TR 33954 42395
Group	Dover

PASTSCAPE#	1421769
HER#	TR 34 SW 213
NT HBSMR#	Battery Observation Post 142310 (c 1905)
Heritage status	Unlisted
Recommendations	

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Associated with Citadel Battery on the Western Heights (*see* OA154). Both batteries were the most powerful to be installed in Dover during peacetime. Langdon Battery formed part of the Examination Service where vessels would be signalled and checked before coming into harbour (if they did not respond they would be fired upon). The signalling and gun controlling was co-ordinated from the Port War Signal Station and Fire Command Post at Dover Castle.

Brief History

Langdon battery was built *c* 1904 with two 6-inch BL guns and three 9.2-inch BL guns. One of the 9.2-inch positions was altered to take a 6-inch gun sometime before the Second World War. The battery saw action during the First World War and Second World War.

After lying derelict, work began in 1970 to demolish the battery in order to convert the site to a coastguard station.

Outline Description

Langdon battery was arranged with two 6-inch gun emplacements to the west and three 9.2-inch BL guns to the east with magazines and shell stores below. A tunnel leading to a battery observation post on the cliff edge is still extant.

Condition

Fair.

Aerial photography shows two slightly overgrown emplacements can be seen to the west of the battery. To the east, three emplacements can be seen with modern coastguard structures on top (Google maps 2016). Photographs from Chris Rayner in 2011 show that structures below ground are extant including the shell lift and store and the magazines and tunnel to the observation post which is located on the cliff edge (Subterranean Britannica website)).

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The battery is located on Langdon cliffs on the eastern side of the town of Dover and Dover Castle, and overlooking Dover harbour to the south. Although the busy port of Dover is in close proximity, it largely retains its primary setting on the cliffs.

Threats

Uncontrolled plant growth.

Visitor wear and tear – the Coastguard currently use the former battery. Its use has helped to maintain the battery's remains, but there is also the potential for secondary use of the battery to impact the fabric of the site.

Coastal erosion – possible threat.

Ownership

HM Coastguard, associated structures are located on National Trust land to the south.

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Government Agency.

HM Coastguard.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Some.

Langdon Battery is of evidential value for its surviving remains; the battery has been demolished in part above-ground, but below-ground the battery survives in good condition.

Langdon Battery has strong group value, along with Citadel Battery it was part of the Examination Service which was coordinated from the Fire Command Post and Port War Signal Station at Dover castle. Both Langdon Battery and Citadel Battery are not included within the Dover Scheduled areas, however Citadel Battery is considered to be the better surviving example of the pair.

Historically, Langdon battery has had a long period of use, it saw action during the First and Second World Wars and the below-ground elements are still used as part of the Coastguard Station.

The battery is of communal value to those who work there and continued to use the space as part of the Coastguard Station.

References

Pattison, P 2010

Subterranean Britannica website

VF website

PF website

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Angela Warner

Pier Extension Battery (OA137)

County	Kent
District	Dover
Parish	Dover
NGR	TR 33026 39946
Group	Dover, Coastal Batteries

PASTSCAPE#	1429246
HER#	TR 33 NW 54
Heritage status	Part of Grade II Listed (list entry number 1393608) Admiralty Pier and Associated Structures, Including Admiralty Pier Lighthouse
Recommendations	Survey to assess what elements of the battery survive and their condition.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Dover had five coastal batteries defending the harbour, although they were constructed at different times. Admiralty Pier was the furthest west located on the original arm of Admiralty Pier called Pier Turret Battery/ Pier Fort (constructed 1872 and updated 1905-1910) (OA121). Pier Extension Battery was constructed at the eastern end of Admiralty Pier extension 1905-1910. The Southern Breakwater Battery (OA120) was located at the western end of the southern breakwater in 1910, and the Eastern Arm Battery (OA153) was located at the southern end of the eastern arm of the harbour 1905-1910. Knuckle Battery was the latest to be built between 1915-1917 and was located at the eastern end of the southern breakwater. All of the batteries were updated during the Second World War.

Brief History

The battery was built between 1905 and 1910 and fitted with two 12-pdr QF guns and used throughout the First World War. During the Second World War the battery had three 12-pdr guns and was used as an anti-motor torpedo boat battery. The battery was in use until 1945.

Outline Description

The two 12-pdr gun emplacements were positioned adjacent to each other at the end of Admiralty Pier with a Battery Observation Post between them and with magazines, stores, shelters and an office behind and to the rear (Dover Historian, 2015, Nick Catford drawing of Admiralty Pier Extension Battery).

Condition

Poor.

Google Earth shows that the southerly 12-pdr emplacement appears to be extant, but the emplacement to the north east appears to have been built upon which may relate to the adjacent lighthouse.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Pier Extension Battery is located at the eastern end of Admiralty Pier on the western side of Dover harbour.

Threats

Decay of Fabric

Flooding/ Coastal Erosion - Admiralty Pier is exposed to high waves during high tides and storm surges.

Ownership

Government Agency.

Dover Harbour Board.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Unused, one of the emplacements may have been converted with a structure on top.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is part of the Grade II Listed Admiralty Pier, and as such is of considerable value.

The battery appears to survive in part, and is therefore of evidential value, although this requires further assessment. However, Pier Extension Battery is of particular historic value. It is a particularly impressive feat of engineering, designed as the western breakwater to Admiralty Harbour, to form a harbour of refuge for the British fleet. It is of particular note as the first artificial harbour in the country to be built in the 20th century. It also served an important wartime role during both world wars; in the First World War as a haven for battleships and submarines of the Dover Patrol protecting the English Channel, and in the Second World War for its part in the Dunkirk evacuation

The Admiralty Pier extension has strong group value, as an integral part of the Admiralty Harbour, which also includes the Eastern Arm (OA153) and the Southern Breakwater (OA120).

References

Dover Historian website

Pastscape website

VF website

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Angela Warner.

Shotyard Battery, Dover Castle (OA138)

County Kent
District Dover
Parish Dover
NGR TR 32598 41602
Group Dover

PASTSCAPE#	1442292
HER#	TR 34 SW 5
Heritage status	Part of Scheduled Monument 1019075: Dover Castle
Recommendations	The Conservation Management Plan issued to English Heritage in 2014 recommends several courses of action to conserve and interpret the battery. In brief, these are based upon opening the battery to the public to allow interpretation; in turn, this would ensure that cutting back of overgrowth would be maintained.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Shotyard Battery is part of the cliff-top defences, and the last major re-armament of Dover Castle.

Brief History

The battery is referred to as both 'Shotyard' and 'Shot Yard' in the sources. Construction began in 1871 and completed in 1874, the battery was part of the last major re-armament of Dover Castle, but within about ten years the two 10-inch RML guns had become obsolete and these positions ceased to be used by 1910. Later additions to the battery include a rear laboratory and a further shell and cartridge store.

Dover Castle was re-armed and adapted at various time up to and including the Cold War, although the battery itself does not appear to have been re-used after it was disarmed.

Outline Description

Built of grey stock bricks the battery comprises positions for two 10-inch RMLs together with two pairs of shell stores. One of the stores is located slightly north of the eastern gun while the other forms part of the traverse between the guns. To the rear of the battery is a rectangular single-storey flat roofed laboratory constructed in 1878-9. To the eastern side of the battery and set within an earth bank is an additional shell store and cartridge store constructed in 1883-4. Set vertically in the gun pits are obsolete cannon used as pivots for gun carriages.

Condition

Fair.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located at the southern end of Dover Castle facing south across Dover Harbour.

Threats

Uncontrolled overgrowth – this is cleared periodically by English Heritage but remains an ongoing issue.

Visitor wear and tear.

Ownership

Cared for by English Heritage under licence from Historic England until 2023.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in use.

The site is open to the public and the battery can be seen from a footpath, although further access is not possible.

Current use(s)

Part of Dover Castle visitor site, the battery can be viewed from a path adjacent but is fenced off with no access.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The battery is part of the Scheduled Monument of Dover Castle. Shotyard Battery is not singled-out in the Scheduled Monument description, but the OA Conservation Management Plan (2014) assesses the significances, which are described below.

The battery has exceptional evidential value as the battery is relatively intact and is the least altered of the four 1870s batteries here. Although it is in a poor state of conservation its fabric contains evidence of the structure and working of the artillery battery, and it retains the potential for further discovery when cleared of vegetation.

The battery has exceptional historical value as the batteries represent a new phase in the arming of the castle in the 1870s with heavy artillery, which as it turned out was a very short-lived episode. They are illustrative of a determined phase of providing modern artillery in coastal batteries following the building of major defences in the 1860s, and reflect the new requirements for handling shells rather than powder and shot. Their value is here enhanced by the fact that the original plans for the battery survive.

The battery has some to little aesthetic value as these batteries are not of high visual quality, but their intricate arrangement of brick concrete and iron for holding the guns was of interest, and occurred in part of scenic views from the castle and along the cliff top.

The battery is currently closed to the public, but it does not form part of the mainstream interpretation at the site. It is therefore not well understood or appreciated by visitors and has limited communal value.

References

PF website

Oxford Archaeology Dover 2014

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Angela Warner

East Demi Battery, Dover Castle (OA139)

County Kent
District Dover
Parish Dover
NGR TR 32869 41731
Group Dover

PASTSCAPE#	Part of 467778
HER#	Part of TR 34 SW 5
Heritage status	Part of Scheduled Monument 1019075: Dover Castle
Recommendations	The Conservation Management Plan issued to English Heritage in 2014 recommends that the battery should be assessed for its condition and long term preservation. It is in a position which renders it unlikely to be opened to the public and so it should be recorded, interpreted and preserved.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

East Demi Battery is part of the cliff-top defences, and part of the last major re-armament of Dover Castle.

Brief History

Referred to in armament returns as East Demi Bastion, because of its position within Dover Castle, the battery is situated the east side of Dover Castle.

The battery was built between 1871-74 when Dover received an upgrade of fifteen heavy guns. In 1886 the battery had three 9-inch RML guns

All the Dover RML batteries were rendered obsolete and unnecessary by the BL batteries built at the

Citadel and Langdon Cliffs at the turn of the century.

Outline Description

The battery has two gun positions similar to the others of this period at the castle and a magazine between the two. The southern position faces due south while the other faces south-east and each has a semi-circular brick retaining wall around the central pivot and stone blocks with hoops for securing the guns.

Condition

Good.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The battery is situated on East-Demi Bastion, on the east side of Dover Castle.

Threats

Uncontrolled overgrowth – this is cleared periodically by English Heritage but remains an ongoing issue.

Ownership

Cared for by English Heritage under licence from Historic England until 2023.

Occupancy

Vacant.

The location of the battery at the cliff-edge means that it is not open to the public.

Current use(s)

Part of Dover Castle, but the battery is not publically accessible.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is part of the Scheduled Monument of Dover Castle. East Demi Battery is not singled-out in the Scheduled Monument description, but the OA Conservation Management Plan (2014) assesses the significances, which are described below.

The battery has considerable evidential value and is a valuable archaeological resource which has the potential to be investigated in order to help us learn more of coastal defence in the later 19th century.

The battery has some historical value as the battery is able to illustrate aspects of coastal defence in the latter part of the 19th century but this value is perhaps reduced by the very limited public access that is possible to the site. This was a period of rapid technological change and the fact that the position became obsolete relatively quickly illustrates this.

The battery has some aesthetic value as, although the battery is a simple utilitarian structure, it has some aesthetic value and this is enhanced by the drama of the cliff top location and the adjacent ramparts.

The battery has little communal value: largely due to its location the battery is relatively little known although there is potentially a considerable public interest in such structures.

References

PF website

Oxford Archaeology Dover 2014

Compiler

Jane Phimester and Angela Warner

Shoulder of Mutton Battery, Dover Castle (OA140)

County Kent
District Dover
Parish Dover
NGR TR 32443 41545
Group Dover

PASTSCAPE#	468100
HER#	TR 34 SW 817
Heritage status	Part of Scheduled Monument 1019075: Dover Castle (within the south western curtilage of the monument)
Recommendations	The Conservation Management Plan issued to English Heritage in 2014 recommends several courses of action to conserve and interpret the battery. In brief, these are based upon opening up the view of the battery to the public to allow interpretation; this would require the removal of overgrowth.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The Shoulder of Mutton Battery is of group value with the other Dover cliff-top defences, and it is part of the last major re-armament of Dover Castle.

Brief History

The battery was constructed between 1871 and 1874, replacing an earlier battery. The new battery was constructed for two 9-inch and three 7-inch RML guns. By the end of the century, the battery was almost obsolete and by 1903 had been re-armed with two 6-pdr QF guns to defend the inner harbour. The battery was dis-armed by 1910.

In the Second World War, the battery was re-armed.

Outline Description

The layout is unusual: four of the five gun positions are located on the hillside sloping down towards Dover and the fifth is on the base of the western ditch. There are some later magazines. Three shallow brick-vaulted casemates are within the adjoining ditch counterscarp wall, some of which are later additions to the battery. The magazines, stores and gun emplacements were constructed in grey stock bricks with cement mortar as used on other batteries of the time and have earth on the roofs. The casemates are interlinked and each is known to have a fireplace on the end wall although they are blocked up. A brick-lined tunnel connects the main section of the battery to the fifth gun position located within the ditch. A laboratory building was constructed in 1879 to the rear and protected by a blast bank and retaining wall.

Condition

Fair.

The battery is overgrown with vegetation and derelict but the emplacements are extant.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on the south western edge of Dover Castle adjacent to the cliff edge and facing Dover Harbour.

Threats

Uncontrolled overgrowth – EH clear this periodically, but it appears to be an ongoing issue according to the Conservation Management Plan (2014).

Ownership

Cared for by English Heritage under licence from Historic England until 2023.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ in use.

The site is open to the public and the battery can be seen from a footpath, although further access is not possible.

Current use(s)

With the south-westerly curtilage of the monument of Dover Castle, however this area is fenced off and not accessible to the public. This area is also within dense woodland.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is part of the Scheduled Monument of Dover Castle. Shoulder of Mutton Battery is not singled-out in the Scheduled Monument description, but the Dover Castle Conservation Management Plan (2014) assesses the significance.

The battery has exceptional evidential value as the scarped earth bank and the paths and tunnels linking the casemates have the potential to provide evidence of the working of artillery defences at Dover in the late 19th century. When cleared of undergrowth and ivy the built remains will also have potential for further discovery of evidence for their design and use, including paint schemes, fixtures and fittings.

The battery has considerable historical value as part of a major phase of 19th-century re-fortification at Dover Castle. The earthworks, access tunnels, buildings and gun emplacements demonstrate the complex arrangements made for the provision of artillery defences at Dover Castle at this time.

The battery has some aesthetic value via their relation to the cliff and castle earthworks, and their gradual descent down the slope is another example of Dover's interest in the spatial relations of natural landform and man-made components.

The battery currently has little communal value as the area is very overgrown and has no specific use or interpretation.

References

PF website

Oxford Archaeology 2014

Compiler

Kirsty Smith/Angela Warner

Archcliffe Fort (OA141)

County	Kent
District	Dover
Parish	Dover
NGR	TR 31516 40283
Group	Dover

PASTSCAPE#	467991
HER#	TR 34 SW 84
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1016420: Archcliffe Fort
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Forms part of Dover's coastal defences.

Brief History

The fort originates in the mid-16th century, although may have even earlier origins. It was frequently adapted throughout its life.

The battery was constructed in the 1870s and four 10-inch and two 7-inch RML guns were mounted by 1872. Changes were made to the armaments until at least 1906, but it was rendered obsolete when the BL batteries were built at the Citadel and Langdon Cliffs.

It was partially destroyed in 1928 by the construction of the railway. The DoE took over the fort in 1979 and it was designated a scheduled monument.

Outline Description

The Scheduling description describes the remaining elements of the fort -

> *"The remains which survive today represent a substantial part of a bastioned trace fortification, dating from the early 17th century, of which the seaward face, entrance and bastions were modified in the 19th century. The seaward defences, subsequently removed by the construction of the railway in 1928, were modified during 1872. The landward side of the fort remains intact and largely unaltered. The landward curtain, over 150m in length, includes a ditch and stone-faced earth ramparts on which a new parapet was raised in 1755, and which still show evidence of firing steps. The curtain terminates in two bastions and in its centre is the entrance to the fort, remodelled in 1807-9 and again in 1814-15 when a brick barbican, now largely destroyed by the construction of the A20, was added to its front. During World War II a second vehicle access was cut through the rampart, immediately east of the gatehouse."*

Condition

Poor.

The fort was partly demolished during the 1920s to create the railway to the south, therefore the south western side of the fort has been demolished. During

the 1990s the A20 upgrade works to the north destroyed part of the entrance and the ditch to the fort.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on a slope above Dover Harbour to the south and now adjacent to the A20 duel carriageway to the north and the railway to the south. The primary setting of the fort is now largely lost.

Threats

Development - the charity that occupies the site has built a number of workshops and showrooms and there have been proposals for additional buildings.

Ownership

English Heritage under licence by Historic England.

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

Used by St Martin Emmaus, a charity that houses 24 homeless people on the site and restores and re-sells second-hand furniture.

Development proposals

The charity that occupies the site has proposed additional workshop/showroom buildings.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Archcliffe Fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The evidential and historical value of the fort has been much reduced by the development of surrounding transport links. This has also had a major impact on the setting of the fort. However, despite the loss of its seaward defences and the outermost elements of those on the landward side, Archcliffe Fort remains an important element in the story of Dover's fortification.

The remains of the fort constructed in 1539-40 as part of Henry VIII's maritime defence programme, itself considered to be of national importance, the surviving 17th century defences are of considerable rarity. In addition, the fort will contain buried archaeological deposits providing information about its structure and use.

The fort is of communal value to the charity that use the space, and the homeless people it accommodates.

References

PF website

VF website

Whitecliffes website

HE website

Compiler

Angela Warner

South Breakwater Battery (OA142)

County	Kent
District	Dover
Parish	Dover
NGR	TR 33170 40149
Group	Dover

PASTSCAPE#	1429204
HER#	TR 34 SW 655
Heritage status	Part of Grade II Listed (list entry number 1393607) Southern Breakwater including Knuckle and Southern Breakwater lighthouses.
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Dover had five coastal batteries defending the harbour, although they were constructed at different times. Admiralty Pier was the furthest west located on the original arm of Admiralty Pier called Pier Turret Battery/ Pier Fort (constructed 1872 and updated 1905-1910) (OA121). Pier Extension Battery was constructed at the eastern end of Admiralty Pier extension in 1905-1910. The Southern Breakwater Battery (OA120) was located at the western end of the southern breakwater in 1910 and the Eastern Arm Battery (OA153), was located at the southern end of the eastern arm of the harbour 1905-1910. Knuckle Battery was the latest to be built between 1915-1917 and was located at the eastern end of the southern breakwater. All of the batteries were updated during the Second World War.

Brief History

The battery was constructed in 1910 for two 6-inch BL MK VII guns, which may have been re-located from South Front Battery (VF website). The concrete emplacements have associated accommodation and magazines.
In 1926, it was decided that the harbour had limited military use and the breakwater was handed over to the Dover Harbour Board for administration as a commercial undertaking. With the outbreak of the Second World War, however, the harbour once again became a naval base. The breakwater batteries were reinforced, the Southern Breakwater receiving a new twin 6-pdr battery in May 1940.

After 1945, the Navy withdrew and the harbour was once again returned to commercial activity.

Outline Description

The following description is summarised from the Listed Building description –

'The batteries to the east and west ends of the breakwater comprise a flat-roofed terrace of barracks and magazines constructed of granite block and concrete, they are set back from the landward side allowing a walkway along the breakwater. Concrete gun emplacements sit above the barracks,

accessed by stone steps from the walkway. Some early C20 fittings survive, such as cast iron railings, panelled timber doors and urinals. The gun emplacements remain, the guns have been removed. Some barrack rooms have early-C20 murals and graffiti, for example Popeye is depicted above the fireplace in one room'.

Condition

Fair.

The 6-inch emplacements are still extant.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located at the western end of the southern breakwater to the south of Dover Harbour and facing towards the Dover Straits.

Threats

Coastal erosion - the southern breakwater is exposed to high waves during high tides and storm surges.

Ownership

Government Agency.

Dover Harbour Board.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Unused, part of the southern breakwater.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is a Listed building.

The 6-inch gun emplacements remain extant, as do buildings associated with the battery, with some survival of fixtures and fittings. South Breakwater Battery is of evidential value, and group value with the five surviving coastal batteries in Dover which defended the harbour.

Historically, the battery is of considerable significance as part of the Southern Breakwater, it was designed to provide a refuge for the British Fleet and was a huge and impressive engineering project and the first artificial harbour to be built in the 20th century. The Southern Breakwater survives little altered apart from the removal of its guns. It is an integral part of the Admiralty Harbour with the Eastern Arm and Admiralty Pier are also both listed at Grade II.

The battery has a significant and long period of use; in the First World War South Breakwater provided a haven for battleships and submarines protecting the Channel, and in the Second World War it took part in the Dunkirk evacuation.

South Breakwater Battery has limited communal value, as it remains inaccessible to most. The battery has also of limited aesthetic value, but has impressive setting at the end of the breakwater.

References

VF website

Pastscape website

Compiler

Kirsty Smith/Angela Warner

Knuckle Battery (OA143)

County	Kent
District	Dover
Parish	Dover
NGR	TR 34083 40940
Group	Dover

PASTSCAPE#	1429248
HER#	TR 34 SW 655
Heritage status	Part of Grade II Listed (list entry number 1393607) Southern Breakwater including Knuckle and Southern Breakwater lighthouses.
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Dover had five coastal batteries defending the harbour, although they were constructed at different times. Admiralty Pier was the furthest west located on the original arm of Admiralty Pier called Pier Turret Battery/ Pier Fort (constructed 1872 and updated 1905-1910) (OA121). Pier Extension Battery was constructed at the eastern end of Admiralty Pier extension in 1905-1910. The Southern Breakwater Battery (OA120) was located at the western end of the southern breakwater in 1910 and the Eastern Arm Battery (OA153), was located at the southern end of the eastern arm of the harbour 1905-1910. Knuckle Battery was the latest to be built between 1915-1917 and was located at the eastern end of the southern breakwater. All of the batteries were updated during the Second World War.

Brief History

The 'Knuckle', was used to described the curved east end of the Southern Breakwater. Knuckle Battery was built on the southern breakwater of Dover Harbour to defend the harbour from enemy shipping.

Constructed from 1915 and operational by 1917, the battery was armed with three 4-inch QF Mk V guns. It fell out of use in the interwar period, but was rearmed in 1940 for the Second World War. The battery was reduced to care and maintenance in 1943.

Outline Description

The following description is summarised from the Listed Building description –

'The batteries to the east and west ends of the breakwater comprise a flat-roofed terrace of barracks and magazines constructed of granite block and concrete, they are set back from the landward side allowing a walkway along the breakwater. Concrete gun emplacements sit above the barracks, accessed by stone steps from the walkway. Some early C20 fittings survive, such as cast iron railings, panelled timber doors and urinals. The gun emplacements remain, the guns have been removed. Some barrack rooms

have early-C20 murals and graffiti, for example Popeye is depicted above the fireplace in one room'.

Condition

Poor.

Partial remains of the battery survive, however by the 1980s the site had been cleared and modernised.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The 'Knuckle' of the Southern Breakwater is the curved east end.

Threats

Flooding/ coastal erosion - the southern breakwater is exposed to high waves during high tides and storm surges.

Ownership

Government Agency.

Dover Harbour Board.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Unused, part of the southern breakwater.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Knuckle Battery is a Listed building.

Knuckle Battery is however of 'some' evidential value only, as the site was cleared in the 1980s and little now remains of the First World War site. Knuckle Battery is of group value with the five surviving coastal batteries in Dover which defended the harbour

Historically, the battery is of considerable significance as part of the Southern Breakwater, it was designed to provide a refuge for the British Fleet and was a huge and impressive engineering project and the first artificial harbour to be built in the 20th century. The Southern Breakwater survives little altered apart from the removal of its guns. It is an integral part of the Admiralty Harbour with the Eastern Arm and Admiralty Pier are also both listed at Grade II.

The battery has a significant period of use; in the First World War South Breakwater provided a haven for battleships and submarines protecting the Channel, and in the Second World War it took part in the Dunkirk evacuation.

South Breakwater Battery has limited communal value, as it remains inaccessible to most. The battery has also of limited aesthetic value, but has impressive setting at the end of the breakwater.

References

VF website

Pastscape website

HE website

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Angela Warner

Western Heights including Citadel, Drop Redoubt, North Centre Bastion, North Centre Detached Bastion, North Entrance, Western Outwork, Grand Shaft, St Martin's Battery (OA144)

County Kent
District Dover
Parish Dover
NGR TR 31101 40762
Group Dover

PASTSCAPE#	467989
HER#	TR 34 SW 82, TR 34 SW 621, TR 34 SW 491
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1020298: Fortifications, Roman lighthouse and medieval chapel on Western Heights Listed Building 1375599: Grand Shaft Stairs and Attached Railings Listed Building 1375598: Administration Block, Dover Young Offenders Institution Conservation Area
Recommendations	The Scheduled Monument is on the HAR register due to general decline, and poor condition. It is also part of an ongoing development threat, however this also offers opportunities to address the future of the site. Significant change is likely to be necessary to address the large scale issues.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Citadel Battery.

Brief History

The Scheduling details describe the history of the site in great detail, which are summarised below.

The defences on Western Heights were initially begun in 1779 during the war with America, Spain, Holland and France. The site underwent numerous phases of construction during the following wars.

The Drop Redoubt was built between 1804 and 1815 and has bomb proof barracks for 200 men and was intended to mount 12 of the heavy 24-pdr guns, with two carronades for close protection. The Grand Shaft was built between 1805 and 1807 to enable troops to move rapidly between the Heights and the town below and consists of three spiral staircases around a vertical circular brick shaft which descends for 140 steps to a tunnel linking up with Snargate Street.

St Martin's Battery was constructed on a terrace cut into the southern slope of the Heights in the 1870s and mounted three 10-inch RML guns. However, the battery was superseded by the construction between 1898 and 1900 of Citadel Battery and had been disarmed by 1908.

During the First World War, the Heights were primarily used for their barrack accommodation, although Citadel Battery remained armed and in 1916 Drop

Redoubt was provided with searchlights and two 6-pdr Hotchkiss guns to counter air raids, whilst the Citadel received a single 3-inch gun.

Following the outbreak of World War Two a further series of Type 23 and 24 pillboxes were built around the perimeter of the Heights for close defence and as complemented by weapons pits, slit trenches and blast shelters.

At St Martin's Battery after the outbreak of the Second World War, three 6-inch breech loaders were fitted to the disused St Martin's Battery, where the old gun pits were filled with concrete, and concrete and brick gun houses built over the top. The battery then became known as Western Heights Battery, a name which was in use prior to St Martin's Battery being constructed.

A tunnel was cut from the 'new' magazine referred to above down to a deep shelter for the battery.

The battery remained active until late in 1944, and in care and maintenance until decommissioning in 1947.

The Western Heights were gradually abandoned by the Army in stages between 1954 and 1961.

Outline Description

The fort was surveyed in detail by English Heritage (as was) and the resulting volumes provide a good record of the current state of preservation. The history and significance of the site and issues for managing its significance are described in Dr Liv Gibbs Built Environment Conservation Framework (2012). The scheduling also details describe the history of the site in great detail, and are summarised below.

The monument includes the remains of a Roman lighthouse, field terraces and a medieval chapel subsequently surrounded by 18th-, 19th- and 20th-century defensive works, all situated on a prominent chalk ridge known as the Western Heights which overlooks the town of Dover.

The PF website continues with the description of the defences: It consists of three major portions, from east to west, Drop Redoubt, North Centre Bastion with Detached Bastion and Western Outworks. Other gun batteries were added later in the 19th century, North Lines Right Battery, South Front Battery and St Martin's Battery.

Need to describe these elements.

The 1861 Officers Mess towards the south western part of the site is also Grade II Listed.

The original St Martin's battery comprised three gun emplacements with bomb-proof ammunition stores between. There are references in the HER to deep magazine shelters which were dug in 1891.

In 1940 the battery was re-modelled with the gun pits being filled with concrete and guns mounted on top of each, with brick and concrete 'gun houses' giving overhead cover. The deep magazine shelters were also extended.

The battery survives as three semi-circular concrete gun pits, with underlying magazines, holdfasts and the remains of the metal gun floors, in addition to some associated structures.

Condition

Poor.

Trend

Declining.

The Western Heights Scheduled Monument is on the HAR Register as category C 'Slow Decay; no solution agreed'.

Setting

The Western Heights is located on a ridge to the west of Dover and north west of Dover Harbour.

Threats

Development – see development threat below.

The Conservation Framework (2012) states that up to now, there has been no major development on the ground surrounding the Western Heights' fortifications. Hence it is still possible to appreciate the comprehensive nature of the defensive scheme. To start to build, whether piecemeal or in a more intensive fashion, on the sculpted ground and approaches outside the fortifications would detract from the contribution made by this 'green skirt' to the significance of the Western Heights. There should be no development on the 'sculpted' ground and approaches outside the Western Heights' fortifications.

Uncontrolled plant growth – The Conservation Framework states that the best views of the fortress and understanding of its function is compromised by the trees and vegetation covering the Western Heights' fortifications, which hamper the ability to appreciate their great scale and form. Removing the trees and vegetation from these slopes and returning them to chalk grassland would greatly improve the legibility of the fortifications but there needs to be a balanced approach as the site has ecological and landscape value.

Vandalism - the complex suffers from forced entry to closed-off areas, vandalism and graffiti. Anti-social behaviour is a problem here as it is in other parts of the Heights, but is particularly on view in this location as many people (visitors and locals) walk from the nearby car park to enjoy the high-quality views over the harbour and out to sea.

Development - some residential development has taken place within the centre of the fortress and in the recent past more has been proposed but not agreed. Care needs to be taken that new development does not harm an understanding of how the fortress was designed to work, including in its earliest phases when it was a secure base for anti- invasion troops camped in its interior.

Development has a potential role in providing new uses for and attracting inward investment to Western Heights but this requires careful handling if it is

not to do more harm than benefit. A proposed hotel at St Martins Battery offers both opportunities but could also be harmful if handled badly. A proposed new national war memorial on the Grand Shaft barracks site was judged by HE to be too harmful in terms of its design but a well thought out project and a revised design might help regenerate the site.

The huge size of Western Heights is in itself a threat. Dover has many historic fortifications of which the castle is the most significant and already an established visitor attraction. Alternative and complimentary uses for Western Heights needs to be found as tourism alone cannot be relied on. The closure of the Citadel as an Immigration Removal Centre creates uncertainty about the future of this major element of the site for which it may be difficult to identify appropriate new uses.

Ownership

Mixed Multiple Owners, but with the following as principal owners

Citadel (Immigration Removal Centre) Home Office

Dover District Council – most of the land around the defences and Grand Shaft and its barracks site

English Heritage (under licence by Historic England) – Drop Redoubt, North Centre Bastion and North Entrance

China Gateway International – significant land holdings in and around the monument.

Dover Town Council – some open land in the centre

Many house owners of residential development.

The Western Heights Preservation Society are a group of volunteers who open the Grand Shaft and the Drop Redoubt to visitors during open days and carry out conservation works. They do not own any of the site.

Occupancy

With the exception of housing and some commercial premises the majority of the site is unoccupied and not in use. The Citadel has been hibernated from its last use as an Immigration Removal Centre.

Current use(s)

Much of the site is open land and more still are the ramparts and ditches of the fortifications. Access to much of the land by visitors is possible but of the major structures none (including the Citadel) are now in use or regularly open to visitors. For the remainder use is partly residential and light industrial. There are interpretation boards provided by the White Cliffs Countryside Project.

Development proposals

In 2012, permission was granted for a major development of housing, leisure buildings (hotel) and conservation of Drop Redoubt (application number 12/00440). At the time of writing, this has been successfully challenged through a Judicial Review and a High Court appeal. Dover District Council is considering an appeal to the Supreme Court or to re-taking its planning

decision. The main disputed issue relates to associated development within the Kent Downs AONB and NOT Western Heights itself.

A master plan by Dover District Council has been produced to inform decisions about future proposals for change beyond the 2012 planning application.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The Western Heights although on the HAR register and clearly under threat, survives well as a series of earthworks structures which will retain archaeological evidence relating to the adaptation and development of their defences over more than 150 years. The Scheduling description describes the remains as 'the largest, most elaborate and impressive surviving example of early 19th century fortification in England'. The triple helical staircase of the Grand Shaft is unique. There is also potential for the survival of below-ground archaeology, specifically the Roman lighthouse, the medieval chapel and the field terracing which will retain archaeological remains relating to the earlier occupation of the headland.

Western Heights also has strong group value, with other contemporary defensive works at Archcliffe Fort, Fort Burgoyne and Dover Castle. Historically, Western Heights provides an insight into the continuing military importance of Dover during the 19th and 20th centuries.

The Conservation Framework describes the significance of the Western Heights in detail, the key points are summarised below.

The Western Heights fortifications comprise an unparalleled group of components that add up to more than the sum of their constituent parts. The site retains coherence as a fortified complex and strong sense of place as a military landscape. It illustrates perhaps more clearly than any other place in England, through the huge repeated investment manifested in the defences, the real fear of French invasion and consequential loss of sovereignty felt in the 1780s, during the Napoleonic Wars and again in the 1850s.

The fortifications demonstrate on a single site the immense skill of a succession of the most influential military engineers in British history and changing approaches to systems of defence during the later eighteenth and nineteenth centuries. It possesses unparalleled potential through the wide range of barrack accommodation that survive with extensive supporting documentation, to shed new light on changing conditions for soldiers and officers over a period of great change.

The site also elicits strong emotions and feelings of empathy in visitors to the site today through the combination of the immense scale of the site, the nature of the defences, the range of defensive devices and the architectural embellishment of defensive elements and has the potential to bring together communities who care passionately about conserving and presenting the Western Heights for current and future generations of visitors. The Western Heights is a popular place to visit, walk and admire the coastal views; it is therefore of communal value to those that use the area.

References

PF website

Kent News Website

Gibbs L 2012

HE website

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Angela Warner

Citadel Battery (OA145)

County	Kent
District	Dover
Parish	Dover
NGR	TR 3040 4031
Group	Dover

PASTSCAPE#	1307262
HER#	
Heritage status	Not protected through Listing or Scheduling. It is not part of the Scheduled Western Height monument.
Recommendations	A condition survey and maintenance regime should be introduced for Citadel Battery.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Citadel Battery is associated with the Western Outworks, which lies to the east of the battery. It is also closely associated with Langdon Battery (OA133), both batteries were the most powerful to be installed in Dover during peacetime.

Brief History

The Citadel Battery was constructed between 1898 and 1900 to defend the port of Dover against bombardment by enemy shipping cruising in the Channel. Its three 9.2-inch BL Mk X weapons were installed by 1902. The battery is situated immediately west of the Western outworks of the Citadel, occupying the narrow ridge-top and commanding the Dover approaches and seaway. It lies outside of the defensive ditch system which surrounds the Western Outworks and Citadel and is a later addition to the area's defences.

During the First World War, the Heights were primarily used for barrack accommodation, although Citadel Battery remained armed.

Following the outbreak of the Second World War and the renewed threat of invasion, the Citadel Battery now mounted two 9.2-inch guns and was provided with two Type 24 pillboxes and a spigot mortar.

Citadel Battery was reduced to care and maintenance in November 1943 and decommissioned in 1956.

Outline Description

The battery survives as three semi-circular concrete gun pits, with underlying magazines, holdfasts and the remains of the metal gun floors, in addition to some associated structures.

The remains of Citadel Battery are summarised in the EH report of the site (2003) –

> *'The battery occupies a flat ridge-top site, carefully positioned with three emplacements on the highest point, with the land sloping gently away to seaward. The emplacements are laid out in series with underground magazines, stores and gun detachment shelters below them. A covered way*

runs along the rear of the battery, formerly leading back into the Western Outworks by a curving route around the counterscarp of the main ditch, past the Caretaker's Quarters and across the ditch via a bridge. Direct access from the ditch and the double caponier there was provided by two sets of steps, close to which was an Artificers Shop (Fig3). Beyond the eastern end of the battery, all of these features are now buried, following the infilling of the Western Outworks ditch during the 1960s.'

Condition

Poor.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Citadel Battery lies to the west of the Western Outworks, immediately surrounded by an open landscape and woodland, and sandwiched between the developments of Maxton and Aycliffe.

Threats

Parts of the Citadel Battery are overgrown with vegetation and trees, which reduce the ability to appreciate the range and form of the defensive devices included in the 1898 design. Clearing the trees and vegetation would help to regain legibility. A management regime should be established to prevent re-colonisation.

Vandalism – including people breaking in to underground areas and theft of elements, as resulted in the loss of significant fabric.

Decay of fabric – low level maintenance and repair has contributed to the deterioration of its condition.

Development – impact to setting through a proposed major development (see below).

Ownership

Local Authority. Dover Town Council.

Occupancy

Vacant/ not in use.

Current use(s)

Open site with interpretation boards provided by the White Cliffs Countryside Project.

Development proposals

As described in the datasheet for the Western Heights, in 2012, permission was granted for a major development of housing, leisure buildings (hotel) and conservation of Drop Redoubt (application number 12/00440). This has the potential to impact the setting of Citadel Battery, and remove the functional and landscape relationship between Citadel Battery and the Western Heights.

At the time of writing, this has been successfully challenged through a Judicial Review and a High Court appeal. Dover District Council is considering an appeal to the Supreme Court or to re-taking its planning decision. The main disputed issue relates to associated development within the Kent Downs AONB and NOT Western Heights itself.

A master plan by Dover District Council has been produced to inform decisions about future proposals for change beyond the 2012 planning application.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Citadel Battery is of particular significance for the period from 1898-1945 as part of counter-bombardment defences designed to ward off enemy shipping the Channel threatening to shell the port of Dover. The battery

Citadel Battery is in deteriorating condition and suffering from a number of threats, however it is completeness as a whole means it illustrates well the form a new generation of coastal batteries. The battery is accessible as it lies within an open landscape, and therefore has communal value to those that regularly visit the site.

Citadel Battery is of group value with the surviving Dover defences included within this study, particularly the Western Heights and particularly with its less well preserved partner, Langdon Battery. The battery is of group value with the coastal batteries around Dover, although unlike other examples around the mainland coast, it saw significant action in the Second World War.

The body of information about Citadel Battery adds to its significance, including a survey completed by English Heritage in 2003, and the body of archive information including plans and aerial photographs of the battery.

References

PF website

Kent News Website

Gibbs L 2012

English Heritage 2003

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Angela Warner

Fort Burgoyne (originally Castle Hill Fort) (OA146)

County	Kent
District	Dover
Parish	Guston
NGR	TR 32441 42697
Group	Dover

PASTSCAPE#	467988
HER#	TR 34 SW 81
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1004224: Fort Burgoyne
Recommendations	The fort is on the HAR Register, although some progress has been made with repair works to buildings (particularly those in and facing the parade ground), there are large areas of the fort requiring repair and conservation. Development of the surrounding area is likely to affect the setting. Survey and recording of the site prior to work is recommended.

Type

Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Associated with the contemporary fortifications at Dover Castle.

Brief History

Fort Burgoyne was built between 1861 and 1873 to prevent an enemy establishing batteries on the high ground opposite Dover Castle. It was known as Castle Hill Fort until at least 1864 before being renamed Fort Burgoyne. The fort was designed to mount 29 guns on the ramparts. In the 1880s it was equipped with six RBL guns in the Haxo casemates, two 32-pdr SB guns in the flanking battery to the east, and sixteen 24-pdr carronades in the caponiers. Training huts were built to the south of the fort and served as the precursor to the Connaught Barracks constructed in 1912.

During the First World War, brick gun positions and pill boxes were built at the fort. During the Second World War, the fort formed part of the Dover Defence Scheme. Two batteries for 25-pdr field guns were built in concrete emplacements on the chemin des rondes, five were added on the western flank and four on the central caponier.

After the war, the fort became a military depot for the Connaught Barracks until the barracks were purchased for housing development in 2007. The fort was handed to The Land Trust in 2014 for restoration and maintenance, and community use.

Outline Description

The polygonal fort is flanked by two large redoubts; an east and west wing, which are connected to it by ditched earthwork lines. Around the perimeter is a concrete and flint dry revetted ditch. The interior of the fort includes 27 brick-built and earth-covered casemates which provided barrack accommodation and storage space. These are set around a central parade ground. At the entrances to several of the casemates are concrete blast walls, added during the Second World War.

Above the casemates is the terreplein, which is accessed by two gun ramps. Three pairs of Haxo casemates, providing vaulted emplacements for six guns, are situated on the terreplein. A drawbridge and covered way originally provided access to the fort across the surrounding ditch. Part of the drawbridge mechanism and steps of the covered way still remain.

Condition

Fair.

Some areas are in good general condition (including the casemates and buildings in/facing the parade ground), due to recent repair and maintenance; firstly, using funds from the Homes and Communities Agency, and secondly from The Land Trust. The former officers stables are currently being restored and converted to a small office space for the LT project team. Emergency conservation work has taken place on cartoon art within the casemates in 2016. Repairs and conservation work are planned to the access bridge in 2017.

Some other areas (particularly outward facing areas, not within or facing the parade ground) are in poor condition: The lower areas within the main fort are suffering from recent water ingress. There are areas of recent concrete collapse/slump in the outer escarpment. The wing batteries have had no recent vegetation clearance, maintenance or restoration work. The north flanking gallery (shooting gallery) has significant structural issues and needs urgent repair works. A significant amount of the fort structure and outer facing walls, requires repair/conservation work including mortar, pointing, and concrete repair works,

On the HAR due to risk from invasive ivy growth. A vegetation management plan is almost in place which will address tree/vegetation growth in the area of the main fort and west wing over a five year period. Vegetation management has to be balanced with the ecology of the site – eg the main fort site has recently been identified as a major summer swarming area for bats.

A Conservation Management Plan has been agreed, and work to create a streamlined SMC process for repairs is currently underway.

Trend

Declining.

The HAR register categorises the fort as 'Priority C – Slow decay; no solution agreed', this acknowledges that some progress has been made with regard to brick repair and vegetation control.

Setting

The fort is situated on the summit of an area of high ground just north of, and adjacent to, Dover Castle, and overlooks the coast to the south and east.

Threats

Uncontrolled plant growth.

Decay of fabric - water ingress and collapse of historic fabric due to failing mortar and concrete.

Development- both within and adjacent to fort is a threat, but could also be an opportunity for enhancement and re-purposing of the fort.

Ownership

Charity (non-heritage).

The Land Trust were given the fort in 2014.

Occupancy

Not yet in permanent agreed use, but the Land Trust are undertaking some short term community activities, and are undertaking further repairs/ conversion works. Following conversion of the stables to an office there will be a part time LT staff presence on site.

Current use(s)

Not in use, however, Google Photo Sphere dated September 2015 shows cars and vans parked in the Parade Ground. It is understood that these cars and vans are associated with LT activities - either community activities/events, or repair/conversion works. A temporary mobile toilet building is currently sited close to the main entrance but will be removed following the stables conversion.

Development proposals

The demolition of the adjoining Connaught Barracks and the subsequent construction of a housing estate stemming from application 15/00260 has been approved.

The Land Trust intends to conserve the site and open it to visitors and for it to be used by the local community.

Conversion of the Officers Stables into an office for the Land Trust Project Team is nearing completion (Nov 2016).

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

Burgoyne Fort holds great evidential value, it survives well and is a good example of its class. Although of similar form to other Royal Commission fortifications it includes some unique features such as the wing batteries connected by earthwork lines to the main fort, which were necessary to fill the defensive gap with Dover Castle. The flanking gallery (or shooting gallery) on the north side of the fort is also thought to be of unique design (based on research to date).

The original layout is largely unaltered despite the later use as a military depot. It retains some original fixtures and fittings such as iron racers for gun positions, steel shutters in the Central Caponier and original doors and wood panelling in the Officers' Quarters.

Historically. Fort Burgoyne had a long period of use through the First and Second World Wars; this continued use and adaptation of the fort during

the major conflicts of the 20th century enhance its interest and add to its distinctiveness.

Aesthetically, it is a striking red brick construction and has potential for strong communal value through the Land Trust's plans to open it up more widely to visitors.

References

PF website

Dover planning website

The Land Trust website

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Angela Warner

Admiralty Pier Turret, Battery and Fort (OA147)

County Kent
District Dover
Parish Dover
NGR TR 32403 39945
Group Dover

PASTSCAPE#	1422663, 467374
HER#	TR 33 NW 1
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1004209: Admiralty Pier Turret 636m south east of Lord Warden House Grade II Listed (list entry number 1393608) Admiralty Pier and Associated Structures Including Admiralty Pier Lighthouse
Recommendations	Survey and conserve the guns before they deteriorate further. They are the only example of their type in the UK (steam powered rotating iron turret with 16-inch guns still in position)

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Dover had five coastal batteries defending the harbour, although they were constructed at different times. Admiralty Pier was the furthest west located on the original arm of Admiralty Pier called Pier Turret Battery/ Pier Fort (constructed 1872 and updated 1905-1910) (OA121). Pier Extension Battery was constructed at the eastern end of Admiralty Pier extension 1905-1910. The Southern Breakwater Battery (OA120) was located at the western end of the southern breakwater in 1910 and the Eastern Arm Battery (OA153) was located at the southern end of the eastern arm of the harbour 1905-1910. Knuckle Battery was the latest to be built between 1915-1917 and was located at the eastern end of the southern breakwater. All of the batteries were updated during the Second World War.

Brief History

Admiralty Pier was finalised in 1871 and the stonework fort at the end of the pier was completed by 1874. By 1875 an iron turret with several decks inside was completed with two 16-inch RML guns on the upper level. The turret was rotated with steam engines and the guns were also elevated into the firing position using steam power. In 1909 the turret had two 6-inch BL Mk VIII guns added (Dover Historian, 2015).

The battery was operational through both World Wars. The guns were removed in 1947.

Outline Description

The fort consists of a stone structure with a number of rooms including a shell store and engine room that can be accessed via Admiralty Pier. The cylindrical iron turret is located on top of the fort and could originally be rotated via steam powered engines below which would also elevate the two 80-ton 16-inch RML guns into a firing position through openings within the iron turret.

Condition

Fair.

The turret itself is extant and constructed of three layers of iron. The two 16-inch guns and their carriages are also in situ within the iron turret.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Admiralty Pier turret is located on the original arm of Admiralty Pier on the western side of Dover Harbour.

Threats

Decay of Fabric

Flooding/coastal erosion - the Admiralty Pier is exposed to high waves during high tides and storm surges. The two extant 16 inch RML guns appear to be deteriorating.

Ownership

Dover Harbour Board.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Unused, part of Admiralty Pier, interior inaccessible to the public.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The battery is a Scheduled Monument and is part of the Grade II Listed Admiralty Pier.

The battery is of evidential value; it survives well with the notable survival of some artefacts. Most of the machinery inside the turret has been removed but the guns and their carriages remain together with parts of the shell lifts for the BL 6-inch guns above. The turret is a unique structure, inside which remain the only guns of that type ever to be mounted on land.

The turret remains under the control of Dover Harbour Board and there are no plans to restore it or open it to view, it is therefore of limited communal value. Admirality Pier Turret, Battery and Fort can be viewed from the adjacent Prince of Wales pier, and remains a visually impressive site, greatly enhanced by its setting. Dover Harbour Board is making a major investment in Dover Western Docks which presents an opportunity to improve public access with controlled visitors to the interior of the turret,

The site is of particular historical interest, as the turret and guns were rotated and elevated using steam power and they are the only example of their type in the United Kingdom.

References

Dover Historian website

PF website

VF website

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Angela Warner

Eastern Arm Battery (OA148)

County	Kent
District	Dover
Parish	Dover
NGR	TR 34053 41161
Group	Dover

PASTSCAPE#	468093
HER#	TR 34 SW 212
Heritage status	Part of Grade II Listed (list entry number 1393604) Eastern Arm, Dover Harbour
Recommendations	Survey to ascertain survival of, particularly, the gun emplacements and other features.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Dover had five coastal batteries defending the harbour, although they were constructed at different times. Admiralty Pier was the furthest west located on the original arm of Admiralty Pier called Pier Turret Battery/Pier Fort (constructed 1872 and updated 1905-1910) (OA121). Pier Extension Battery was constructed at the eastern end of Admiralty Pier extension 1905-1910. The Southern Breakwater Battery (OA120) was located at the western end of the southern breakwater in 1910 and the Eastern Arm Battery (OA153) was located at the southern end of the eastern arm of the harbour 1905-1910. Knuckle Battery was the latest to be built between 1915-1917 and was located at the eastern end of the southern breakwater. All of the batteries were updated during the Second World War.

Brief History

Constructed by 1908 and armed with three 12-pdr QF guns on concrete emplacements with associated accommodation and magazines.

In 1926 it was decided that the harbour had limited military use and the three component parts of Admiralty Harbour were handed over to the Dover Harbour Board for administration as a commercial undertaking.

During the Second World War Dover Harbour was particularly important in the 1940 Dunkirk evacuation; the battery had 6-pdr anti-motor torpedo boat guns. After 1945 the Navy pulled out and in 1953 a car ferry was started from the Eastern Docks.

The battery has since been modernised and is used by Port Control.

Outline Description

The breakwater itself is made of concrete blocks faced with granite. At the southernmost end, three concrete gun emplacements and associated magazines and gunners' accommodation were originally constructed which were re-used in the Second World War.

The battery has been heavily altered and the emplacements are no longer visible.

Condition

Poor.

Satellite images online show that the area has been modernised and little of the original battery remains. The HER entry states that it has been destroyed.

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

Eastern Arm Battery is located at the southern end of the easterly arm of Dover Harbour.

Threats

Decay of Fabric

Flooding/Coastal Erosion - the eastern arm of Dover Harbour is exposed to high waves during high tides and storm surges.

Ownership

Government Agency.

Dover Harbour Board.

Occupancy

The end of the breakwater is used by Port Control. It is not known if any surviving rooms are used in association with this.

Current use(s)

Used a port lookout point with modernised hardstanding and tower nearby.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is part of the Grade II Listed Eastern Arm, Dover Harbour.

There are conflicting accounts from various sources regarding the survival of the features associated with the battery, and an accurate account of significance can only be determined following a ground assessment.

The Eastern Arm in general is of historical significance as a huge and impressive engineering project and the first artificial harbour to be built in the 20th century. It is visually impressive and survives little altered, apart from the loss of the end lighthouse. It is an integral part of the Admiralty Harbour, along with Admiralty Pier and the Southern Breakwater. It has historical interest for its wartime role during both world wars; in the First World War as a haven for battleships and submarines protecting the Channel and in the Second World War for its part in the Dunkirk evacuation.

The battery is of some communal value for those that work there, but is of limited value to the wider public.

References

Exploring Kent's Past

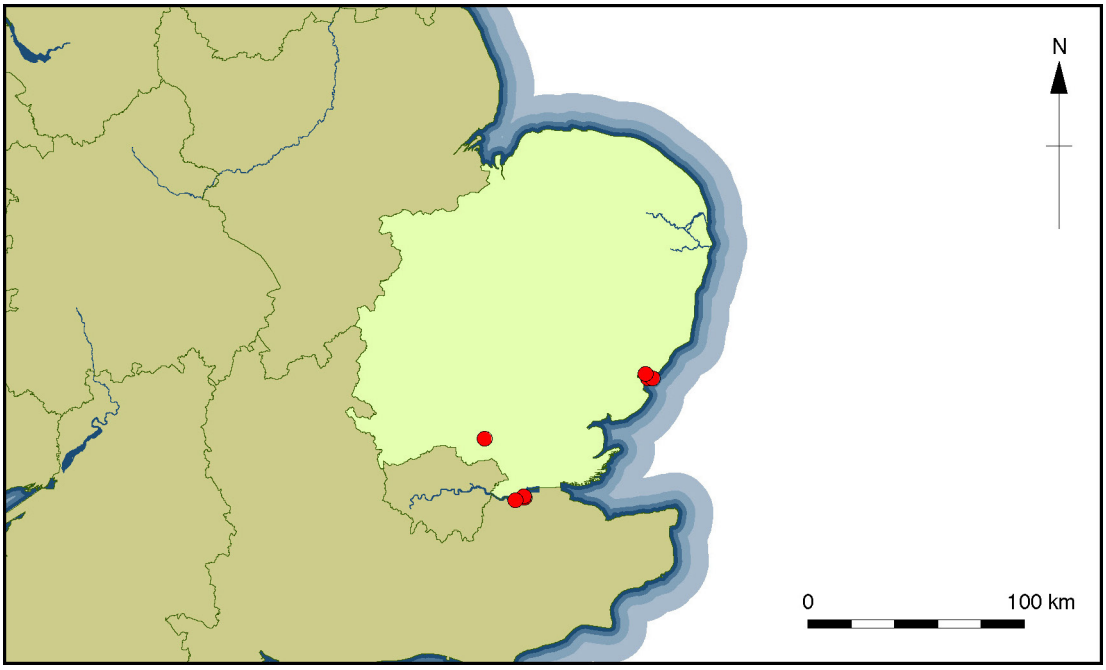
HE website

Compiler

Kirsty Smith and Angela Warner

REGION 3: EAST OF ENGLAND

Area No.	Area Name	No. of Sites
15	Harwich	3
Miscellaneous		
9	Mobilisation Centres	1
10	Thames	3
12	Coastal Redoubts	1
Total		**8**



Distribution of forts within the East region

There are five fortifications that fall within the south-east strategic groups, but geographically are part of the HE East of England regional group. These forts have therefore been duplicated in both sections, but have been given only one OA reference number. These fortifications are:

Area 9: Mobilisation Centres

- North Weald Redoubt (OA109)

Area 10: Thames Group

- Coalhouse Fort (OA115)
- East Tilbury Battery (OA116)
- Tilbury Fort (OA119)

Area 12: Coastal Redoubt

- Harwich Redoubt (OA135)

AREA 15: HARWICH

OA No.	Fort Name	Significance	Designation	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
149	Beacon Hill Fort	A	SM	4	3	A2	4, 5
150	Landguard Fort, including Wing (Right) Battery and Languard Wing (Left) Battery, and Darrell's Battery	A	SM.LB	1	2	x	1,2,7
151	Shotley Point Battery	B	SM	3 (RC)	3	x	1,2,7

Beacon Hill Fort (OA149)

County Essex
District Tendring
Parish Harwich
NGR TM 26188 31805
Group Harwich

PASTSCAPE#	389728
HER#	54, 55 (SMR numbers)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1018958: Beacon Hill Fort: a late 19th and 20th century coastal artillery fortification The fort is partly in a Conservation Area
Recommendations	Beacon Hill Fort is of exceptional significance and on the HAR Register. It requires management to ensure its preservation and protect it from threats including vandalism.

Type

Artillery Fort

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The system of harbour defences developed at Harwich during the Napoleonic War, included Harwich Redoubt in Harwich Town, Landguard Fort on the north bank of the Orwell and further batteries on both sides of the Harwich peninsula.

Brief History

Beacon Hill Fort was surveyed by the Royal Commission on the Historical Monuments of England, and the extensive structures and earthworks are described in great detail in the resulting report by Brown and Pattison published in 1998. The following history and outline description has been taken from the resulting updated HE Scheduling description.

Beacon Hill Fort, and the gun emplacements which preceded it, form part of the complex fortifications which evolved to defend the post-medieval and modern naval harbour at Harwich. Although a block house stood on Beacon Hill for a limited period around 1543, the earliest known battery on the promontory (equipped with five 24-pdr cannons) was constructed in 1812 as part of the system of harbour defences developed during the Napoleonic War.

In 1889, following the recommendations of a secret defence committee, work began on Beacon Hill Fort, it one of the first of a generation of inconspicuous emplacements entirely served by breech loading guns.

The fort was retained at peak efficiency throughout the 1890s with the addition of new guns (two 3-pdr) to provide flanking fire for the main armament and a purpose built underground magazine (the Kingsgate Magazine) located near the south west corner of the fort. The site of the earlier practice battery was reconstructed in 1894 to carry three guns (probably 64-pdr from the earlier battery converted to rifled muzzle loaders) on traversing carriages.

The increasing threat of German naval power around the beginning of the 20th century once again highlighted weaknesses in the fort's armament and led to a number of modifications. The fort was extended northwards to accommodate a new emplacement for a 6-inch BL gun (on the line of the Twydall defence), and following the Owen Report on coastal defences in 1904, the original (and by now ineffective) 10-inch and 4.7-inch QF gun emplacements were remodelled to take 6-inch Mk VII guns on Mk II mountings. The principal magazines were modified to suit the new ordnance.

The fort continued to be manned between the World Wars and although the 4.7-inch QF guns were removed, the battery was kept operational. During the First World War Harwich served as a principal base for destroyer squadrons and was designated a Class A fortress.

Plans were made for further upgrades in the 1930s, although these were not realised until the construction of the Cornwallis Battery, one of the most impressive concrete structures on the fort's fighting front, in 1940.

Outline Description

The fort is described in detail in the Historic England Scheduling description, the following is an edited summary –

The fort is broadly triangular in shape, extending some 200m inland from the tip of the promontory (Beacon Cliff) and including a narrow extension which continues northward for approximately 180m along the coastline towards the Harwich Esplanade.

The four gun emplacements on the eastern (seaward) face of the battery were concealed at the foot of an artificial mound which created a naturalistic profile when viewed from the sea. The main armament (one 10-inch and one 6-inch breech loading gun) were set 30m apart, mounted on disappearing carriages which were raised above recessed parapets for firing and then retracted into gun pits for reloading and re-sighting. Two 4.7-inch QF guns were mounted at similar intervals to the north, set behind low apron-parapets which were also hardly visible at any distance. The artificial hill provided screening and protection for a range of ancillary buildings in the compound to the rear.

The rear of the fort was secured by the newly devised 'Twydall Profile'. The inner bank was provided with an earthwork fighting platform, strengthened in places with a concrete parapet, which would allow the defenders to rake the fence line with rifle fire. The majority of the Twydall Profile survives unaltered

and substantial lengths of the Dacoit fence (which continued around the seaward side of the fort) remain in place.

Cornwallis Battery, one of the most impressive concrete structures on the fort's fighting front, stands near the tip of the promontory (to the rear of the 1894 practice battery) and includes a four storey Battery Observation Post (BOP), a subterranean magazine and a war shelter set to the rear of a twin 6-pdr gun emplacement within a partly covered casemate

Most of these Second World War buildings have long since been removed, although an indication of their presence is provided by a single air raid shelter buried beneath a mound outside the outer scarp of the Twydall defence. Earlier buildings within the fort were altered to new uses in the Second World War.

Condition

Poor.

'Extensive significant problems' identified on the HAR register. It is given category A on the battlefields and wreck site register which is – 'No action/ strategy identified or agreed (where trend is declining or unknown)'.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located on the eastern side of the Harwich peninsula. The fort is surrounded by modern development, although there is a buffer of green space to the west of the fort.

Threats

Decay of fabric/ in need of management.

Vandalism.

Ownership

Mixed multiple owners.

Occupancy

Vacant/ not in use.

Current use(s)

Derelict.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The battery is a Scheduled Monument.

The fort is of clear evidential value, the original gun emplacements and most of the ancillary structures from this first phase of construction survive either beneath or incorporated within later modifications. The structures for the

upgraded weapon systems introduced prior to the First World War are clearly evident and the more extensive modifications to the fort in the Second World War survive in exceptional condition. It is one of very few Second World War batteries to survive almost fully intact.

The fort is of significant historical value; the original design of the fort was innovative being one of the first of a new generation of fortifications to recognise the vulnerability of highly prominent artillery structures and to adopt a policy of virtual invisibility from the sea. The fort also represents one of the earliest uses of the Twydall Profile on the landward approach, and the bombproof shelter is believed to be the earliest of its kind in England.

The retention (and adaptation) of earlier features throughout the evolution of the fort, together with the extensive range of documentary evidence provides a significant insight into the development of military theory and technology from the later 19th century onwards. There has been a comprehensive survey of the fort, and there exists a significant body of information that enhances understanding of the fort. The site also has potential for below-ground archaeology from the different phases of the fort.

The fort is situated in close proximity to Harwich Redoubt, and is of group value with this installations, and other defences in Harwich.

References

HE website

VF website

Derelict Places website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Landguard Fort (OA150), including Languard Wing (Left) and Languard Wing (Right) Batteries, and Darrell's Battery

County Suffolk
District Suffolk Coastal
Parish Felixstowe
NGR TM 28373 31915
Group Felixstowe

PASTSCAPE#	389664
HER#	FEX 064 (HER number), MSF3005 (Mon UID)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1018969: Landguard Fort and associated field works Grade I Listed (list entry number 1030415)
Recommendations	The fort is under some threat from uncontrolled plant growth and flooding, which requires management to ensure the protection of this exceptional fort.

Type

Fort. Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Languard Fort operated in conjunction with other fortifications such as Beacon Hill Battery on the opposite side of the Orwell and Stour estuary, and was designed to protect the harbour and dockyard.

Brief History

The present Landguard Fort is the last in a long line of defences built on the point protecting the natural harbour of Harwich. The site was first occupied in the 1500s, but the first true Landguard Fort is considered to be that of 1626-28, this was improved in 1667 and replaced in 1717. The second Landguard Fort consisted of a closed lunette, a sea battery with a caponier and counterscarp galleries.

The third Landguard Fort was built in the 18th century and extensively remodelled in the 1870s. In 1807, the ramparts of the fort were strengthened to take fourteen 32-pdr guns, the existing armament consisting of thirty-one 18-pdr, two 12-pdr and one 6-pdr guns. Apart from successive updating of the armament, the fort underwent no further alteration until 1870, when a review of the Harwich defences found that it was outdated and vulnerable to long range fire; the decision was taken to carry out a major rebuilding.

The extensive alterations carried out in the 1870s incorporate some of the distinctive principles of design adopted in the construction of Royal Commission forts. Characteristic features include the extensive casemate battery faced with granite and with iron shields protecting the gun embrasures, the design and furnishings of the casemates, with barrack accommodation to the rear of the gun compartments, and the design of the magazines below. The design of the caponier is, however, unique.

In the late 1870s Harwich was selected as a harbour suitable for the deployment of mines, and a submarine mining depot was added to the fort, comprising a single storey ravelin block immediately to the west of the fortress.

Although impressive in appearance and strength, the 19th century fortress was misconceived for its intended purpose, and the guns, when finally installed, had insufficient range to defend it or the harbour against ships armed with more modern artillery.

Left Battery

Between 1888 and 1891 a new battery, known at first as Wing Battery and subsequently as Left Battery, was constructed north-east of Holland Bastion, facing the sea. This is now visible as an earthen bank.

The original installation included two gun pits housing one 10-inch and one 6-inch Mk IV BL. Both were on hydropneumatic (HP) disappearing carriages, the larger gun on an experimental type not used elsewhere in Britain. A second 6-inch BL, also on an HP mounting, was added in around 1898. These guns were withdrawn in 1909, and the larger gun pit, which is at the southern end of the battery, was converted to an Anti-aircraft operations room in 1940. Later it became an ammunition store for the 6-inch Mk 24 guns of Right Battery.

Right Wing Battery

To the south-east of the fortress is a second battery, known as the Right Battery, which was constructed between 1898 and 1900. This was also armed with one 10-inch and two 6-inch breech loaders, but on barbette mountings which permitted wider arcs of fire and greater angles of elevation.

The 10-inch gun was withdrawn in 1909.

Practice Battery

On a bank which extends from the north eastern end of the Right Battery, in front of the south-east curtain of the fortress, there are also remains of mountings for a practice battery which comprised two 6-inch Mk II BL guns on slide carriages installed in 1903. Beyond this, to the north-east of Holland bastion were bases for another, comprising two 3-pdr QF guns installed in 1901.

Darrell's Battery

A third battery is situated overlooking the harbour entrance, on the site of the 18th century Beauclerk's Battery and in front of the casemate battery which it effectively replaced. It was built in 1900-01 with emplacements for two 4.7-inch QF BL. In the Second World War concrete gun houses, and two three storey concrete director towers were added to mount position finder and searchlight control. These were added in 1940 when the original guns were replaced by twin 6-pdr guns.

No significant structural alterations were made during the First World War, although a 3-inch anti-aircraft gun was added to the then existing armament of four guns, and four new searchlights were installed on the site of earlier lights dating to 1901, of which fragments survive.

The Second World War saw further modifications, some of which are described above. Three closely spaced concrete shelters to house fixed beam coastal artillery searchlights standing on an embankment to the north west

of Darrell's Battery were added. The fortress itself continued in use as barrack accommodation and offices until the abolition of the coastal artillery in 1956.

Outline Description

The pentagonal shape of the fort dates from the mid-18th century but was rebuilt during the later 19th century with magazines and barracks on the ground floor and officers' quarters on the first floor, and 19th century gun emplacements on the bastions.

Between 1744 and 1749 Landguard Fort was rebuilt in the form which it largely retains, as a larger, regular pentagon with bastions at the angles, surrounded by a moat. It was constructed of brick with stone dressings and enclosed a parade ground containing a barrack block on the south west side and the Lieutenant Governor's house and Officers quarters on the north west. The gate, on the north east side, was flanked by a guardroom and a cookhouse with a chapel above. It was reinforced by a battery (Beauclerk's Battery) on the glacis to the south west, overlooking the harbour.

During the American War of Independence (1775-1783) the fortifications were extended; earthwork wing batteries surrounded by wet ditches were built to the north west and south east of the fort.

Extending across the point, an earthen redoubt known as Raynham Redoubt was constructed, with ramparts known as King's and Prince's Lines across the point to the north and north-west of it. These outer fortifications were designed to form an entrenched camp for a mobile field force. When the fortifications were reviewed at the beginning of the 19th century, during the Napoleonic wars, these outworks were found to be poorly designed, and they were demolished in 1803. The site of the south battery, like that of the 17th century fort immediately to the north of it, is evident.

In 1871-72 radical changes took place; the interior of the fort was replaced by a semi-circular defensible barracks, the main face and centre bastion were replaced by a casemated front of granite for seven RML guns fronted at ditch level by a caponier. The remaining bastions and walls were rebuilt for RML guns and howitzers. In 1877 a controlled minefield was allocated to the defences. A ravelin block containing a Submarine Mining Establishment was constructed together with a pier and ancillary buildings with magazines and cable ponds. Search lights were then added. The area surrounding the fort was used for a substantial complex of additional sea batteries.

Left Wing Battery

This is now visible as an earthen bank. The larger gun pit, which is at the southern end of the battery, was converted to an anti-aircraft operations room in 1940, the asphalt covered roof of which remains exposed. The two smaller gun pits have been infilled and will survive as buried features, together with the remains of adjacent magazines and crew shelters which had entrances to the rear. The sites of the gun pits are visible at ground level. Much of the rear of it was bulldozed during the port expansion. The pits for the 6-inch were filled in the 1950s, with only the aprons left visible. The 10-inch is roofed and sealed.

Right Wing Battery

The outer, seaward face of the battery, appears as a sloping earthen bank, behind and below which are magazines and shelters with vertical rear walls containing windows, entrances and associated external stairs and railed access walkways. The two smaller, concrete lined gun pits, are now covered by drum-shaped concrete casemates linked by a parapet added in 1940 for protection against attack from the air.

The 10-inch gun was withdrawn in 1909, but remains of the gun pit, at the north eastern end, survive below a two storey battery observation post built in 1912, and still containing the base for a depression range finder. This control post replaced an earlier one built in 1902, the shell of which can be seen to the rear of the middle emplacement.

Practice Battery

The remains of mountings for the practice battery survive and beyond this, to the north east of Holland bastion the bases for another, comprising two 3 pounder quick firing guns, are now destroyed by the haul-road.

Darrell's Battery

The two gun pits remain together with the parapet and the shafts for the ammunition elevators, with the electrical control gear for the hoists. These are set in an earthen bank linked by a much slighter embankment to the south western end of the Right Battery. Around the original gun pits there are concrete gun houses, and above them are two 3-storey concrete director towers to mount position finder and searchlight control, all of which were added in 1940 when the original guns were replaced by twin 6-pdr guns.

To the north-east of the Left Battery are remains of three rifle ranges of the mid-19th century.

Condition

The fort is thought to be in fair condition. The batteries however are overgrowth, and their condition is difficult to determine. The internal HE database (HAM) identifies the fort as 'venerable' and its condition is recorded as 'Generally satisfactory but with significant localised problems'.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on a peninsula to the south of Felixstowe which is at the confluence of the Rover Orwell, the Rover Stour and the North Sea. The fort is situated on a shingle spit on the east side of Harwich Harbour. A nature reserve is situated between the fort and coastline, to the rear of the fort is shipping container areas for Harwich port.

Threats

Possible development threat - the Port of Felixtowe is due to be developed which may affect the setting of the fort (Alan Baxter, 2014, 36). The forts principle vulnerability is from development threat.

It is understood that there have been several applications and amended applications for new berths wince the 2014 report by Alan Baxter. There is a Section 106 agreement which includes works within the scheduled monument and directly related to the fort – new car park, new viewpoint café and car park, and importantly new coastal defences. This has recently / is in the process of being amended (HE pers comm).

Uncontrolled vegetation – – the batteries are heavily overgrown. Programmes of vegetation control (bracken clearance) over parts of the monument are in the process of being undertaken by SCDC. Other areas of vegetation are part of nature reserve / wildlife areas

Flooding - the fort suffers from flooding and a flood defence strategy needs to be prepared (Alan Baxter, 2014, 36). The Landguard Partnership Conservation Statement states that the ground floor rooms and corridors are damp and the Ravelin Block suffers from flooding (Baxter 2014, 36).

Coastal erosion – this is a threat to areas of the monument, and several reports have been undertaken to investigate further into this (HE pers coms).

Decay of fabric – damp continues to be an issue. Vertical cracks were recorded within the south of the fort in the last couple of year, related to the weight of the observation tower on the roof. It is understood these have been repaired (HE pers coms).

Ownership

English Heritage Trust and Suffolk Coastal District Council.

Some parts of the monument are also owned by the Port of Felixstone.

Managed by the Landguard Fort Trust and English Heritage (under licence from Historic England).

Occupancy

Multiple occupants – Landguard Fort Trust, Felixstone Museum and Landguard Bird Observatory (Landguard Conservation Trust).

Current use(s)

Visitor attraction

Development proposals

There are no concrete (e.g. planning approved) proposals for the fort itself; although there are lots of 'improvement works' such as new electrical cabling, new doors, repainting etc being undertaken through scheduled monument consent by the Trust and others. Similarly various little improvement works (such as access etc.) going on across the wildlife areas by SCDC (HE pers comm).

Lots of activity is going on related to the adjacent Port, which is directly related to the fort through a recently re-negotiated 106 agreement. This includes relocating the view point visitor centre and car park in front of the fort on the seaward side, and new car parking (HE pers comm).

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade I Listed.

Landguard Fort and its associated fieldworks are of exceptional evidential significance; the visible remains present of the fort present an unusually complete physical record of developments in military engineering and the response to perceived changes in coastal defence requirements from the early 18th to the mid-20th century, and in particular during the period between 1890 and 1914.

The fortress, which forms the nucleus of the complex, is thought to incorporate remains of the original 18th century battery and retains much of the external form and fabric of the fort constructed in the 1740s.The following four decades saw rapid and revolutionary developments in armaments, and the batteries and fire control systems added during this period are therefore of particular interest. The further modifications and additions dating from the Second World War form part of the extensive and varied system of coastal defence works.

The site also has significant potential for buried remains of early fortifications dating from the 16th and 17th centuries. Although no 17th century remains are clearly identifiable above ground, the western part of the site is overlain by later earthworks, and the area occupied by the eastern part is marked by slightly raised and uneven ground. The moat at least, will survive as a buried feature, as may evidence for the buildings which lay within the fort. The area of south battery is also marked by an area of raised, uneven ground and parts of the ditches around it will survive as buried features.

This surviving above and below-ground archaeology is augmented by documentary records including plans and drawings, which further enhance the historic value of the site.

The fort also reflects important advances in engineering and technology, the design of the fort's caponier is unique. The fort's iron shielding in particular, is considered to be the best preserved of this period of fortification. The ravelin block is believed to be the only complete surviving example of a submarine mining depot of this date.

In 2000 English Heritage removed the earth covering from the Left Battery's gun emplacements, revealing a rare Tressider's Cartridge Store beneath the left side of the no.2 emplacement, complete with winch and cartridge trolley. Such findings further enhance the evidential and historical value of the Landguard Fort and its associated batteries.

References

HE website

VF website

PF website

Alan Baxter 2014

PF website

HE pers comm (February 2018)

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Shotley Point Battery (OA151)

County	Suffolk
District	Suffolk Coastal
Parish	Felixstowe
NGR	TM 25100 34000
Group	Felixstowe

PASTSCAPE#	1394355
HER#	(HER number SLY 062), (Mon UID MSF19857)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1021290: Shotley Battery
Recommendations	There is a potential threat to the setting of the battery through proposed residential development.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Shotley Point Battery is situated opposite Harwich Recoubt on the Suffolk coast, and formed part of the 19th Century defensive measures put in place to defend Harwich harbour.

Brief History

The battery was constructed between 1862 and 1863 following recommendations by a Royal Commission set up to report on the defences of the United Kingdom. These recommendations included a small fort at Shotley to supplement the existing defensive structures which consisted of two martello towers, one of which had a small earthwork battery attached.

When completed the battery was armed with fourteen 68-pdr SB guns. Ten years later these were replaced with 7-inch ML guns. In 1891 it was decided to re-arm four 10-inch RML guns on long range mountings but only two emplacements with magazines were built. These obliterated six of the original emplacements. The guns were last used in 1901.

The battery was transferred to the Admiralty in 1904 as a shore establishment, HMS Ganges, for boy entrants to the Navy.

Outline Description

The battery was seven sided, with an earthen rampart on the four sides which overlook the harbour to the south, east and north east. It was surrounded by a Carnot wall with five bastions, two of them at the gorge (rear), and four demi-bastions. The whole was surrounded by an outer ditch.

The fourteen original gun emplacements were of two types; three at the salients were semicircular, with a parapet but no embrasures, giving a wide field of fire, and the remainder had a narrower field through embrasures in the rampart. The magazines were in a subterranean block to the rear of the central emplacement.

The 10-inch emplacements constructed in 1891 were to the south of the original magazine block. The guns were mounted about 20m apart in semi-

circular concrete pits with central pivots, and between them was a small battery commander's post. Beneath them were the new shell rooms and magazines. The ditch in front was filled in and the parapet widened, burying the Carnot wall at this point, and at the same time earth was piled in front of the first magazine block, burying two more of the original emplacements.

The emplacement at the salient, which is also constructed of brick, is semicircular, with steps up to a parapet. To the north west of the emplacement is an expense magazine.

The main magazine block contains three magazine chambers and a lamp lobby. The structure retains several original features, including wall pegs, doors and cupboards.

On the east side of the battery, in the area of the ditch, there are blocked entrances with steps down to another underground tunnel or bunker, possibly associated with the 1891 modifications.

Condition

Poor.

The battery is part demolished. The magazines, rampart and gun emplacements are extant as is a length of the Carnot wall.

The HE internal database (HAM) identifies the fort as being 'vulnerable' and the condition recorded as 'Generally satisfactory but with significant localised problems'. Its principle vulnerability is listed as 'deterioration – in need of management'.

HE have just received a scheduled monument consent for survey and preparatory works in advance of repair and consolidation, which will improve the condition of the battery.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located at the eastern end of the Shotley peninsula facing east to the confluence of the River Orwell, River Stour and the North Sea. The fort is set within an area of green open land, with the development of Shotely Gate set further inland. A marina is situated between the battery and coastline.

Threats

The setting of the battery is likely to be affected by development (*see* Development Proposals below).

Uncontrolled vegetation.

Ownership

Commercial. Galliard Homes.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Derelict.

Development proposals

Planning application - C/13/1104 | Amendments to B/12/00500/FUL - Galliard Homes had planning approval in 2015 to create 285 home development on the previous site of HMS Ganges which is adjacent to the battery (BBC website).

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument, and as such is of considerable significance.

The battery at Shotley Point is of historic value as the only surviving example of a mid-19th century defensive battery in East Anglia and retains many original features. As a whole, the monument is a good example of a second class fort of the period and has group value as one of a series of surviving forts and other military installations which were constructed between the 17th and 20th centuries for the defence of Harwich Harbour.

The battery has clear evidential value; surviving elements of the fort include a large part of the rampart with gun emplacements and magazines dating from 1863 and 1892. Although the greater part of the perimeter has been levelled, a length of the Carnot wall remains standing to full height, and the base of much of the rest is believed to survive as a buried feature, together with the outer ditch.

The fort also has potential for buried archaeology including two original gun emplacements buried beneath the magazine. Most of the southern emplacement was removed during early 20th century landscaping, but the pivot for the gun survives.

References

BBC website

PF website

VF website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

MISCELLANEOUS FORTIFICATIONS

There are five fortifications that fall within the South-east strategic groups, but geographically are part of the HE East of England regional group. These forts have therefore been duplicated in both sections, but have been given only one OA reference number. These fortifications are –

Area 9: Mobilisation Centres

OA No.	Fort Name	Significance	Designation	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
109	North Weald Redoubt	A	SM	4	3	A2	1, 3, 4, 5

Area 10: Thames group

OA No.	Fort Name	Significance	Designation	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
115	Coalhouse Fort	A	SM	1	3	C1	3, 4
116	East Tilbury Battery	A	SM	4	1	x	2, 3
119	Tilbury Fort (including mobilisation store)	A	SM. LB(II*)	1	1	x	1, 7

Area 12: Coastal Redoubt

OA No.	Fort Name	Significance	Designation	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
135	Harwich Redoubt	A	SM.LB (II*)	1	1	x	1, 8

North Weald Redoubt (Mobilisation Centre) (OA109)

This fort is part of the Mobilisation Centres strategic group which is within the south-east region, however geographically it is within the HE East of England region. As a result, there is a duplication of this fort within the East of England region, although only one reference number has been allocated to it (OA109).

County Essex
District Epping Forest
Parish North Weald Bassett
NGR TL 5056 0396
Group London

PASTSCAPE#	372844
HER#	4208 (SMR number)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1018456: A London mobilisation centre known as the North Weald Redoubt
Recommendations	The redoubt is on the HAR Register, a Management Plan needs to be agreed to ensure the site's future preservation.

Type

Mobilisation Centre.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

North Weald Redoubt has strong group value with the 12 mobilisation centres around London. It was the first mobilisation centre to be completed, and the first one north of the Thames.

Brief History

Construction of the North Weald Redoubt began shortly after the land was purchased in 1889 and was largely completed by 1904. It was retained as a military base in the decade leading up to 1914, and it is then thought to have served as an arsenal for the duration of the Great War. In 1919 the site was sold at auction to the Marconi Wireless Telegraph Company, who established a radio station on the surrounding hillside (the last original radio mast from this period was taken down in 1982) and used the redoubt for storage. The Imperial and International Communication Company took over the site in 1929 and continued operations under the new name of Cable and Wireless after 1934.

The radio station came under direct government control during the Second World War and this use, plus the site's proximity to the Southern Fighter Command base at North Weald airfield, may explain the presence of an unusual form of Second World War gun emplacement, known as the `Allen-Williams' turret, situated on the south eastern terminal of the rampart above the eastern approach to the gorge.

After the war in 1950, the radio station came under the control of the Post Office and the redoubt was used and maintained by the GPO (and latterly British Telecom), until the site was decommissioned in the early 1990s.

Outline Description

The site is described in the Scheduling description, which is summarised below.

North Weald mobilisation centre includes the main compound, caretakers' cottages and external stores situated on rising ground to the east of North Weald Bassett (within the grounds of the former Ongar Radio Station), and known variously as the Essex or North Weald Redoubt.

The main compound is broadly `D'-shaped in plan. The rear channel (gorge) contains a sunken roadway and a row of reinforced concrete casemates which extend right along the northern side (used to accommodate 72 men). The gorge is approached by two vehicle ramps, one at the eastern end, the other descending the outer scarp from the bridge which carries the principal access road across the gorge and onto the reinforced roof of the casemates. The bridge, overlies a caponier.

The approach road continues along the length of the casemates' roof, joining two internal routes which lead northwards into the inner or `front' section of the installation. This section includes a sunken semi-circular marshalling yard. The northern side of the yard contains a curved row of concrete casemates which carries the loop of the internal road across its roof and is recessed behind a strong earthen rampart which matches the curvature of the outer ditch.

The North Weald Redoubt was not intended to be permanently garrisoned, but provision was made for caretakers. Two uninhabited single-storey cottages, brick-built with slate roofs, stand within the line of the original perimeter fence, immediately to the south of the bridge.

Condition

Poor.

The site is on the HAR Register 2015, the fort is described as having 'extensive significant problems'.

The register notes – 'Discussions with the owners and local authority currently centre on proposals to commission a Conservation Management Plan for beneficial re-use of the site as an outdoor activity centre in the context of local development proposals. The discussions have not agreed a scheme'.

Trend

Declining.

The HAR register states it is category C – 'Slow decay; no solution agreed'.

Setting

Located on a hill 500m east of the village of North Weald Bassett. The site is surrounded by a buffer of green fields, with the residential development of North Weald Bassettt to the north and west.

Threats

Vandalism – the site is easily accessed through holes in the fence. The site has suffered from serious damage and vandalism, including virtual demolition of caretakers cottage/ stores.

Flooding - photographs dated 2014 on the Derelict Places website also show that the site had flooded with rainwater which had filled the ground floor level and underground sections of the redoubt.

Decay of fabric – failure of concrete.

Deterioration/ in need of management

Ownership

Commercial owners (multiple)

Occupancy

Vacant/ not in use.

Current use(s)

Derelict and unused.

Development proposals

No agreed strategy as developer is looking for planning opportunities to support any action.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The redoubt is a Scheduled Monument.

The Scheduling description describes the significance of the mobilisation centre, stating it -

'...exhibits a remarkable level of survival, no doubt largely as a result of the sympathetic (or cost-effective) reuse of the site as a radio station after the First World War. Not only do the earthworks and casemates of the main compound remain substantially intact but, unusually for this type of monument, the contemporary caretakers' cottages and external stores also survive with few modifications when compared to the original War Office plans....

.....the operational use of the centre is poorly recorded; these plans, however, provide clear documentary evidence for the design and intended use of this, the most northerly of the mobilisation centres within the ring of the London Defence Positions'.

The well-preserved fort is therefore of considerable evidential value, which is enhanced by the survival of the care-taker's cottages and external stores. Fixtures and fittings within the fort are also thought to survive well. The survival of contemporary plans of the redoubt, and recent studies which enhanced understanding of mobilisation centres, enhanced the significance of North Weald Redoubt.

The site is of exceptional historic significance attributed to its use as a wireless station, and the Adam-Williams turret.. This is a well preserved example of a comparatively rare form of gun emplacement, a small number of which were produced in 1939-40 by a company specialising in pre-fabricated building components. Unusually, it still retains all the principal elements of its dual purpose design, and its use in this location illustrates the renewed military significance of the redoubt as a radio station during the Second World War.

The redoubt is of some communal value, as it has limited accessibility.

References

Derelictplaces website

HE website

VF website

Smith, V 1975

Beanse, A and Gill, R 2011

EH 2000 (92/2000)

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Coalhouse Fort (OA115), incl. Wing Battery

This fort is part of the Thames strategic group which is within the south-east region, however geographically it is within the HE East of England region. As a result, there is a duplication of this fort within the East of England region, although only one reference number has been allocated to it (OA115).

County Essex
District Thurrock
Parish East Tilbury
NGR TQ 6907 7657
Group Thames

PASTSCAPE#	413479 (Coalhouse Fort), 1375114 (Wing Battery)
HER#	1758,1759, 1761, 1760 (SMR numbers)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1013943: Coalhouse Fort battery and artillery defences
Recommendations	Coalhouse Fort is of exceptional significance and on the HAR register. It therefore requires management to ensure its future preservation.

Type

Coastal battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Coalhouse Fort is of group value with the other Thames fortifications, particularly Coalhouse Fort which was constructed alongside Shornemead and Cliffe. These were planned to work in unison and provide a first line of defence for the protection of the river approach to the Capital and Woolwich Arsenal. A second line was provided by upgrading the forts at Tilbury and Gravesend.

Brief History

The Scheduled Monument comprises the Victorian Coalhouse Fort at East Tilbury, with its associated railway link and jetty and its rifle range, as well as the foundations of an Henrician 'blockhouse' coastal battery, a late 19th century 'Quick-Firer' battery and a low-level radar tower dating from the Second World War.

The first phase of the fort, begun in 1799, was replaced in 1847-55 by a more complex structure which was in turn superseded by the RML guns, shell-firing guns in the open battery, and 11-inch RML guns in the casemates. The fort underwent the usual modifications to provide traverses and some of the casemates were filled with concrete.

The 1869 Royal Commission report suggested a change in armament, the initial plan was however soon changed, and 9, 11 and 12.5-inches RML were mounted.

In 1893 Wing Battery was constructed, for two 6-pdr QF guns, the battery was immediately adapted to take four guns. The rapid rate of fire of the guns meant that the battery provided defence against motor torpedo boats in the River Thames as well as providing minefield defence. The guns were removed in 1902 and two searchlights were erected on top of the battery to serve a QF battery on the roof of Coalhouse Fort.

By 1903 new concrete emplacements for four 6-inch BL guns and four 12-pdr QF guns were added on the roof. Some of the QF guns were removed and searchlights added, the ditch filled and the casemates partially earthed-up to disguise the fort's outline to some extent. A small battery for four 6-pdr QF with searchlights was built to the south of the fort, later reduced to two. Two 12.5-inch RML guns were, however, retained until 1908.

In the First World War Coalhouse Fort used as an examination battery in conjunction with Cliffe and Shornemead forts.

In the Second World War the fort also acted as a degaussing station to counter the threat of German magnetic mines.

In 1962 Thurrock Borough Council took over the responsibility for the fort.

Outline Description

The new fort consists of a semi-circular casemated battery with facings of granite. Beneath the gun casemates are the usual magazine arrangements, with shell and cartridge stores and an ammunition passage with lifts to the gun floor. A two storey barrack block of Kentish rag stone with bastion-like projections closes the rear of the fort. A central parade is divided by a single gun ramp. A six foot wide moat surrounded the fort.

A jetty serves Coalhouse Fort which is the same phase of construction as the Henrician blockhouse. It was improved and added to by a full- gauge railway line which survives almost intact but for the tracks themselves.

Near the waterfront a little distance from the fort are a 19th century battery for QF guns and searchlights, a rifle range and a Second World World War low-level radar tower. Some remains relating to the fort as a degaussing station also survive.

Wing Battery has a pair of emplacements which have ready-use lockers and a shared magazine. The emplacements were located in an oval earthwork trace surrounded by a small water-filled ditch, the whole being immediately behind the sea wall.

Condition

Poor.

The HAR register define it as category C – 'Slow decay; no solution agreed'.

There has been improvements to the condition of the fort, including –

- Repair work to the gatehouse barrack block was completed in 2011 with grant aid. Further phased repairs anticipated;
- Heritage Lottery Fund scheme for conversion of generator house to cafe is underway;
- Storm damage to roof of north caponier has now been repaired;
- Discussions to remedy water ingress to casemates are on-going.

HE funding has resulted in a full suite of building and development surveys during 2017, including a Conservation Management Plan, coastal repairs and a

uses options appraisal. These will form the basis of an approach to the Heritage Lottery Fund, providing a broad solution for the monument's removal from the HAR Register.

Trend

Improving.

Setting

Located on the north side of the River Thames Estuary, east of Tilbury. The fort is surrounded by open fields and largely retains its setting with the village of East Tilbury further inland.

Threats

Deterioration/in need of management - water ingress

Decay of fabric - deterioration of brickwork. The barrack block is in a severe state of disrepair.

Ownership

Local Authority. Thurrock Council leased to Coalhouse Fort Project, a group of volunteers who manage the fort.

Occupancy

Part occupied/ part in-use

Current use(s)

Opened to the public once a month by the Coalhouse Fort Project volunteers.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument.

The monument comprises the fort, railway link and jetty and its rifle range, as well as the foundations of an Henrician 'blockhouse' coastal battery, a late 19th-century 'Quick-Firer' battery and a low-level radar tower dating from the Second World War. The scheduled monument is significant is demonstrating a broad range of defence systems, and how they evolved during over a long period.

It is one of the finest examples of an armoured casemate fort in England and is well documented historically. The jetty and railway line are an integral part of the fort. The QF battery, built in 1893, is the sole surviving purpose-built battery of its type in the Thames basin. The rifle range is an unusual survival which adds to the known range of earthwork monuments and is closely associated with the fort. Furthermore, the site has group value with East Tilbury Fort which is also of exceptional significance, and as part of a wider defence system designed to protect the Thames Estuary and the capital.

References

Hogg 1974

The Coalhouse Fort Project website

VF website

PF website

HE website

regs.thurrock website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

East Tilbury Battery (OA116)

This fort is part of the Thames strategic group which is within the south-east region, however geographically it is within the HE East of England region. As a result, there is a duplication of this fort within the East of England region, although only one reference number has been allocated to it (OA116).

County Essex
District Thurrock
Parish East Tilbury
NGR TQ 6868 7735
Group Thames

PASTSCAPE#	413501
HER#	1823, 1824 (SMR numbers)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1013880: East Tilbury Battery
Recommendations	The battery is of exceptional value but there is deterioration of fixtures and fittings that requires management.

Type

Coastal battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

East Tilbury Battery is of group value with the other Thames installations; it was built to defend the Thames and support nearby Coalhouse Fort. The battery at East Tilbury was built to support the guns at Coalhouse Fort.

Brief History

East Tilbury battery was built in 1889/90 to support Coalhouse Fort with long-range fire. The guns at the battery, two 10-inch and four 6-inch on disappearing carriages, extended the tactical doctrine of invisibility. There was a total of six guns in a line, all on disappearing carriages. The 6-inch guns were removed and the emplacements changed to standard 6-inch BL CP mountings by 1900. On the extreme right end is a position for a 3-pdr QF gun, which was possibly used for practice or local defence. Another 'D' mount for a QF gun can be found at the extreme left of the gun line.

Towards 1900 the 6-inch guns were remounted. Living casements were built beneath the 10-inch battery, and the usual cookhouse, stores, offices and so forth. were on the inland side of a sunken way running the length of the work.

The battery kept its 10-inch guns until they were declared obsolete and they were partially dismantled by 1903. By 1909 the 6-inch guns were declared superfluous and were partially dismantled

The battery was decommissioned before the First World War.

Outline Description

Its form rejected the stark outline of its predecessors, instead being blended into the landscape by means of a long and sloping earthen frontal area, so that from a distance it was invisible ('Twydall Profile'). Below the gun mountings were magazines and accommodation blocks, and to the rear of the battery were a

cookhouse and the battery office. Unclimbable 'Dacoit fencing', set in a steeply-sided ditch, surrounds the battery.

Either side of the two central HP pits are sets of chambers appropriated as war shelters. Between the two HP pits is the central magazine for the 10-inch guns. This consists of two cartridge stores and lamp passages with one central shell store connecting to an ammunition lift at each end. The walls are lined with bitumen and cork to prevent damp. The two ammunition lifts are still in place.

Condition

Poor.

The battery survives in near complete condition. Photographs of the site from 2009 show that a number of features are extant including several ammunition lifts and painted signs (Subterranean website). The emplacements are visible and ancillary structures survive, however the site has become overgrown.

The fortification is remarkably well-preserved. Many structural details are discernible and machinery used to raise shells and cartridges from the magazines to the emplacements is virtually intact.

There has however been recent significant vandalism to fixtures and fittings, and relocated of the remaining items is being reconsidered (HE, pers comm).

Trend

Declining.

Setting

The battery is located east of the linear settlement of East Tilbury and faces east towards the Thames Estuary. It is immediately surrounded by a buffer of woodland, in close proximity to Princess Margaret Road directly to the west of the battery.

Threats

Uncontrolled vegetation –heavily overgrown with vegetation.

Deterioration/in need of management and decay of fabric – there is some deterioration to fixtures and fittings including painted signs that requires management.

Ownership

Private.

Occupancy

Not in use.

Current use(s)

Derelict.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The battery is a Scheduled Monument.

The East Tilbury battery is a rare coastal example of the 'Twydall Profile' form of defensive installation, of which it is the best and most complete example in England. The unusual survival of the concrete sunken emplacements for disappearing guns, which add to the invisibility of the battery, adds greatly to its importance.

It has group value with nearby installations, such as Coalhouse Fort, in showing the complex evolutionary sequence of defensive installations both at East Tilbury itself and in the wider context.

References

Subterranean website

VF website

PF website

HE website

regs.thurrock website

Hogg 1974

HE pers comm (February 2018)

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Tilbury Fort (including mobilisation store) (OA119)

This fort is part of the Thames strategic group which is within the south-east region, however geographically it is within the HE East of England region. As a result, there is a duplication of this fort within the East of England region, although only one reference number has been allocated to it (OA119).

County Essex
District Tilbury
Parish Tilbury
NGR TQ 6509 7551
Group Thames

PASTSCAPE#	413465
HER#	1679
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1021092: Tilbury Fort Grade II* Listed officers barracks Tilbury Fort (list entry number 1375568)
Recommendations	There is a possible threat to the setting of the fort through proposed surrounding development, which requires consideration.

Type

Coastal fort. Mobilisation Centre.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Tilbury Fort has group value with the 12 mobilisation centres around London. It is situated 10 miles from the line of the other centres, and was used as a store with Warley and Caterham. Tilbury Fort is also of group value with the other Thames military defences.

Brief History

The monument includes the buried remains of a Henrician blockhouse, the far larger and more complex fort and battery which succeeded the blockhouse in the late 17th century, the late 19th and early 20th century alterations to the fort and a Second World War pillbox.

The blockhouse, the first permanent defensive structure in this location, was constructed in 1539 as part of Henry VIII's campaign to improve the coastal defences.

Charles II began a complete reorganisation of the national defences which included Tilbury. The new Tilbury fort and battery, designed by Sir Bernard de Gomme, and built in 1670 and remain substantially unaltered to this day.

The fort remained at the forefront of the defence of the Thames and London through the 18th and early 19th centuries. The Royal Commission found the Thames defences inadequate and shortly afterwards larger forts were constructed at Coalhouse, Shornmead and Cliffe Creek. It was recommended that Tilbury be made more efficient, but as it was now relegated to a secondary position the alterations were far from radical, allowing the 17th century layout to survive.

A new magazine was built and an 18-pdr field gun battery was installed. In 1865 the effective armament was reported as five 68-pdr SB, five 32-pdr SB,

and four 10-inch SB guns. Embrasures and platforms for new heavy guns were added to cover the river from the north east and west bastions in 1868, the pivots and racers for which remain in position.

New earthworks were built, to take brick emplacements for guns firing through embrasures to command the river, it seems however that all the embrasures were not occupied.

Both bastions also have positions for 10-inch smooth bore howitzers mounted on the northern flanks to cover the landward approach. The 1868 gun positions on the east bastion and south eastern curtain wall are masked by later emplacements, built shortly before the First World War.

Prior to the Frist World War Tilbury Fort was used as a mobilisation centre. Two existing buildings were adapted and six new ones built for use as a mobilisation store. All buildings are now demolished except a former Artillery General Store which still exists behind the later QF gun emplacements.

The accommodation was controlled by the Army Ordnance Department, specifically for storing mobilisation equipment for the 4th and 5th Divisional Horse Artillery, and under the administration of an Ordnance Officer Mobilisation. The fort was issued with anti-aircraft protection from 1915, with complimentary searchlights as part of the London outer defences.

To accommodate the great numbers of draft finding units, hutted camps needed to be set up throughout the country. The continuing need to supply stores to these huge camps then fell on the Tilbury Fort Ordnance store, which was re-designated an Ordnance Depot on October 1st 1915.

In the early stages of the Second World War the site controlled the anti-aircraft defences of the Thames and Medway (North) Gun Zone.

Outline Description

The 1670 Tilbury Fort was designed by Sir Bernard de Gomme, based on principles pioneered in the Low Countries. It is pentagonal in plan, with arrowhead-shaped bastions projecting from four of the angles. A brick-built curtain wall encloses and links the bastions and the pentagonal area within the ramparts (The Parade), which contained the barracks and powder magazines. The outer defences surrounding the landward sides of the fort are elaborate and include a broad terrace, or berm, two moats and a number of defensive structures. A narrow strip of dry land separates this channel from an outer moat and contains a complex of defensive structures.

Condition

Good.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on the north side of the Thames Estuary at Tilbury. There is green open space immediately to the rear of the fort, but to the east and west

there is development with the immediate vicinity to the fort. This includes a distribution park and sewage works, and the urban development of Tilbury is further inland. Recent expansion along the Thames has therefore effected the setting of the fort.

Threats

Development (setting) - there is a possible threat to the setting of the fort through increasing number of industrial estates adjacent to the fort to the west, and the sewage treatment works to the east of the fort. There are planning proposals awaiting decision (detailed below) which are particularly relevant.

Visitor wear and tear.

Flooding.

Ownership

English Heritage (or HE). Managed by English Heritage (guardianship) under licence from Historic England until 2023.

Occupancy

Part-occupied/ in use – there are residential tenants in the Grade II* officers barracks.

Current use(s)

English Heritage Site open to visitors.

Development proposals

Planning application 16/00848/FUL at Tilbury B Power Station Fort Road, may impact the setting of the fort. The application is awaiting decision.

There is a development threat from the proposed ferry port facilities and other uses, including major transport links. HE are currently advising on application submitted to PINS (HE pers comm).

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

The fort is a Scheduled Monument, and the officer's barracks are Grade II* Listed.

The HE Scheduling description describes the significance of the fort –

'Tilbury Fort is England's most spectacular surviving example of a late 17th century coastal fort, designed at a time when artillery had become the dominant feature of warfare and therefore built with massive low earthworks, resilient to the shock of bombardment, instead of stone fortifications.

The systems of bastions and complicated outworks defending the batteries from the rear is principally a Dutch design, extremely rare in England, and Tilbury is the best preserved and most complete example of the type.

The fort still retains many of its original internal features with most of the main buildings surviving as standing structures. The magazines are especially notable, as they are rare survivals of a very unusual building

type. The buried remains of further structures, associated both with the operation of the 17th century fort and the Tudor blockhouse, will also survive within the fort. The remains of the blockhouse, and of features related to its operation, are important as they represent one of the earliest types of structure built exclusively for the use of artillery in warfare'.

The site has strong group value with the 13 mobilisation centres constructed around London, although today only one building survives from this period of its use.

References

thurrock.gov. website

PF website

VF website

Hogg 1974

regs.thurrock website

HE pers comm (February 2018).

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Harwich Redoubt (OA135)

This fort is part of the Coastal Redoubt strategic group which is within the south-east region, however geographically it is within the HE East of England region. As a result, there is a duplication of this fort within the East of England region, although only one reference number has been allocated to it (OA135).

County Essex
District Tendring
Parish Harwich
NGR TM 2615 3215
Group Harwich

PASTSCAPE#	618941
HER#	53 (SMR number)
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1017205: The Harwich Redoubt Grade II* Listed (list entry number 1187916)
Recommendations	Visitor wear and tear, and coastal erosion should be monitored to ensure this does not impact the historic monument. The recovery of the two RML guns from the moat would improve its interpretation.

Type

Redoubt.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Harwich Redoubts is one of three redoubts in England, the other two are on the south coast, at Dymchurch and Eastbourne. Harwich Redoubt provided with Languard Fort (in Sussex), cross fire over the harbour approach.

Brief History

The Harwich Redoubt was built between 1807 and 1809 to protect the important deep water harbour in the event of invasion or attack by Napoleon's forces. The location, just outside the town gate, presented a wide field of fire across the peninsula and, combined with Languard Fort in Suffolk, allowed for cross fire over the harbour approach.

The platform is equipped with ten embrasures, each was originally designed for a 24-pdr SB cannons, which were slide mounted on traversing carriages secured to central pivots. None of the embrasures survive unaltered.

In 1861 the embrasure openings were narrowed with granite blocks to protect the gun crews from rifle fire. The deflective parapet and exterior walls, originally clad in limestone, were refitted with granite to withstand heavier bombardment from improved artillery. In 1862 the ten guns were replaced with more powerful armament, seven 68-pdr cannons and three 8-inch SB guns.

In 1871 three of the positions facing the harbour approach were modified to take 9-inch RML guns.

In 1903 the two emplacements facing the harbour were modified to take 12-pdr QF guns and a sally port was added to the rear of the ground floor guard room to provide access into the north side of the moat.

In 1910 the QF guns were removed, and the redoubt became barrack accommodation.

The redoubt had little active use in the First World War, and was sold to the Town Council in the 1920s and housing developments soon encroached around the foot of the hill.

The redoubt was recommissioned for military use in the Second World War and served a range of support roles, including a period as a detention room for British servicemen. A Bofors anti-aircraft gun was stationed on the forward gun platform as part of the air defences for the harbour.

In the Cold War, Harwich Redoubt was retained as a civil defence centre for co-ordinating emergency services in the event of nuclear war. These operations were transferred to other more suitable buildings in the late 1950s, and the redoubt was abandoned until restoration work was initiated by the Harwich Society in 1969.

Outline Description

Harwich Redoubt is brick built with masonry details and exterior facings. The tower is circular in plan, encircled by a dry moat and enclosing an open central parade ground. The ground floor has 18 rooms or casemates radiating from the Parade which served as stores for ammunition and general supplies, a cookhouse, ablution room, latrines and accommodation, once the garrison of 250 men and six officers became operational in 1810.

The upper edge of the moat's brick retaining wall is set slightly below the level of the gun platform so as to conceal the bulk of the building while allowing an uninterrupted field of fire across the modified slope of the hill. A generator house and oil store was constructed in the moat in 1903 in order to supply electricity to searchlights located on the slope below the fort. Access to the redoubt was originally provided by a fixed bridge, with a drawbridge section, leading to the gun platform. This was replaced with the present permanent bridge, capable of supporting heavy vehicles, after the Second World War.

Of the various guns located on the upper platform the only original piece of ordnance is the 1872 RML gun raised from the moat, which is included in the scheduling.

Condition

Good.

The redoubt is activity conserved by the Harwich Society, and well managed/

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on the eastern side of Harwich peninsula, situated on a slight hill, flanked by Harbour Crescent to the north and east, Main Road to the west, and Mayflower Avenue to the south. The primary setting of the fort has been lost to housing development and allotments.

Threats

None identified.

Ownership

Managed by the Harwich Society.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Managed and opened to the public by the Harwich Society

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Exceptional.

Harwich Redoubt is a Scheduled Monument and Grade II* Listed.

Harwich Redoubt is of clear evidential value, it has undergone comparatively few later alterations, and it remains the most complete example of the three ten-gun fortifications (redoubts). The tower is substantially unaltered since its completion in 1810.

The redoubt is historical significant and has group value particularly when considered together with the surviving Martello towers and other batteries along the east coast. It is situated in close proximity to Beacon Hill Fort, which is also considered to be of exceptional significance.

The redoubt retains a range of modifications which demonstrate both the provisions made for improved ordnance in the latter part of the 19th century, and the continued military importance of the harbour. The redoubt's use in the First and Second World War adds to is value, as does its role during the Cold War as a civil defence centre for co-ordinating emergency services. This is a uncommon secondary use of 19th century fortifications.

The fort also has potential for two original RML guns to be recovered from the moat, which have been identified by geophysical survey. Harwich Redoubt is currently being restored by the Harwich Society, and is open to the public, it is therefore of considerable communal value.

References

The Harwich Society website 2016

VF website

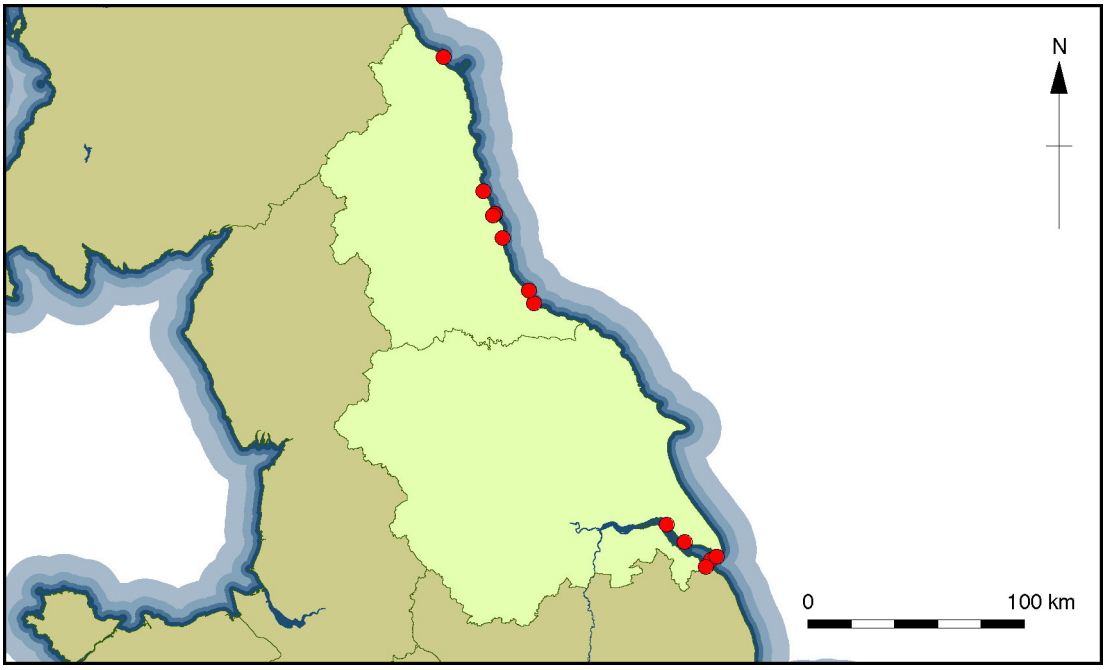
HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

REGION 4: NORTH EAST REGION

Area No.	Area Name	No. of Sites
16	Humber	5
17	Tees & Hartlepool	6
18	Northumberland	2
Total		**13**



Distribution of forts within the North-East region

OA no.	Fort Name	Significance	Designation	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
152	Paull Point Battery	B	SM. LB	3	3	A2	1, 6
153	Sunk Island Battery	C	x	6	3	x	1, 4
154	Bull Sand Fort	B	LB	6	2	x	6
155	Spurn Point	C	x	6	3	x	1,2,5
156	Haile Sand Fort	B	LB	6	1	x	4,5

Paull Point Battery (O152)

County Yorkshire
District East Riding of Yorkshire
Parish Paull
NGR TA 1697 2555
Group Humber

PASTSCAPES#	80540
HER#	
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1020425: Paull Point Battery, coastal artillery battery and Submarine Mining Establishment Grade II Listed (list entry number 1161659)
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Sunk Island. Part of the Humber Estuary Coastal Defence System.

Brief History

The first battery at Paull was constructed in 1542. A new battery, known as Paull Cliff Battery was built in 1807 during the Napoleonic Wars, was built in 1807, but was dismantled sometime after 1815. Paull Point Battery, the battery and defences that now stand within the area of the monument, was built in 1861-64 following the decommissioning of Hull Citadel, the large artillery fort on the east bank of the River Hull. Although in the late 20th century (after decommissioning) it became known as Paull Fort, the installation was not in fact a fort, but an 'enclosed battery'.

It was only protected with defences designed to repel lightly armed raiding parties. It was also not permanently garrisoned but was kept on a care and maintenance basis, only being manned during exercises and at times of war. In 1886 a Submarine Mining Establishment was set up just to the north of the battery to operate a minefield in the Humber.

The battery was rebuilt for three 6-inch BL guns in 1899 and two 4.7-inch QF were added in 1905. Originally there were nineteen 64-pdr RML guns, in 1899 it was armed with three 6-inch guns and two 4.7-inch-guns, which were removed in 1905. The 6-inch guns were removed in 1915, but refitted in 1920 for practice by the TA.

Before the First World War, Paull had been used as a training base with practice batteries sited between the defended enclosure and the shoreline. Substantial alterations in the landward buildings appear to date from the First World War, however the battery was disarmed in the early years of the war.

Between the World Wars the battery was used as a sub-district office and stores by the Royal Garrison Artillery and then by the Territorial Force.

During the Second World War the battery was used as a submarine mining base and armament store.

The battery is now used as a museum.

Outline Description

Begun in 1861 and completed in 1864, the earthwork battery is an irregular pentagon with its longest face running parallel to the Humber. It has a 12-ft wide dry ditch and a defensible gorge wall, surrounded by an unclimbable fence. The brick buildings have York Stone copings and the gun emplacements are constructed in reinforced concrete.

Condition

Poor.

The battery structures are in 'good' condition according to the HAR register, however, the land is 'Generally unsatisfactory with major localised problems'.

The battery is on the HAR Register due to coastal erosion and declining condition.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located on the north bank of the River Humber and 500m south of the village of Paull. The fort largely retains its original setting, to the west is the residential development of Paull village.

Threats

Coastal erosion.

Development.

Ownership

Private.

Occupancy

Fort Paull Museum, Armouries and Visitor Centre.

Current use(s)

Open to the public as a museum.

Development proposals

There has been inappropriate development at Paull Point Battery.

Summary of Significance

Considerable

The battery is a Scheduled Monument and is Grade II Listed.

With almost 500 years as a military location and the current structures dating to 1856, the site is of considerable historic value.

The battery is almost complete and so is of considerable evidential value. Paull Point is a very well-preserved enclosed Victorian battery that is effectively complete with the exception of its guns. The survival of outlying associated features such as the Defence Electric Light emplacement, the practice batteries and the remains of the Submarine Mining Establishment adds to its importance.

Although coastal erosion is causing damage and the listed building details state that certain structures are near-derelict, the site is of considerable aesthetic value as a planned site, although care should be taken not to compromise the intended site plan with structures or equipment used as part of the museum.

The considerable communal value of the site is now heavily linked with the use as a museum open to the public.

References

VF website

PF website

Dobinson 2000 (Vol. VI.1)

HE pers comm

Compiler

Angela Warner

Sunk Island Battery (O153)

County	Yorkshire
District	East Riding of Yorkshire
Parish	Sunk Island
NGR	TA 2496 1756
Group	Humber

PASTSCAPES#	914213
HER#	
Heritage status	Unlisted Sunk Island Conservation Area
Recommendations	Survey to establish the survival and condition of structures associated with the battery. Subsequent consideration should be given to the possibility of listing the surviving buildings.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Humber Estuary Coastal Defence System.

Brief History

Historic England's PastScapes website summarises -

"Built between 1914 and 1915, originally to be built as a permanent structure, the outbreak of war meant that a temporary battery was erected and quickly brought into service. It was equipped with two 6-inch breech loading Mk. VII weapons. It was manned by 2/I Company and 4/I Company of East Riding Royal Garrison Artillery.

The guns were removed in 1919 and the site released in 1926. It was reused during the Second World War and in 1940 was fitted with a pair of 4.7-inch quick-firing guns and two searchlights for close defence."

Conservation Area Consent [96/61917/PCC] was granted in 1996 for the demolition of the Radar Tower.

Outline Description

Historic England's PastScapes website summaries -

"The battery comprised two gun emplacements, a command post, officers' quarters, mess room, hospital, domestic hutting, recreation hut, ablution block, engine room, water tower, magazine, and searchlights. Field defences installed at the site included ditch obstacles, pillboxes, earthwork shelters for battery personnel, infantry fire trenches and machine gun pits reserve in June 1918."

The site was surveyed in 1992 as part of the FSG, RCHME: Holderness Survey by the Fortress Studies Group. They found that all the structures on the site had suffered to some extent from attempts at demolition. All the buildings appeared to be built of re-inforced concrete, their condition varies from poor to destroyed."

Condition

Poor.

Images dating from 2013 show that the battery suffers from structural problems and is partly collapsed (Hull & East Riding at War, 2013)

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located in woodland on the north side of the River Humber at Sunk Island overlooking the Humber Estuary. The battery retains its original setting in an area of woodland.

Threats

Decay of fabric - suffering from structural collapse.

Coastal erosion – probable threat.

Ownership

Private - South Farm.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Derelict and in woodland.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Some.

Sunk Island Battery is within the Sunk Island Conservation Area, but given little detail in the Conservation Area Appraisal.

The site is unlisted and on private land, however, photographs posted on websites use by urban explorers show that there may be potential for structures with some historic and evidential and even aesthetic significance to survive.

The site has been unseen by the public since what is likely to be outside of living memory and so it is now of little communal significance.

References

Hull & East Riding at War website

PastScapes website

Compiler

Angela Warner

Bull Sand Fort (O154)

County	Yorkshire
District	East Riding of Yorkshire
Parish	Humber Estuary/Easington
NGR	TA 37054 09240
Group	Humber

PASTSCAPES#	915963
HER#	
Heritage status	Grade II Listed (list entry number 1083477)
Recommendations	None

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Built in association with the smaller Haile Sand Fort (O161) to protect the entrance to the Humber Estuary. An anti-submarine steel mesh net was stretched between them.

Part of the Humber Estuary Coastal Defence System.

Brief History

Construction started in 1915, but the fort wasn't completed until 1919 due to the complexity of the engineering work required to construct a stable base for the fort, and its remote and exposed location.

In October 1919, the armaments were listed as consisting of four 6-inch BL VII guns. During the Second World War, in response to the fort's new role as a guard against hostile motor torpedo boats entering the Humber, two new reinforced concrete searchlight sponsons were added and the two flanking 6-inch guns were replaced with two twin 6-pdr QF guns.

The Army left in 1956, but the fort was still manned until 1964, when both were sold to the Humber Conservancy Board.

Plans for its conversion to a drug rehabilitation centre have been discussed since 1998.

Outline Description

The listed building description is extensive, and summarised below -

Reinforced concrete and brick, clad with rivetted steel armour plating. Timber and steel jetty. Circular on plan with octagonal base and balcony at sea level, and polygonal jetty to south-west. Three floors with basement and magazine below sea level, and central 2-storey observation tower. The middle floor has groups of 3 projecting turrets on the north and south sides, facing the main shipping lanes. Single projecting square observation turrets attached to north and south sides.

Bull Fort had full amenities, including its own fresh water supply, for a garrison of 200.

Condition

Likely to be Fair.

Extent of the work carried out by the Streetwise Charitable Trust is unknown.

Trend

Stable.

This could be altered to 'improving' if the charity is continuing to carry out repair work.

Setting

Located within the Humber Estuary, 2.5km south west of Spurn Point.

Threats

Development – possible direct threat to the fort.

Ownership

Private. Streetwise Charitable Trust. Streetwise Charitable Trust, was removed from the Charity Commission's list in 2014.

Occupancy

Unknown.

Current use(s)

Used by Streetwise Charitable Trust and due to be used as a detox centre once restoration work is complete.

Development proposals

In 1998, planning application 98/01903/PLB was approved for Streetwise Charitable Trust to carry out internal and external alterations to convert the fort into a 'detoxification unit', although this has never been completed and, although their website is still advertising for volunteers to carry out the construction work, the charity was removed from the Charity Commission's list in 2014.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is Grade II Listed.

The fort is of considerable evidential value due to the survival of the structure and its adaptation to defend the estuary from more technologically advanced threats in the Second World War.

The considerable historic value lies within its innovation and engineering challenges as an offshore structure, however, this is also evident by the success of the pair of offshore forts in defending the mouth of the Humber against submarines.

A prominent landmark visible from the coast and a vast expanse of water, the fort will have considerable communal value and aesthetic value in the link

between the collective memories of several generations of the local community of the proximity of enemy action in both World Wars.

References

An Island of Hope website

Dobinson 2000

PastScapes website.

Compiler

Angela Warner

Spurn Point (O155), including Green Battery, Light Permanent Battery and Light Temporary Battery

County	Yorkshire
District	East Riding of Yorkshire
Parish	Easington
NGR	TA 39964 10893 (Green Battery) TA 39806 10870 (Light Permanent Battery) TA 39825 10768 (Light Temporary Battery)
Group	Humber

PastScapes#	916014 (Spurn Point Military Defences), 916096 (Green Battery), 916131 (Light Permanent Battery), 916034 (Light Temporary Battery)
HER#	
Heritage status	Unlisted
Recommendations	Record all surviving structures on the Spurn as the defences against the natural coastal erosion are no longer maintained.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Part of the Humber Estuary Coastal Defence System.

Brief History

The defences around Spurn Point were started in early 1915 by C.J. Wills. There were three anti-bombardment batteries installed during this first period of building: Green Battery, Light Permanent Battery and Light Temporary Battery.

These Frist World War structures were reused during the Second World War by having later structures superimposed upon them.

In 1961, the MOD sold the Spurn to Yorkshire Wildlife Trust due to the escalating coastal erosion defence maintenance costs; the decision was made to cease maintenance of the defences and the process of natural erosion allowed to take over. Other ancillary buildings survive, although the associated structures of Godwin Battery have already collapsed into the sea further up the coast.

These structures are extant to varying degrees, but have been subject to collapse and vandalism.

Green Battery

From PastScapes –

> *"The battery comprised two circular emplacements for 9.2-inch breech loading Mk. X guns, with a concrete ramp leading to their magazines. The battery was disarmed in 1933. During the Second World War a heavy anti-aircraft gun was installed into no.2 gunpit."*

Light Permanent Battery

Light Battery gun emplacement was built for two 4-inch quick-firing guns and had shelters to the rear. The guns were removed in 1928. A Battery Observation Post was built on the gun emplacements in *c* 1940.

Light Temporary Battery

The roofed concrete structures of the Light Temporary Battery were constructed as emplacements for four 4.7-inch guns, two facing seaward and two facing across the estuary. The guns were removed in the early 1920s. In *c* 1940, the emplacements had two twin 6-pdr emplacements superimposed upon them.

Outline Description

Green Battery

Green Battery is towards the north of the landmass at the Point and comprises two gun emplacements in the form of simple circular concrete pits with a concrete ramp leading to their magazines. The southernmost now has a large corrugated building constructed on it.

Light Permanent Battery

The Light Permanent Battery is to the north west of the Point and constructed of concrete with shelters to the rear. The Second World War battery observation post was built on top of the earlier emplacements.

Light Temporary Battery

The Light Temporary Battery is towards the southern end of Spurn Point and comprised four emplacements which were superimposed by two twin concrete emplacements in the Second World War. The easternmost of these is covered in overgrowth, however, the westernmost survives enough for planning permission to be granted in 2013 for handrails and a ramp to be fitted to the remains to enable safer access for visitors to the Nature Reserve.

Condition

Poor.

The batteries are extant, although the current structures are the results of the major alterations carried out in the Second World War, and have been subject to coastal erosion, vegetation and vandalism, which is visible in photographs posted online by urban explorers.

Trend

Declining.

Setting

Located on Spurn Point a spit of land overlooking the North Sea and the Humber Estuary.

Threats

Coastal erosion.

Vandalism.

Uncontrolled plant growth – scrub.

Ownership

Charity (other) Yorkshire Wildlife Trust.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

Part of Spurn National Nature Reserve and managed by the Yorkshire Wildlife Trust.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Some.

The site of Spurn Point and its structures are unscheduled and unlisted, although the defences are of national significance. The Spurn is being allowed to succumb to natural erosion, and so protection of these defensive monuments is inappropriate.

The reported level of survival varies greatly according to source, however, it is evident that the structures are subjected to coastal erosion, uncontrolled scrub and encroachment of the sand and so it is likely to be the case that only some to little evidential value remains. If vestiges of the First World War structures survive beneath their Second World War replacements, the significance would be enhanced.

The historical value is considerable, however, and lies with the ongoing history of defensive structures being built and superseded over time, coupled with the current status of no longer being afforded any protection as nature takes its course on the geological feature of the Spurn.

The site is now part of a publically accessible Nature Reserve and so any aesthetic and communal value is likely to be rooted within that context rather than exclusively in the historical context.

References

PastScapes website

bbc website

East Riding website

Brigham, Burglass and George (2008)

Compiler

Angela Warner

Haile Sand Fort (OA156)

County Lincolnshire
District East Lindsey
Parish Tetney
NGR TA 34912 06144
Group Humber

PASTSCAPES#	1429147
HER#	47951
Heritage status	Grade II Listed (list entry number 1240990)
Recommendations	The fort has recently been taken off the property market; if it remains unsold, consideration needs to be given to its future use to prevent vandalism and deterioration.

Type

Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Built in association with Bull Sand Fort (O187) to protect the entrance to the Humber Estuary. An anti-submarine steel mesh net was stretched between them.

Part of the Humber Estuary Coastal Defence System.

Brief History

Built between 1915 and 1917 as part of the outer defences of the estuary. In October 1919, the armaments were listed as two 4-inch QF V (Dobinson 2000) although the listed building description lists two 6-inch guns.

An offshore fort hurriedly constructed after the start of the First World War and reactivated and modernised in the Second World War, it was attacked regularly by enemy aircraft and submarines. The Army left in 1956, but the fort was still manned until 1964, when both were sold to the Humber Conservancy Board.

The fort has remained vacant and was recently offered for sale on the open market.

Outline Description

The HE Listed building description is extensive; in brief:

> *"Reinforced concrete and brick, clad with riveted steel armour plating. Timber and steel jetty. Circular on plan with hexagonal base. three floors with basement and magazine below sea level, and central two storey observation tower. To the northeast a pair of gun emplacements."*

Condition

Good.

The fort contains a number of extant fixtures and fittings, paintwork, cupboards, doors and signs.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located to the south of the mouth of the Humber Estuary, 3km east of Humberston. The fort retains its historic setting.

Threats

Decay of fabric.

Vandalism.

Ownership

Unknown.

Possibly Local Authority.

Until recently, the property was up for sale for £300,000 and marketed on estate agent Tepilo website. It is no longer listed, but no information on status is available.

Occupancy

Vacant and not in use.

Current use(s)

Unused, vacant but up for sale

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The fort is Grade II Listed.

The fort is of considerable, with potential for exceptional, evidential value due in the main to the survival of the fittings and apparent lack of alteration other than those carried out as part of the recommissioning work in the Secons World War.

The considerable historic value lies within its innovation and engineering challenges as an offshore structure, however, this is also evident by the success of the pair of offshore forts in defending the mouth of the Humber against submarines.

A prominent landmark visible from a broad area of the coast and the water, the fort will have considerable communal value and considerable aesthetic value in the link between the collective memories of several generations of the local community of the proximity of enemy action in both World Wars.

References

tepilo website

Dobinson 2000

Compiler

Angela Warner

OA No.	Fort Name	Significance	Designation	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
157	Spanish Battery	D	x	1	3	x	1, 8
158	Tynemouth Castle, QF Batteries	B	SM	5	1	x	1, 8
159	Cliffords Fort, QF Batteries	B	SM. LB.	4	1	x	1, 8
160	Wave Basin Battery	B	LB.	3	2	x	6,7
161	South Gare Battery	D	x	3	3	x	1
162	Heugh Battery	B	SM	3	2	x	1

Spanish Battery (OA157)

County Tyne and Wear
District North Tyneside
Parish Tynemouth
NGR NZ 37367 69083
Group Tees and Hartlepool

PASTSCAPES#	1427862
HER#	136
Heritage status	None Tynemouth Conservation Area
Recommendations	None

Type

Costal Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Spanish Battery is of group value with the six sites in the Tees and Hartlepool group, in particular Tynemouth Castle.

Brief History

The battery is on the opposite side of Priors Haven to Tynemouth Castle. The Crown took over the site in 1539, and it became a semi-fortified outwork on the south side of Tynemouth Castle overlooking the River Tyne.

In the early Victorian period the battery was extant but unarmed, though by 1882 it had acquired three SB guns, however by 1887 there was no armament. In 1893 the battery was rebuilt for a 6-inch BL gun on an HP mounting firing seawards, with a battery for two 6-pdr QF guns in the right flank to cover the river where there was to be a minefield.

Between 1902 and 1904 the battery was reconstructed for two 6-inch Mk VII and two 12-pdr QF guns; the existing 6-inch emplacement was converted for a Mk VII gun and a new emplacement was built for the second gun. The underground magazines were altered accordingly; additional ones were provided together with shelters; which accounts for the new six inch emplacement being slightly in the rear of the original one. The 12-pdr QF

battery was built adjacent to the former 6-pdr one, and over one of the former battery's positions.

The battery remained in use throughout the First World War.

In the Second World War the battery received aerial protection mantelets for the six inch guns, and the guns remained in place until 1953.

Outline Description

Aerial photography from 1994 shows two east-facing emplacements for 6-inch guns surviving at the site. Two minor south-facing emplacements are partially visible. Battery buildings such as the observation post were located at the adjacent Tynemouth Castle Battery and have since been built over.

Only the aprons of the four guns emplacement can be seen at the site today as the battery has been either demolished or buried, and is the site of a municipal car park.

Condition

Poor.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located at the eastern edge of the Tynemouth overlooking the harbour entrance to the east. The remains of the battery are encroached by the close proximity of the car park, but the remains are within a green open area.

Threats

Possible wear and tear to surviving battery, but very little survives.

Ownership

Local Authority. North Tyneside Council.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Open site used as part of a coastal park.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Little.

Spanish Battery is not of significant evidential battery, as only the aprons of the four guns emplacement survive today. The former battery is of local interest and of value in the history of fortifications of the period, but it is not of significant historical or aesthetic value. The battery has communal value as it is an easily accessible area of coastline, and allows easy access to understanding the defence of the area.

References

PF website

Pers comm Jennifer Morrison, Tyne and Wear Archaeology Officer

Saunders 1989

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Tynemouth Battery, Tynemouth Castle (OA158)

County	Tyne and Wear
District	North Tyneside
Parish	Tynemouth
NGR	NZ 37300 69300
Group	Tees and Hartlepool

PASTSCAPES#	1162322
HER#	135
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1015519: Tynemouth Iron Age and Romano-British settlements, monasteries, site of lighthouse, cross, motte, enclosure and artillery castles and later coastal defences Tynemouth Conservation Area
Recommendations	None.

Type

Artillery Castle. Coastal Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Tynemouth Battery is of group value with the six sites in the Tees and Hartlepool group, in particular Clifford's Fort.

Brief History

Tynemouth Castle is a medieval castle with post-medieval artillery and 19th-20th century coastal battery emplacements.

After the Norman Conquest a priory was established on the Tynemouth headland, and in time defences were constructed across the neck of the headland. In 1539 the priory was dissolved and the crown retained the headland. Within a few years the castle was converted into a substantial strong point and was used as a military base during the wars with Scotland at the end of Henry VIII's reign.

At the end of the 18th century the defences were rebuilt and strengthened; a number of essential military buildings were built within the enceinte, such as barracks and magazines. The castle was armed and garrisoned throughout the Revolutionary and Napoleonic Wars, thereafter it continued to be garrisoned on a reduced scale.

In the 19th century Tynemouth was the principal defence of Tyneside, and the north of England's main outlet for iron and coal and the centre of shipbuilding and the manufacture of armaments. This lead to the re-arming of the castle in the early 1890s with two 6-inch BL guns on disappearing mountings.

At the turn of the century, the castle's defences were rebuilt for the last time for a 9.2-inch Mk X, two 6-inch Mk VII, two 12-pdr QF and a practice battery for two 6-pdr QF guns. By 1910 the QF guns had been removed and the 9.2-inch gun was in reserve until 1915.

The Tynemouth batteries were updated and operational during the First World War and additional buildings were constructed including a fire observation post and the Admiralty signal station.

At the beginning of the Second World War the batteries were once again operational and one four-inch navel gun emplacement was built.

The army remained in residence at the castle until 1960 at which time much of the modern military evidence was removed. These were demolished in advance of the construction of the new coastguard station in 1980.

Outline Description

During the 18th and early 19th century the walls of Tynemouth Castle which encircled the cliffs were adapted for coastal gun batteries.

The earliest surviving above-ground feature of this phase at Tynemouth, is one of two original emplacements for a 6-inch BL gun constructed in 1893. It is the most northerly of an arc of emplacements of different ages. Its gun pit is now filled by a Second World War concrete store building.

Adjacent to this is an emplacement for a 9.2-inch BL gun constructed in 1904, it was intended for counter bombardment against large warships and two 6 inch gun emplacements for close defence constructed in 1902. Situated on the southern cliff overlooking the river there are positions for two 12-pdr QF guns also constructed in 1902. Adjacent to the latter batteries there are the restored underground magazines which stored ammunition and supplied the guns.

Virtually all the military buildings within the enceinte were demolished, so that only the concrete gun emplacements remain today. It is possible to visit the restored underground magazines of the six-inch battery where a Mk XXIII six inch naval gun sits in the No II gun position, whilst a mobile 3.7-inch AA gun occupies the 9.2-inch emplacement.

The Second World War four inch navel gun emplacement is visible in the extreme south east corner of the castle.

Condition

Good.

The four surviving emplacements survive in good condition, and the underground magazines have been restored. The associated buildings were demolished during the 1960s.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located at the eastern edge of the Tynemouth overlooking the harbour entrance to the east, with King Edward's Bay to its west. Today inland the castle is largely surrounded by residential development of Tynemouth.

Threats

None identified.

Ownership

English Heritage (or HE). Managed by English Heritage under licence from Historic England.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

English heritage visitor site.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is part of the Scheduled Monument of Tynemouth Castle.

The batteries are of historical value as part of the long history of defence of this area, they add to the value of remains including the Anglo-Saxon settlement, an Anglican monastery and royal castle. The emplacements provide material evidence of the continued use of the land through to the 19th and 20th centuries. They are not individually of unique construction or representative of a technological advance, but have value as part of the history of one of the largest fortified areas in England.

Tynemouth Castle is a EH visitor attraction and has communal value for those that visit the site, and learn about its history.

References

PF website

HE website

Pers comm Jennifer Morrison, Tyne and Wear Archaeology Officer

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Clifford's Fort (OA159)

County	Tyne and Wear
District	North Tyneside
Parish	Tynemouth
NGR	NZ 3633 6852
Group	Tees and Hartlepool

PASTSCAPES#	26406
HER#	150
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1005896: Clifford's Fort Clifford's Fort Grade II* Listed: west and south wall (1025359), south and east wall (1185263) Fish Quay Conservation Area
Recommendations	None.

Type

Coastal Battery. Artillery Fort.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Clifford's Fort was, from its beginnings, associated with the long-established nearby defences of Tynemouth Castle. By the time the fort was built, however, the castle had fallen into a ruinous state and the Clifford's Fort therefore took over the defence of the river. It is also of group value with the six sites in the Tees and Hartlepool group.

Brief History

Cliffords Ford was built between 1670 and 1672 on the North Shields bank of the entrance to the River Tyne. By the time of the Napoleonic wars it was obsolete, and by 1841 it was stated to be dismantled although capable of mounting twenty nine guns. In the 1860s it was armed with six smooth bore guns.

Lord Morley's Committee of 1882 declared the fort obsolete but suggested that it be used as a submarine mining establishment which was taken up. The fort became the headquarters of the Tyne Division Royal Engineers (Volunteers) Submarine Miners. Consequently various buildings were erected within the enceinte.

Between 1894 and 1895 a 6-pdr QF battery was built in the salient between the two front faces on the enceinte. The 6-pdr QF guns were dismounted in 1908; the fort continued to be used by the Territorial Force/Army Royal Engineers until they vacated it in 1928. In the previous year it had been sold to the Tynemouth Corporation, after which it was used for fish processing.

In the Second World War a battery for two 12-pdr QF guns was erected outside the enceinte on the quay. The battery was closed in 1944 and later all the equipment was removed.

Outline Description

Clifford's Fort is constructed from sandstone ashlar and brick. It has a tapered nosed wall; brick upper courses with bricked-up musket holes. It was built

to the designs of Anglo-Swedish engineer Martin Beckman and consisted of a raised platform, walled and with a three storey redoubt, protecting a low riverside gun battery, defended to landward by a bastioned trace.

By 1720 the redoubt had been reconstructed to serve as a barracks for a company of Invalids with a gunpowder magazine in the basement, and the current seaward walls of sandstone ashlar date from the 18th century.

Within the enceinte only the arms-houses, soldiers quarters and the loaded mine storage buildings survive from former years. There are faint traces of the 6-pdr battery at the site. The rear wall does not survive as it was removed when the fort became a submarine mining depot.

Condition

Good.

Since 2008 the remains of the fort were comprehensively restored: a number of modern buildings were removed and the moat was reinstated. The enceinte wall and embrasures have been restored; and the ditch has been partially restored.

In 2013 the fort was removed from the Heritage at Risk Register.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located on the north bank of the River Tyne facing east towards the harbour entrance. The fort is situated within a densely populated area.

Threats

Possible threat from visitor wear and tear.

Ownership

Local Authority. North Tyneside Council

Occupancy

No applicable.

Current use(s)

The fort is an open site and the buildings are used as restaurants and the Old Low Light Heritage Centre.

Development proposals

None identified.

The electricity substation at the base of Ballards is due to be removed in early September (no planning permission required but subject to SMC).

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is part of the Scheduled Monument of Tynemouth Castle, and as such is of considerable significance. The battery is not of outstanding merit in

terms of its aesthetic or evidential value, but it enhances the value of the 17th century Clifford's Fort, through a long period of use up to the Second World War. The evidential value of the site has been improved by its restoration and it has been removed from the HAR register, it provides a good example of successful conservation of a military site.

References

PF website

Pers comm Ian McCaffery Senior Planning Officer (Conservation)

Wikipedia website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Wave Basin Battery (OA160)

County Tyne and Wear
District Sunderland
Parish Sunderland
NGR NZ 40914 58149
Group Tees and Hartlepool

PASTSCAPES#	956440
HER#	84
Heritage status	Grade II Listed (list entry number 1207135)
Recommendations	None

Type

Coastal battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Wave Basin Battery is of group value with the six sites in the Tees and Hartlepool group.

Brief History

The battery is situated on a mole adjacent to the South Pier in Sunderland, at the entrance to the River Wear. The land was given to the War Office in 1860 by the River Wear Commissioners for defence purposes. The battery's date of construction is unclear, sources state it was constructed in the 1860s, and the Listed Building description give its construction date as *c* 1873.

The battery was armed with four 80-pdr RML guns; two on central pivot mountings firing en-barbette with two guns in between them on front pivot mountings firing through embrasures.

After 1897 the guns were removed and armament returns show a varying number of machine guns as the approved armament until just before the First World War.

The battery does not appear to have been operational in the First or Second World War.

Outline Description

Wave Basin battery is described in the Listed Building description –

'Ashlar. A mole projecting into the river inside the harbour, on the E side of the Wave Basin and immediately SW of old South Pier, with 4 gun emplacements. No.1 gun emplacement at the N, rounded end of the mole has had concrete filling added. The second and third emplacements have splayed openings to seaward in the battery wall, which is protected from the water by the breakwater of the mole. Nos 1 and 4 gun emplacements had an ashlar circle and a central ashlar block in which the central pivot was set; at least one pivot survives; these guns fired over over the parapet. Nos 2 and 3 had front pivot traversing carriages of either wood or wrought-iron. The original artillery consisted of four 80 pounder rifle muzzle loading guns.'

Condition

Fair.

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

Located north of Sunderland Docks at the end of a stone pier facing the entrance to the River Wear and the harbour entrance to the east. Since the battery was built, Sunderland docks have been substantially extended so that it is now well inside the dock area.

Threats

Possible development threat (*see* 'Development Proposal' section below).

Ownership

Commerical. Port of Sunderland Authority

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Used as a navigation light station.

Development proposals

The Port of Sunderland is proposed for long-term improvement/ redevelopment but there are no current planning applications. The Port of Sunderland is a designated enterprise zone and feasibility studies to consider the future use of the fort are ongoing.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is Grade II Listed.

The survival of the battery is of clear evidential value, although it has been subject to some infilling and not all elements survive. Wave Basin battery is of value as the only surviving example of an RML battery between the Humber and the Tweed. Historically, the battery illustrates the transition from cannon to modern artillery, and is an example of the methods used to defend mercantile ports in the years after the Crimean War and the production of iron-clad warships.

References

Pers comm Jennifer Morrison, Tyne and Wear Archaeology Officer

PF website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

South Gare Battery (OA161)

County	Yorkshire
District	Redcar and Cleveland
Parish	Redcar
NGR	NZ 55642 27970
Group	Tees and Hartlepool

PASTSCAPES#	1420430
HER#	Not identified
Heritage status	None
Recommendations	None

Type

Coastal battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

South Gare Battery is of group value with the six sites in the Tees and Hartlepool group.

Brief History

South Gare Battery was constructed between 1863 and 1887 to provide coastal defence for the Tees region. It was equipped with two 4.7-inch QF and two 6-pdr QF weapons by 1902.

During the First World War it was armed with two 4.7-inch QF Mk III guns. They went into on-site storage in 1920 and were removed in 1928 as a replacement battery at North Gare was planned. However, the new coastal battery did not happen and South Gare was reconstructed for two 6-inch guns in 1938. It was manned by 117 Coast Battery of 526 Regiment.

The battery was closed and put into care and maintenance by February 1945.

Outline Description

The site of the battery is derelict; the six inch position built in 1938 is in the best condition although the pit is filled in and its mantlet has gone. The aprons of the other two gun positions survive, the pits are filled in and plaques erected at both positions showing local landmarks. The remainder of the battery is either demolished or buried.

Condition

Poor.

The aprons of the emplacements survive.

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

Located on the south side of the entrance to the Tees River on the South Gare Breakwater. The remains of the battery are on a spit of land, and appear to remain largely in their primary setting.

Threats

Coastal erosion – pictures suggest the site is damaged by coastal erosion

Ownership

Private.

Current use(s)

Open site but private access road

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Little.

South Gare battery is of limited evidential value, as there are few surviving remains. The military context of the battery is of interest as the land was used during the war, and there are surviving remains from the Second World War including a pillbox. The remains of the battery enhance understanding of the historic defence use of the area, and are of local interest.

References

PastScapes website

PF website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

Heugh Battery (Hartlepool Battery) (OA162)

County	County Durham
District	Hartlepool
Parish	Hartlepool
NGR	NZ 53145 33914
Group	Tees and Hartlepool

PASTSCAPES#	1344941
HER#	Gun emplacements 6785 and 6783, magazine 6784, other associated structures: 698, 6786, 6787, 6788, 6791, 6790, 6789
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1020801: Heugh coastal artillery battery immediately north west of Heugh Lighthouse Headland Conservation Area
Recommendations	None.

Type

Coastal battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Later amalgamated with nearby Lighthouse Battery (now demolished), between the First and Second World Wars. Heugh Battery is of group value with the six sites in the Tees and Hartlepool group.

Brief History

The battery was built between 1859 and 1860, it had four guns firing en barbette with two magazines at either end. A small barracks was built at the north end of the site.

In the late 1880s a traverse replaced the No 3 gun, and between April 1899 and September 1900 the battery was completely rebuilt for two 6-inch Mk VII guns.

In 1914 Heugh Battery was equipped with two 6-inch Mk VII guns that were installed in 1899-1900. These two batteries were the only coastal batteries in Britain to engage enemy ships in the First World War; it was involved in the Bombardment of Hartlepool on 16th December 1914 which was the first location to face German action in mainland Britain.

In 1928 the guns that had been in action in 1914 were dismounted and replaced by guns of a similar type; sometime prior to 1937 one gun was removed and the battery was in effect amalgamated with Lighthouse Battery to form a single two gun battery which was the position on the outbreak of the Second World War. The left-hand gun position (No 2) was reconstructed and a Mk XXIV 6-inch (45deg) gun was mounted in 1942, this remained until the dissolution of coast artillery in 1956 when it was dismounted and scrapped.

Outline Description

The monument includes the standing, earthwork and associated buried remains of one of the coastal artillery batteries that defended Hartlepool harbour until after the Second World War, It lies between Heugh Lighthouse and the Town Moor.

The following description is taken from the HE Scheduled Monument description –

'Heugh battery retains two gun pits of slightly differing designs. Close to the centre of the monument is the southern emplacement for No.2 Gun. This appears to be the same as that shown on a plan dated 1906. The second emplacement lies 30m NNE. This has a larger central pit and surrounding apron. This emplacement appears to follow the design shown on an undated plan of a proposed modification to the battery. This plan depicts alterations to both emplacements to allow the guns to fire at an elevation of 45 degrees, thus extending their range. However, presumably only No.1 Gun was so modified. To the rear of No.1 Gun there is a high concrete wall which is also not shown on the 1906 plan and is thus a later addition……Buried between the two emplacements is the battery's magazine that also saw some modifications sometime after 1906.

The concrete structure 20m to the south of No.2 Gun is the Battery Observation Post. This overlies the remains of an earlier observation post that is shown on the 1906 plan. Just to the south was a machine-gun emplacement with its own underground magazine…..To the front of the battery, facing the sea to the east, is protected by a glacis….. To the rear of the guns this glacis is supported by a retaining wall that is partly stone built and partly concrete, showing several phases of modifications. To the west of this wall was the parade ground surrounded by a number of auxiliary buildings. Only one of these still survives …..Remains of the other buildings are thought to be represented by scaring in the western boundary wall and as foundations beneath modern tarmac. Adjacent to the standing building is a surviving section of the battery's boundary wall topped with curved iron spikes'.

Condition

Fair.

Elements of the battery have been removed. Prior to 2000 the battery was conserved to a poor standard, the gun emplacements were filled in and the underground elements were buried under asphalt. In 2003 Heugh Gun Battery Trust began to manage the site and restored the emplacements. One of the main objectives of the trust is the conservation of the buildings on the site.

Trend

Improving.

Setting

The battery is located on the headland overlooking Hartlepool Bay and would have protected the entrance to Hartlepool harbour. The battery is surrounded by a buffer of green open space, but residential development has changed the primary setting of the battery.

Threats

None identified.

Ownership

Local Authority. Hartlepool Borough Council and leased to Heugh Gun Battery Trust Limited for 50 years from 2003.

Occupancy

Not applicable.

Current use(s)

Used as the Heugh Battery Museum and open to visitors. The Museum focuses on the First World War element of the history of the battery and commemorates the Bombardment of Hartlepool in 1914.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is a Scheduled Monument.

The primary importance of Heugh Battery is its historical value; in the 20th century there were only two engagements between British coastal artillery and enemy ships. Heugh Battery was involved in the first, which was the only action in the First World War (the second being in 1942 involving South Foreland Battery at Dover).

Heugh Battery is also of evidential value as it retains a range of well-preserved features including two designs of gun emplacements. Rare surviving features at Heugh include in situ shell hoists linking the magazine to the emplacements above.

References

Heugh Battery Museum website

PF website

This is Hartlepool website

VF website

HE website

Compiler

Jane Phimester

AREA 16: NORTHUMBERLAND

OA no.	Fort Name	Significance	Designation	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
163	Blyth Battery	B	SM	6	1		5
164	Lindisfarne Castle	B	SM	1	1	x	4, 8

NEED TO CHECK NORTHUMBERLAND

Blyth Battery (OA163)

County Northumberland
District Northumberland
Parish Blyth
NGR NZ 32030 79669 and NZ 32089 79318
Group Newcastle

PASTSCAPES#	1441994 [overall] 1429119 [southern area] and 1442170 [northern area]
HER#	11976 [overall] 11977 [defence lights] and 11978 [engine house]
Heritage status	Scheduled Monument 1021401: Coastal Artillery Battery on Blyth Links [in two parts] Grade II Listed: 1041334 – Fort on Blyth Links 1276282 – Public Lavatory, Outbuilding and Enclosing Walls, to East of Link House 1371407 – 2 Defence Electric Light Emplacements to East of Link House
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

None, however, there are numerous surviving structures within this Defended Port Battery.

Brief History

The construction of the battery commenced in August 1916 by the Durham Fortress Engineers to protect the harbours at Blyth and prevent enemy landings; it was completed in February 1918.

During the First World War, it housed two 6-inch QF guns and two search lights and, although officially called Blyth Battery, it was also called Coulson Battery, named after the Royal Engineers Officer responsible for its construction, and Link House Battery, after the name of the area in which it was built. It was also known for a short while in the Second World War as Seaton Battery, again, after the local area.

In 1925, the battery became incorporated into the development of the South Beach amenities when two of the buildings were converted into public toilets.

The battery was re-commissioned in February 1940 and re-armed with two 6-inch BL Mk 7 guns. It was placed in care and maintenance in late 1944.

Although the buildings were returned to public leisure use, they became run-down and planning permission was sought in 1990 to demolish them, however, this was objected to. The site underwent major restoration and redevelopment in 2008 and is now a military and local heritage museum.

Outline Description

A First World War battery with later physical alterations from re-commissioning in the Second World War and reuse following both wars. The buildings are of reinforced concrete, steel and brick and most are built into the natural sand dunes, some of which have since shifted.

The buildings are clustered into two groups, one to the north which includes searchlight emplacements and an engine house and a larger group to the south which includes the gun emplacements, observation posts and magazine, amongst others.

The survival of the battery's buildings is high and all are described in detail in the scheduling. In brief, the most notable buildings of the battery are arguably the gun emplacements which are of typical First World War open form with a flat-roofed superstructure added in the Second World War; they are linked by a wall with an artillery store immediately to the rear.

Also notable is the First World War Battery Observation Post situated to the north of the gun emplacements and magazine complex. This building is visible as a two storey flat-roofed tower which retains metal range finder housing on its roof, which the museum's website states is the only one surviving in the world.

Condition

Good.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

The battery is located south east of the town of Blyth and adjacent to the coastline to the east. Immediately inland is extensive residential development, which has compromised the primary setting of the battery.

Threats

Vandalism – photos online show the southern battery, which is used as a shelter overlooking the sea, is graffitied.

Ownership

Local Council. Northumberland County Council.

Occupancy

Part occupied and in use.

Current use(s)

Several of the buildings are used as a military museum and are open to the public at weekends and selected other days during the summer. Other buildings

are open to the public, some have been converted to other use, such as public toilets.

The site is also a nature reserve.

Development proposals

None identified which directly affect the battery.

Historic England confirmed they had no objection based on the setting of the battery to application 16/00385/CCD to extend the car park immediately west of the southern group of buildings of the battery.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The battery is a Scheduled Monument, split into two separate areas, and three of the structures are specifically Grade II listed.

The evidential and historical value of the battery his high as it retains the full range of characteristics of this type of coastal battery and is one of only 28 in the country to survive in a complete state. There is evidence for the original layout and surrounding defensive buildings, notably the survival of the searchlight emplacements.

Its reuse in the Second World War enhances the importance of the monument and contributes to our understanding of the two world wars and is a highly visible reminder of the measures taken to protect the coast of England in the 20th century. Many of the internal fixtures survive.

The aesthetic and communal values are considerable as, in part, they are publically accessible and in many cases have been converted to use as a military and local heritage museum. The buildings were first converted to leisure use in the interwar period and so have been in use by the community for almost a century.

References

PastScapes website

Keys to the past website

HE website

Northumberland website

Blyth Battery website

Compiler

Angela Warner

Lindisfarne Castle (OA164)

County	Northumberland
District	Northumberland
Parish	Holy Island
NGR	NU 1363 4175
Group	Northumberland

PASTSCAPES#	7838
HER#	N5347
Heritage status	Grade I Listed (list entry number 1042306) Holy Island Conservation Area. Registered Park and Garden.
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery. 19th-century battery added to a 16th-century castle.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

None

Brief History

A Tudor castle built with the stone from the Priory, possibly on the site of an earlier look-out tower, and completed *c* 1550.

By the 1840s, there was no armament, the island having become a backwater since 1603 following previous use during campaigns in Scotland. In 1861, three 68-pdr SB guns were mounted to supplement the existing barrack, magazine and stores buildings: two to the Lower Battery and one to the Upper Battery. By 1878, the battery was used for practice and the guns upgraded to three 64-pdr RML guns, however, by 1893, the defences were no longer deemed necessary and the battery disarmed in 1893.

The property was leased in 1901 (and purchased in 1918) by Edward Hudson, editor of Country Life, for conversion to a house; the buildings and gardens were both extensively remodelled by Lutyens and Jekyll. The castle was donated to the National Trust by a subsequent owner in 1944.

Outline Description

The HE Listing description describes the site in full, the following is a summary.

The 16th-century castle was comprehensively remodelled by Lutyens who removed and/or rebuilt many of the early parts of the castle in the first decade of the 20th century. The building is of sandstone and whinstone with pantile roofs. There is an irregular polygonal plan on three levels of former batteries. The south side has cobbled ramp up to the entrance with Tudor-style surround, portcullis and oak door. The former garderobe tower has a pyramidal roof to left. To the right, on upper battery, there is a higher building with semi-octagonal end and mullioned windows. There is irregular roofs including prominent hipped roof with hipped dormers to middle battery.

Condition

Good.

The batteries are part of the castle which is conserved by the National Trust.

Trend

Improving.

At the time of writing, Lindisfarne Castle is about to undergo a major conservation project.

Setting

Located on the southern side of Holy Island facing south across a narrow stretch of water that leads to the bay at Lindisfarne. The castle and battery are surrounded by open fields and retain their original setting.

Threats

Decay of Fabric.

Ownership

Charity (heritage). The National Trust.

Occupancy

Occupied and in use.

Current use(s)

Open to the public as a visitor attraction.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The post-medieval artillery fort is part of Lindisfarne Castle, a Grade I Listed structure and within a Registered Park and Garden, and within Holy Island Conservation Area, and so of considerable significance.

The evidential and historical significance is strong, although the conversion of the battery buildings to domestic use in the early 20th century have adversely affected their evidential value of the site from a defence structure.

The aesthetic significance is considerable as the castle is an imposing structure on a natural high outcrop, visible from much of the south side of the island; this is linked with the communal value of the castle as a visitor attraction which has attracted visitors and artists for a least a century longer than the interior has been accessible by the public.

References

PF website

National Trust website

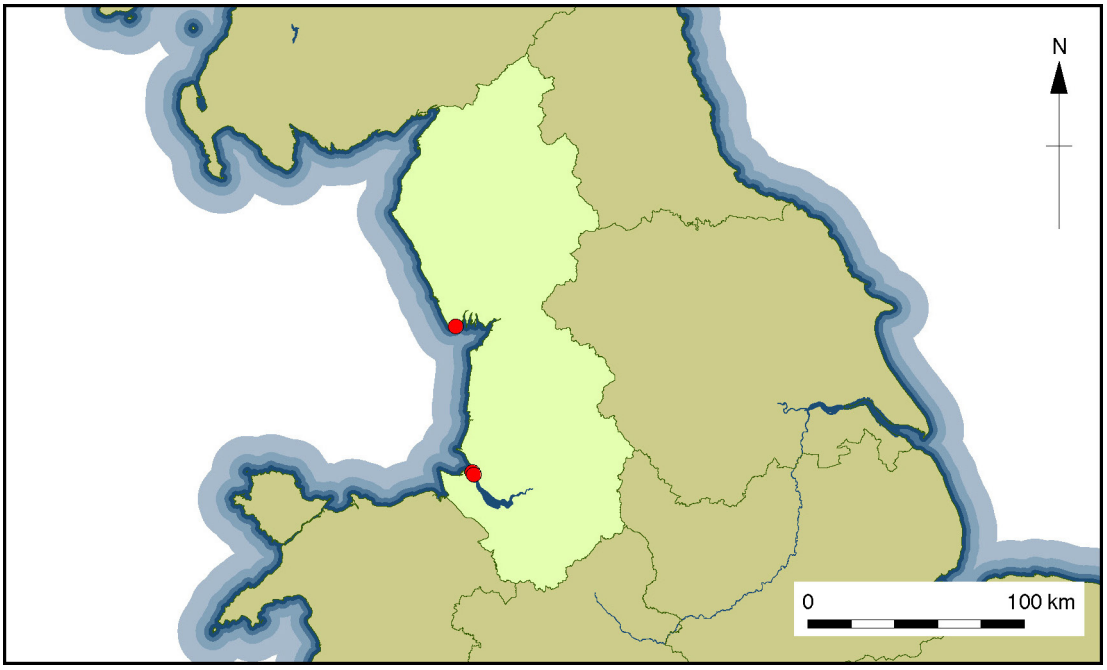
PastScapes website

Compiler

Angela Warner

REGION 5: NORTH WEST REGION

Area No.	Area Name	No. of Sites
18	Mersey	2
19	Cumbria	1
Total		**3**



Distribution of forts within the North-West region

OA no.	Fort Name	Significance	Designation	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
OA168	Fort Perch Rock Mersey	B	LB	1	3	C1	1,3,4
OA169	Liscard Battery	B	LB	2	1	x	x

Fort Perch Rock (OA168)

County Merseyside
District Wirral
Parish Wallasey
NGR SJ 30952 94477
Group Mersey PASTSCAPE# 1429176

HER#	MME1659
Heritage status	Grade II* Listed (list entry number 1258164)
Recommendations	A long-term maintenance plan for the site is needed, it is currently on the HAR Register at Level 'C'.

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Liscard Battery.

Brief History

The battery was built to defend the approach to Liverpool, it was designed by Captain J. Sykes Kitson of the Royal Engineers. The foundation stone was laid in 1826 and the sandstone construction completed in 1829. The barrack accommodation was designed for 100 men with armaments of fourteen 32-pdr and two 18-pdr SB guns. It was rearmed numerous times during its service, with a major remodelling *c* 1894.

The battery was upgraded in the Frist World War and still active in the Second World War, being manned by the Home Guard by 1943. It was reduced to care and maintenance in 1944/5, decommissioned in 1954 and sold in 1957. It passed through various hands and was subject to vandalism until 1974 when it was bought, secured and turned into a museum.

Outline Description

The HE Listed Building description describes well the battery –

'Stone. Battered walls with roll mouldings and a parapet; round corner towers. Central gateway, approached by causeway on elliptical arches... Left tower has mid C20 2-storey concrete structure, that to right has tower structure supporting iron tank. Interior has main range to south with lean-to asphalt roof dated 1838; Various blocks to north and west side, probably C20...'.

Condition

Poor.

The battery is on the HAR Register, which states: '...in need of general repair. Basic maintenance is undertaken. However, an overall strategy to address condition is required for the long term.'

Trend

Declining.

The HAR Register states: 'Priority Category: C - Slow decay; no solution agreed'.

Setting

Located at the mouth of the River Mersey on the south side in Wallasey. The battery is largely surrounded by ocean, with residential development in close proximity inland. The beach surrounding the fort is well used, and there is a car park.

Threats

Flooding/coastal erosion – the museum's website states that recent storms caused water damage.

Decay of fabric.

Deterioration/ in need of management.

Ownership

Private ownership (The Darroch family).

Occupancy

Occupied/in use.

Used as a museum and events location.

Current use(s)

The fort is open during school holidays and at weekends to the public and houses several museums.

Development proposals

None identified.

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

Fort Perch Rock is Grade II* Listed.

The evidential value and historic value border of the battery is high as it provides a complete physical record of a coastal defence battery throughout the late-19th to mid-20th centuries. Fort Perch Rock has a long period of use through to the Second World War.

The aesthetic and communal significances are clear; the battery is a prominent, domineering and publically accessible defensive structure which is now dedicated to the public education of the area's defensive history.

References

PastScapes website

PF website

Fort Perch Rock website

Compiler

Angela Warner

Liscard Battery (OA169)

County	Merseyside
District	Wirral
Parish	Wallasey
NGR	SJ 31378 93343
Group	Mersey

PASTSCAPE#	1474086
HER#	MME1980
Heritage status	The gateway is Grade II Listed (list entry number 1273516)
Recommendations	None

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

Fort Perch Rock (OA162).

Brief History

Built in 1858 on the site of the old powder magazines to defend the entrance to Merseyside. The battery had mounting for seven 10-inch SB guns. The promenade along the bank of the Mersey was constructed in the 1890s and made it difficult to hit targets at low water.

Obsolete by 1912, it was sold to the Liverpool Yacht Club and the barracks and store buildings along the westernmost wall were demolished. In the early post war period, houses were constructed within the battery walls and the walls and towers retained, although lowered.

Outline Description

The battery was surrounded by rock-faced red sandstone stone walls with ashlar dressings, most of which survive as boundaries at a reduced height. There were towers on each of the three other corners of the enclosing wall, the south east tower does not survive. There were buildings along the western internal face of the boundary wall containing barracks and shell stores, none of which survive. The Grade II Listed gateway comprises a 4-centred arch with flanking octagonal towers with embattled parapets.

The boundary wall has been cut through by the driveways to each house. The remains of the octagonal towers marking the four corners are on the east and south of the gate along the same garden/boundary wall, although the south eastern (unlisted) tower is no longer extant. The surrounding roads have names influenced by the battery.

Condition

Good.

What little remains is part of a boundary wall and garden features to several properties and appears to be well-maintained.

Trend

Stable.

Setting

Located close to the bank of the River Mersey in Wallasey. Today, the battery is largely surrounded by residential development.

Threats

None identified.

Ownership

Private ownership (multiple owners).

Occupancy

Occupied/ in use.

Current use(s)

The fort is open at weekends to the public and has several museums.

Development proposals

None identified

Summary of Significance

Considerable.

The gateway of Liscard Battery is Grade II Listed, although the associated boundary wall and two surviving towers are not. Due to its designated state the site is of considerable value, however the little surviving evidence of the battery places the value of the site at the lesser end of this scale, in comparison to other surviving examples.

The context of the gateway, with or without what survives of the battery, is not readable in its current setting and so there is little evidential significance in this monument.

The historical significance is considerable, although only in documentary form, as it had already become so obsolete and redundant by the construction of the promenade and other buildings that it was not reused in the First World War.

The considerable aesthetic and communal significances lie in the retention and reuse of the boundary walls and towers as garden features within a post-war housing estate, although the purpose of these structures is probably lost to the casual observer.

References

VF website

PF website

Archaeology data service website

Compiler

Angela Warner

OA no.	Fort Name	Significance	Designation	Phase	Condition	HAR	Threat
OA170	Hilspford Battery	C	x	6	3	x	1

Hilpsford Battery (OA170)

County Cumbria
District Barrow-in-Furness
Parish Barrow-in-Furness
NGR SD 23089 61948
Group Cumbria

PASTSCAPE#	1429214 (associated with 1488364)
HER#	19861
Heritage status	Unlisted
	There are wildlife designations covering the area.
Recommendations	Survey and record remains of the structures

Type

Battery.

Associated Fortifications/ Local Group Value

The later Second World War re-armed form of this structure is possibly associated with a group of Second World War defensive structures approximately 500m to the north.

Brief History

From Pastscape:

> *'The battery opened in circa 1915 and mounted two 4.7-inch quick-firing Mk. IV guns and two coast artillery searchlights. It performed an examination role. The battery was dismantled in 1920. In 1940 the battery was recommissioned and armed with two 6-inch naval guns. It was armed by 370 Battery of 565 Coast Regiment until 1943, when it was handed over to the Home Guard. The battery was reduced to care and maintenance in 1944'.*

Outline Description

The battery appears on OS maps as dotted lines and as outlines on the online digital mapping used by Barrow-in-Furness Borough Council. Satellite photography on Google Maps and Bing Maps show what is likely to be sub-rectangular concrete gun emplacement bases in this location.

Condition

Poor.

Trend

Unknown.

Setting

Located at the southern end of a spit at the entrance to Barrow harbour and Morecambe Bay.

Threats

Coastal erosion.

Ownership

Unknown, possibly Barrow Borough Council and leased to Cumbria Wildlife Trust.

Occupancy

Vacant.

Current use(s)

The spit is managed by Cumbria Wildlife Trust as South Walney Nature Reserve. The reserve is open to the public during the day.

Development proposals

There have been a number of planning applications for the adjacent lighthouse and cottages, which are listed. There is no evidence for planning applications on the site of the battery itself (Cumbria County Council HER pers comm).

Summary of Significance

Some.

The defences are undesignated. As the battery within the nature reserve, any aesthetic or communal significance is likely to be connected with this function, and with seemingly little survival of the fixtures, the evidential value is low.

The main significance lies in its historical value as it represents the rapid response to threats to the coast and dock in both the First World War and in Second World War, when its armaments were renewed and it was supplemented by further defensive structures.

References

Cumbria Wildlife Trust website

Pastscape website

Cumbria County Council HER pers comm (May 2016)

Compiler

Angela Warner



Historic England Research and the Historic Environment

We are the public body that looks after England's historic environment. We champion historic places, helping people understand, value and care for them.

A good understanding of the historic environment is fundamental to ensuring people appreciate and enjoy their heritage and provides the essential first step towards its effective protection.

Historic England works to improve care, understanding and public enjoyment of the historic environment. We undertake and sponsor authoritative research. We develop new approaches to interpreting and protecting heritage and provide high quality expert advice and training.

We make the results of our work available through the Historic England Research Report Series, and through journal publications and monographs. Our online magazine Historic England Research which appears twice a year, aims to keep our partners within and outside Historic England up-to-date with our projects and activities.

A full list of Research Reports, with abstracts and information on how to obtain copies, may be found on www.HistoricEngland.org.uk/researchreports

Some of these reports are interim reports, making the results of specialist investigations available in advance of full publication. They are not usually subject to external refereeing, and their conclusions may sometimes have to be modified in the light of information not available at the time of the investigation.

Where no final project report is available, you should consult the author before citing these reports in any publication. Opinions expressed in these reports are those of the author(s) and are not necessarily those of Historic England.

The Research Report Series incorporates reports by the expert teams within the Investigation& Analysis Division of the Heritage Protection Department of Historic England, alongside contributions from other parts of the organisation. It replaces the former Centre for Archaeology Reports Series, the Archaeological Investigation Report Series, the Architectural Investigation Report Series, and the Research Department Report Series

ISSN 2398-3841 (Print)
ISSN 2059-4453 (Online)